

*Property of Leon Carpenter*

**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA,  
DON'T SAY A WORD.  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

**JANUARY, 1998**

**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD.  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)  
is a work of fiction.**

**© Copyright 1998**

**Cover art copyright 1998  
by Rhonda Litsch**

**This Book Published By:  
B.S. THRUMM**

***THRUMM ESQ. PUBLISHING***

**209 E. Main St. Suite 130  
Kilgore, Texas 75662**

**Printed In the United States Of America  
First Printing November, 1998**

**ALL RIGHTS RESERVED**

**No part of this book may be reproduced in any form without permission from the publisher, except for passages appearing in a newspaper or magazine, police reports, medical records or court transcripts.**



## **TABLE OF CONTENTS**

### **CHAPTER 1 1—30**

**NEW ACQUAINTANCE, OLD ACQUAINTANCE, AND JINKX MIGHT HAVE MADE A MISTAKE.**

### **CHAPTER 2 30—62**

**FIRST ENCOUNTER, THE CLIQUE, FORTUNE COOKIE AND MORE.**

### **CHAPTER 3 62—94**

**A MEETING OF THE MINDS, AND THE BEGINNING OF A DECEITFUL DRUG INVESTIGATION**

### **CHAPTER 4 94—125**

**ROBBERY, ABDUCTION AND MURDER OF FIVE PEOPLE TAKEN FROM A FRIED CHICKEN RESTAURANT. (THE REAL STORY??)**

### **CHAPTER 5 125—156**

**HIGHWAY ROBBERY IN SPEED TRAPS, POLICE RECORDS IN FRIED CHICKEN MURDERS AND POSSIBLE COVER-UPS.**

### **CHAPTER 6 156—182**

**THE SERGEANTS TEST, THE CLIQUE, "FORTUNE COOKIE BOYS" AND SO-CALLED INVESTIGATION INTO THE FRIED CHICKEN MURDERS.**

### **CHAPTER 7 182—207**

**THE SHERIFF'S DEPARTMENT CLIQUE STRIKES WITH SOME FALSE ACCUSATIONS AND THEN DASTARDLY RESULTS, AND DRUG BUST RAISES QUESTIONS.**

### **CHAPTER 8 207—237**

**JINKX STRIKES BACK, THE DEA AGENTS AND FEMALE INFORMANTS SEXUALLY INVOLVED IN THE BIG DRUG BUST "SET-UP".**

### **CHAPTER 9 237—269**

**THE LIES COME OUT IN TERMINATION APPEAL, AND A DOCUMENT IN POSSESSION OF SHERIFFS DEPARTMENT OVERLOOKED AS EVIDENCE IN FRIED CHICKEN MURDERS. ( INTENTIONAL??)**



**CHAPTER 10 269—301**

SHERIFF BAGGED FOR DWI AND EVADING ARREST, SHERIFF GIVEN SPECIAL TREATMENT BY LOCAL POLICE, SHERIFF SEES THE LIGHT IN A WRONGFUL FIRING BUT WON'T ADMIT IT, AND THEN THE SO-CALLED INVESTIGATORS FIND FEW CLUES LONG AFTER THE FRIED CHICKEN MURDERS.

**CHAPTER 11 301—329**

REALISTIC OPINION IN WRONGFUL FIRING, AND THE TRUTH STARTS TO COME OUT IN DRUG INVESTIGATION.

**CHAPTER 12 329—361**

DRUG INVESTIGATION (THE TRUTH COME OUT), DISBANDING OF A POLICE DEPARTMENT, SHERIFF ADMITS DRINKING PROBLEM AND ENTERS HIS "NOT GUILTY" THEN "NO CONTEST". PLEA.... \*(ANOTHER ERA)—COUNTY CORRUPTION INVESTIGATED BY FBI AND OTHER FEDERAL AGENCIES.

**CHAPTER 13 361—394**

DRUG CONVICTION CALLS FOR AN APPEAL ON SEVERAL GROUNDS, MURDER OF FRIED CHICKEN PEOPLE SHIFTS TO FEDERAL OFFICERS ON WITNESS TESTIMONY, THE GRAND JURY BEGINS PROBE INTO THE FRIED CHICKEN MURDERS, AND IN \*(ANOTHER ERA)—SOME COUNTY OFFICIALS ARE INDICTED.

**CHAPTER 14 394—433**

IN \*(ANOTHER ERA)—THE COUNTY CORRUPTION TRIAL ENDS IN THE CONVICTION OF SOME COUNTY OFFICIALS AS THE SHERIFF CALLS THE PROSECUTION WITNESSES LIARS.

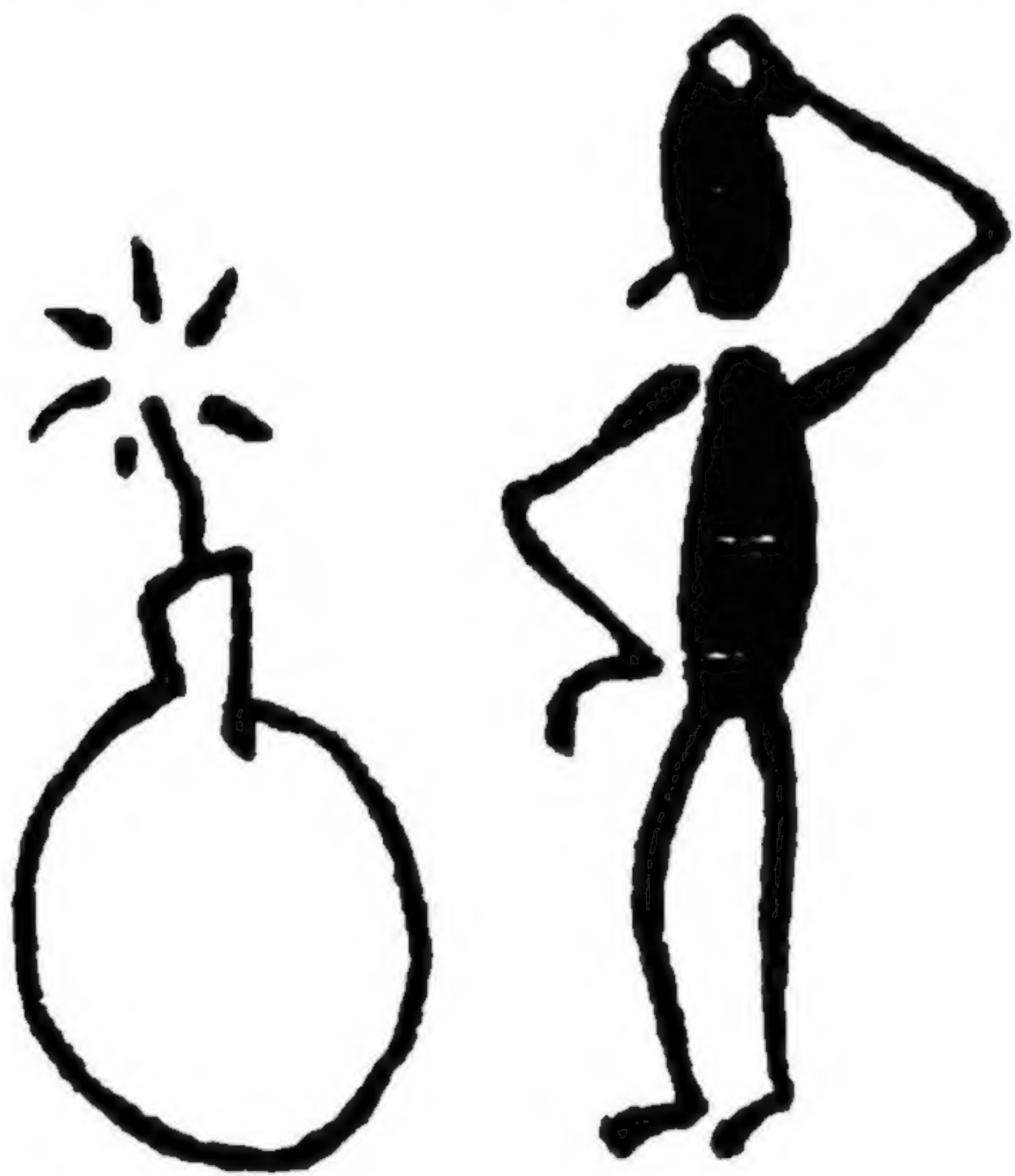
**CHAPTER 15 433—450**

GRAND JURY HEARS TESTIMONY IN FRIED CHICKEN MURDERS, THE NUMBER ONE SUSPECT IS INDICTED IN FRIED CHICKEN MURDERS BUT LATER FREED AS EVIDENCE CANNOT BE CONNECTED TO HIM. (WHAT HAPPENED TO THE BLOODY COVERALLS TURNED OVER TO THE TEXAS RANGER?????) THE NUMBER ONE SUSPECT IN FRIED CHICKEN MURDERS IS ARRESTED ON DRUG CHARGES. HE'S CONVICTED AND SENT TO PRISON AND TUCKED SAFELY AWAY. (CONVENIENT??)



# THANKS

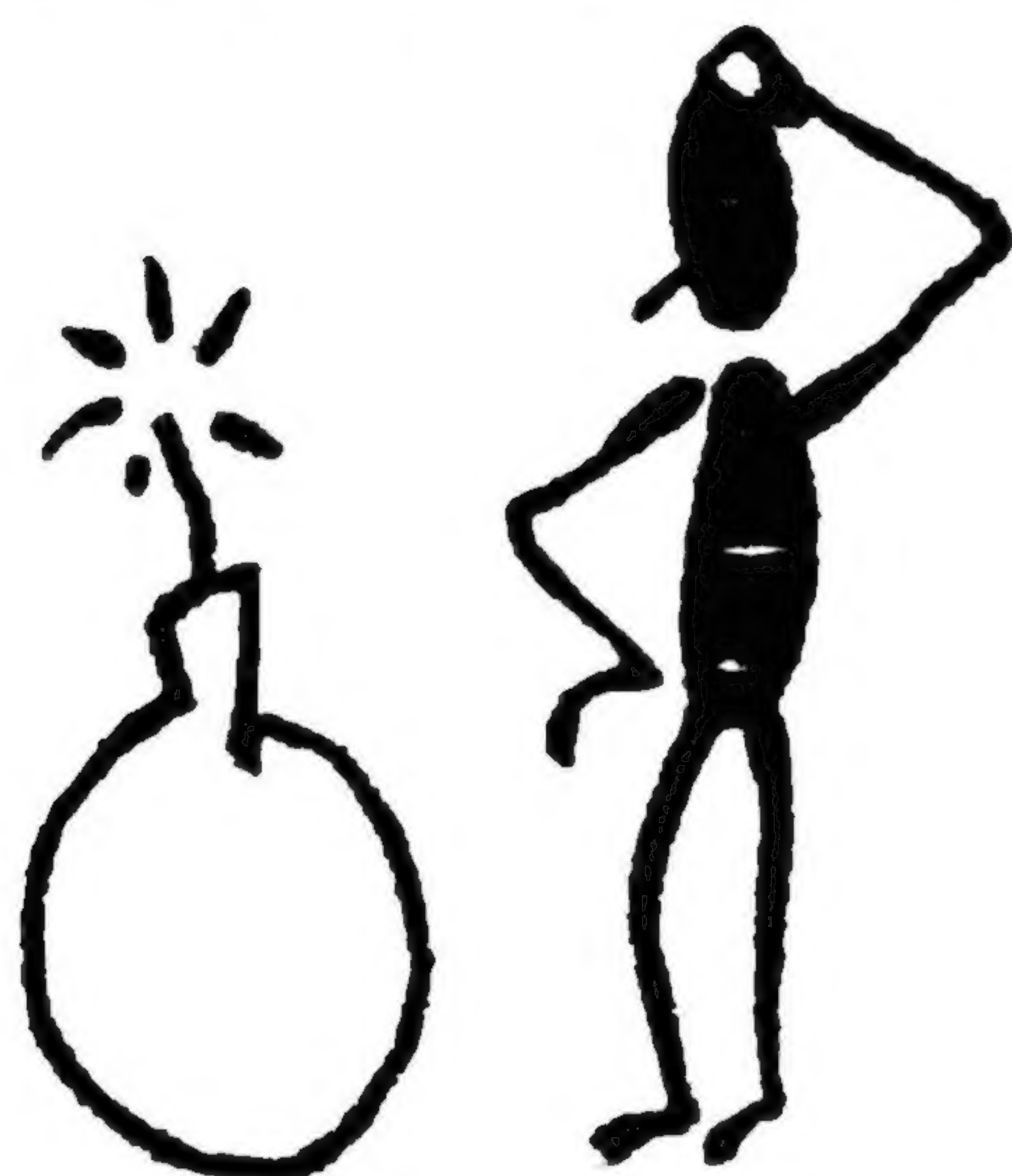
AN EXPLOSIVE NOVEL!





# THANKS

## AN EXPLOSIVE NOVEL!





### **ABOUT THE AUTHOR:**

**B.S. Thrumm (Pen Name)** was born in Oklahoma and moved to Texas in 1949. A 1952 graduate of London High School in New London, Texas, he joined the U.S. Army ten days after graduation. After basic training he volunteered for duty in Korea. Arriving in Korea in February of 1953, and spending one year there during the Korean War with the 25<sup>th</sup> (Tropic Lightning) Division in the 21<sup>st</sup> AAA AW BN (SP), he was a squad leader, a staff Sgt., on an M-16. (A half-track with 4 50 cal. machine guns.) During the six months of fighting he was involved in, he earned two major battle stars. He returned to the States and was stationed in San Pedro California and San Clemente Island in the 35<sup>th</sup> Operations Detachment, and was attached to the 670<sup>th</sup> AC and W Squadron (Early Warning System) in the Western Air Defense Command as Assistant Chief Plotter.

After being honorably discharged in 1955, he was employed in the Aerospace Industry for Northrop Aircraft Inc., North American Aviation, McDonnell Douglas and the LTV (Vought) Corp. Several years were spent in supervision as a leadman and foreman, and also as in-plant tooling engineer. He worked on military and civilian projects, such as the F4H Phantom, F89 Scorpion, T38 Talon, KC135 Tanker, the Saturn and Apollo, the X15 Data Gathering Space Vehicle, XB70 Valkyrie, SR71 Blackbird, the Lunar Excursion Module(LEM), B1 Bomber, DC8, DC9 and DC10.

In between aircraft employment he then entered the investigative field, and was the Chief Special Investigator for a well known Detective Agency in the Los Angeles area, and eventually obtained a Private Investigators License and investigated civil and criminal cases.

After returning to Texas, he entered the Law Enforcement field and was a Deputy Constable, City Police Officer and Deputy Sheriff. He has over twenty years in the investigative and law enforcement field.



# **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

1

## **CHAPTER 1**

... "And it's another hot, muggy day in East Texas, folks. Typical August weather, with highs in the upper 90's in and around the area, with the heat index making it seem like 103 to 105, in the shade. If you can find a shade. Take it easy out there folks, and get inside and drink plenty of liquids. And now, let's go back to Lukenbach, Texas, with Waylon, Willie and the Boys."

"I wish I could," Jinkx Finner muttered, and switched off the radio. It was 10:00 AM and already scorching heat was shimmering up from the pavement in baking waves. Jinkx braked to a stop as a traffic light changed to red, blotted a trickle of sweat from his temple and wished, not for the first time, that the air conditioner in his ex-Arkansas State police car worked. He knew that he should have had it worked on the previous day, but changing from the Klimore Police Department to the Grabe County Sheriffs Department has occupied his mind, and he still wondered if he was making a mistake. This was the day that he was getting fingerprinted, photographed, uniforms, oriented and assigned to a shift to begin his new job with the Sheriffs Department. He realized that the Sheriff of Grabe County, Billy Shane Waverly, had brought some bad publicity to the Sheriffs Department with his drinking, car accidents and womanizing, but Jinkx was only a spoke in the wheel and was not going to get involved in personal history, but just do his job.

Jinkx walked into the Sheriffs Department and reported to Bobby Wayne Ashley, the Patrol Captain. Bobby Wayne was Jinkx's Patrol Sgt. at the Klimore Police Department, but was recruited by Sheriff Waverly to be his Patrol Captain, and Bobby Wayne had influenced Jinkx's move to the Grabe County Sheriffs Department. "Well, Captain Ashley, I am as ready as I'll ever be to begin this new adventure."

"I think that you're going to like it here, Jinkx. I'm going to set you up to go up to the sixth floor, the jail floor, and get fingerprinted and have your photograph taken for your I.D. card. Then you will be issued your equipment, uniforms, badge and etceteras. Come back down here and sign your paperwork and then we'll go in to see the Sheriff. I want you to work the second shift for a while. Your training officer will be Robert Wainger,



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

as he knows the county and can show you the assigned zones, which there are two of them. So, go up to the sixth floor, the jail floor, and see Sally, and she will take your picture, fingerprint you and make your I.D. She will also issue you uniforms and a badge, and all other equipment. When you come back down here and we'll go in and see the Sheriff."

"I have a good question for you, Captain. You've been here several months now, so, have you ever regretted coming here? Be honest with me."

"Well, you're going to find that some of those that have been promoted by the Sheriff since he was elected are rather young and childish. You'll find out who they are as you go along. Some of the deputies you know, some you don't know. Barron Rutherford, of course Lowell Cramer, Jimmy Walsh, Lyle Farmer, Paul Finnigan, Sam Retton, Bodie Denny and several more that you will get to know or recognize. It's a pretty good crew. Daniel Hummer, who used to be here, will be back in a couple of months. He has been with the Border Patrol, but has not been very happy there."

"Yeah, I know him. He's half-Mexican. He should have fit right in. From what I hear, he's a suck ass. Several of the deputies I know told me about Hummer. I understand he had his nose in every supervisor's ass, and Sheriff Waverley's ass too. A word of advice, Captain," and Jinkx pointed his finger at Captain Ashley. "You had better watch your job. From what I have heard about Hummer, from several people, when things start to happen, fast, don't forget that this old man didn't warn you."

Captain Ashley shook his head. "I think you're wrong. I think that he will be an asset to the department."

"I hope you're right, Captain. But, as I said, watch your ass." Jinkx walked slowly toward the door. "I'll go up to the jail and see Sally. I know her. I'll be back shortly." Jinkx left the room and went to the elevator and rode to the jail floor.

When he stepped off the elevator the first one he saw was Sally. He waved and approached her. "Hello, kiddo. Just the one I'm looking for."

"Captain Ashley called me," smiled Sally. "Are you sure you want to get mixed up in this," she hesitated and looked side to side, "'bull shit'? Do you know what you're getting into?"



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

3

"Well, you are about to change my mind, but since I have come this far I might as well go all the way. I've already quit the KPD and I'm going to mind my own business for a change, or at least try to."

"We'll see," as Sally grinned and shook her head. "You older guys never mind your own business. ....Let's get your picture, fingerprints, uniforms, equipment and paperwork, and then you can go downstairs and meet," Sally hesitated, looked around and whispered, 'our illustrious Sheriff Waverly.'" Sally motioned with her finger. "Right this way, Deputy Finner."

Captain Ashley and Jinkx stopped at the Sheriff's office door, and the Captain knocked. Sheriff Waverly opened the door. "Come on in."

The Captain spoke. "Sheriff, this is Jinkx Finner. I was telling you about him, and I know he will be an asset to the department."

The Sheriff and Jinkx shook hands. "I've been hearing good things about you, Jinkx, from Captain Ashley and Chief J.M. Graham. Chief Graham spoke of you frequently ever since you helped him in that chase with the drunken Mexicans a few weeks ago. I talked to Chief Briarly of the Klimore PD, and he recommended you highly, and said that you would be a loss to his department, but he understands that not everyone wants to be an officer in a small town forever. If you're ready I'll sign the papers and you can start tonight." The Sheriff took the papers from Jinkx, signed them, and handed them to the Captain. "Deputy Finner, you are ready to go. Good luck. Now, gentlemen, if you will excuse me, I have some business to attend to."

As the Captain and Jinkx left the Sheriff's office Jinkx pulled the Captain aside. "Do you remember when the Sheriff did the one car roll-over on Highway 4 at the curve a few months ago?"

"Yes, I remember," replied the Captain.

"Well, let me tell you a little story," and Jinkx looked around.

"I think that I have heard all the stories, Jinkx." The Captain started to walk away, but Jinkx gently pulled him back by the arm.

"No. You haven't heard the real story. There was a disturbance at Jon's Supper Club and Bill Grantham and me responded. Well, Jon was chasing one of his drunken patrons around in the parking lot waving a



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

gun. He was probably some gay dude like Jon. Anyway, we saw them, and they saw us. Jon ran back inside and this guy he was chasing got in his car and raced out the driveway. We went inside and talked to Jon and told him that if he took the gun outside, or pointed it at anyone, he would be subject to arrest. We settled that, but here's the story on the Sheriff. Sheriff Waverly, DPS Trooper Ted Dodson, DPS Trooper Jim Bryan, Klimore College instructor Bubba Edison and DPS Trooper Robin Gregg was there to celebrate Robin Gregg's acceptance into the Texas Rangers. They were over in a corner and there were more beer bottles and mixed drink glasses on the table that you could get in a pickup truck. They were all drunk on their ass, and I mean d-r-u-n-k. You see," Jinkx licked his lips and looked around and waited for some deputies to pass. "Sheriff Waverly was going with one of the waitresses, Benji Palmer, and I had seen them getting with it when he was there many times before. Anyway, the Sheriff was so drunk that he was on his hands and knees on the floor barking like a dog, and trying to look up the women's dresses, especially his waitress-girlfriend's dress. Of course, his wife Norma was not invited to the party. I'm sure she wasn't invited to any of his parties. I know what the paper said, or at least I know what he told the papers and the DPS Trooper, Benny Owens, the one who investigated the accident. As the Sheriff said: 'I was trying to catch up to a suspicious vehicle and get a license number and lost control of my county vehicle.' Bull shit. The Sheriff, and the rest of his cohorts were so damn drunk that they didn't know their ass from a Japanese typewriter." The Captain started to walk away but Jinkx pulled him back. "I talked to Jon a few weeks later, and he was kind of tipsy turvey, and I casually led up to the night that Waverly wrecked the county car. Jon told me that the club officially closed about 12:15AM, but several patrons stayed inside and continued drinking until around 1:15AM, and then everyone left the club. Sheriff Waverly, as drunk as he was, got into his county furnished vehicle. Now, Jon was leaving the club also. He was behind Sheriff Waverly as he drove east on Highway 3, and then turned north on Highway 4, toward Witt Olney, where he lived. He said that he turned in that direction also, behind Sheriff Waverly. He said that he was all over the road, and that he passed the Sheriff at the interstate. He said that he knew the Sheriff had done this so many times and didn't think that he would have an accident. Anyway,



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

5

when the Sheriff was discovered several hours later, two miles north of Klimore, he had used these hours to get his act together. The time of this accident was said to have been about 5:30AM, but the accident actually happened shortly after he left the club, which would be about 1:30AM." Jinkx shook his finger as he looked at Captain Ashley's unaffected expression. "You really don't give a shit, do you?"

"I really don't give a shit. That's water under the bridge, and if you start running your mouth, telling your story, y-o-u-r story, you could wind up in big trouble." The Captain punched his finger into Jinkx's chest and made him wince. "I didn't help you get this job for you to create trouble. Do you want to work here, or not?"

Jinkx pondered his thoughts for a few seconds. "Yeah, I do. Water under the bridge. I'll keep my mouth shut. I thought you might want to hear the true story."

"I know the true story, along with everyone else. I might be a little dumb, but I'm not even a little stupid." The Captain started to walk away, but turned hastily and got in Jinkx's face. ...."I want you to understand one thing, and that one thing could keep you out of serious trouble. I don't think you know who, or what, controls Grabe County. A word to the wise. You might see and hear a lot of things that you don't agree with. Sometimes it's better to close your eyes and ears than get involved with the 'Fortune Cookie Boys', and don't you ask who the 'Fortune Cookie Boys' are. As the saying goes, 'this is bigger than both of us.'"

"I've heard that 'with two you get egg roll, but,--'" Jinkx was cut short by the Captain.

"Don't try to get funny," the Captain said loudly, and he was in Jinkx's face, gritting his teeth. "You don't wear a big 'S' on your shirt and you're not flying anywhere, and furthermore, get it together, now," he said loudly. The Captain and Jinkx slowly looked around and saw that they had gotten everyone's attention. They both smiled at those who were watching.

"Is this a warning?" whispered Jinkx.

"It certainly is," replied the Captain. "Did you get your equipment?"

"Yes, I did. And a bulletproof vest, too. Should I wear it?"

"Yes, you should. And a muzzle for your mouth. Be here around 1:30PM, and, oh yes, bring your brain." They grinned.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

It was about 12:45PM when Jinkx left his residence and started towards downtown Linview to the Grabe County Courthouse. As he drove along he admired his new uniform and big shiny six-pointed badge. It was still hot, hot and hot. The air conditioner still refused to put out cold air, as Jinkx pushed buttons, cussed and hit the air conditioner controls. He decided to drop by the Whistle Stop for a cold drink and sandwich before going to work. He cut through the parking lot of the Comfort Inn to avoid some of the traffic and traffic lights. As he passed behind the motel he noticed a uniformed woman coming out of one of the motel rooms. As he got closer he noticed that she was wearing a Grabe County Deputy Sheriffs uniform, and she looked familiar. At that instant Sheriff Waverly appeared in the doorway, turned and pulled the door shut. When they both turned to go to the Sheriff's car that was in the parking lot, Jinkx just happened to be right in front of them. Of course all guilty persons look around when they are doing, or have done something wrong. Jinkx couldn't hide, and he knew not to duck. He raised his hand and weakly waved. Sheriff Waverly was stone faced when Jinkx passed. He recognized the woman as a Lieutenant in the jail when he was being processed by Sally. "Oh great," he mumbled. "This is just what I need." He snickered to himself. "The Sheriff is doing some 'undercover' work. Yeah, that's it. Sure."

....It was later at night and Jinkx and Deputy Robert Wainger, his training officer, had covered the county for the third time and Jinkx was beginning to learn some parts of the territory. "Are you getting to know where you are now?" asked Wainger.

"Well, the only zone I don't know real good is this north zone. I won't get lost south of Highway 8. There is a lot more open space and cow trails in this northern section, but I figure that if everyone else learned the two zones, I can learn them also."

Wainger pulled over to the side of the road. "I want you to drive for a while. There's a party going on right down here, and I want you to drop me off and come back in about an hour, OK?"

He got out of the car, got behind the wheel, and started driving. "Its 9:30 now, so in about an hour, 10:30, is the right time to pick you up?"



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

7

"That should do it. Pull into the driveway right there by the brick mailbox. Yeah, this is the place." Wainger started to get out of the unit, turned and said to Jinkx. "10:30 is fine. You're on 4<sup>th</sup> Street, close to Higgins Circle. Don't get lost." Wainger walked toward the rear of the house and disappeared into the darkness.

He started backing up slowly, waiting for the traffic to slow down before he backed out onto the busy street. He stopped and slowly looked around. He thought about what Wainger said about "a party." There were no cars in the driveway. No lights on inside the house, and no activity at all. "Yeah, sure. A party," he said to himself. "What the hell have I gotten into now?" Jinkx backed out of the long driveway and drove towards the northern part of the zone.

As Jinkx drove slowly and observed every street sign and orientation point so as not to get lost, the dispatcher called his unit. "Grabe County, 321."

"Oh, shit," moaned Jinkx as he picked up the mic. "321, go ahead."

"321, need you to go to Highway 25 North and Loop 50 at the Greenwood Apartments, number 20, in reference to an unwanted guest, since you are a two man unit. Be advised the subject could be 10-32."

....Great. A man with a gun and my partner is playing patty-cake." Jinkx flipped on his overheads and the red flashing lights broke through the darkness in the isolated, low residential area. Jinkx was northbound on Loop 50 when he heard another unit on the radio.

"Grabe County, 325 will be en-route to assist 321." This was the voice of Lowell Cramer, Jinkx's former partner at the Klimore PD.

He sighed in relief. "Good boy, Lowell, good boy."

They arrived at the large apartment complex at the same time and killed their lights and overheads as they entered the complex. Lowell grabbed the mic. "321, 325, 10-23, Grabe County." Lowell joined Jinkx. "Where's your partner, ass-hole Wainger?"

As they ran and scanned the apartment numbers Jinkx replied. "I think that he's banging some broad down on 4<sup>th</sup> Street. I dropped him off a while back, at what he called a party, but I think he fed me a line of



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

shit." Jinkx pointed to a door. "Here we are." Jinkx grabbed Lowell by the arm. "Just like old times, eh?"

Lowell grinned. "Lets do it," he replied as he banged on the apartment door with his flashlight. He drew his weapon along with Jinkx. "Sheriffs Department," he yelled. Jinkx grabbed the door knob, turned it, and both went through the door, facing a skinny, hippie type character with his arms raised in the air and holding a handgun.

They pointed their weapons at him. Jinkx gently holstered his weapon and walked slowly toward the shaking subject. "Tell you what, slick. I'm going to walk slowly up to you and take that gun from your hand. Keep your hands in the air. If you make one unnecessary move, just wiggle a tiny bit, my partner is going to blow your shit away. Your life on this earth depends upon whether you make like a statue, or make like a flag in the wind. What's your mothers address? Answer me right now." Jinkx motioned with his hands and snapped his fingers.

"612 Sycamore. 612 Sycamore," he blurted. He nervously asked. "What you want her address for?"

"Because," Jinkx said slowly. "If you move, we have to know where to send your body. Am I clear?" Jinkx advanced slowly.

"Yes sir. Yes sir," he replied. He began to shake.

Jinkx took the handgun from his trembling hand, reached for his cuffs and told him to put his hands on the wall.

He complied and asked, "Would he really have shot me?"

"Most certainly," said Lowell in a loud voice. "Most certainly."

At this instant a woman appeared in the doorway of a room in the background. Jinkx drew his weapon and they pointed their weapons at her.

"I'm the one who called. I was afraid to come out as I was thinking that you might shoot me if I suddenly appeared in the doorway." She was very nervous. "This is my apartment. I wanted him to leave, as I have been dating him and I wanted to break it off. He is drunk and he has been taking dope and I don't want him here, ever again. He doesn't understand it when he's told to leave me alone. My Father has told, no, he has warned him, that if he comes around me one more time and threatens or hurts me, he was going to hurt him. My dad means it. If he knew that he was here



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

9

now, and had broken the window," and she points to glass on the floor from a broken window, "he might kill him. My dad is very protective of me."

"You do want him to go to jail, don't you?" asked Jinkx.

"I sure do. I don't want him around me, ever again. I've got to call the manager and see if they can fix the window tonight. I can't stay here." She sat down on the couch and began to cry and tremble. She ran her fingers through her hair and looked at the broken window.

Lowell looked at his watch and looked at Jinkx. "I'll take her statement after we go put this joker in my unit. I know you have to pick up that dip-shit. I went through this myself when I first came here. Let's put him in my unit then I'll come back up here and take her statement." He motioned to the woman. "I'll be right back, OK?"

She nodded. "I'll see what the manager will do about the broken window."

When they reached Lowell's unit, Lowell turned to Jinkx. "You still have those thumbcuffs?"

"Sure do." He handed the small thumbcuffs to Lowell.

Lowell turned the prisoner around and started to put the thumbcuffs on him. "I want you to know that the more you wiggle and move around the more these little jagged cuffs will cut into your thumbs. If you sit still they will be OK. I'm going back upstairs and take her statement. I'll be back in a few minutes. Sit still." He placed the prisoner in the back seat, buckled him in and locked and shut the doors, which could not be unlocked or opened, from the inside. He turned to Jinkx. "I rode with Wainger a few times when I first came here. I learned in a very short time that he was a boozier and a woman chaser, and a drinking buddy and suck-ass to Sheriff Waverly. The clincher is, if you say anything to anyone, and it gets back to the Sheriff, need I say more? Handle the situation with care, as if you had the Holy Grail in your hands, and you didn't want to drop it. Don't get diarrhea of the mouth and get yourself in trouble." Lowell nodded to Jinkx and walked away. "Later."

Jinkx spoke not a word, but turned slowly and walked toward his unit, shaking his head. He got behind the wheel, started the engine, slammed it in reverse and did a bootleg turn-around in the small area. As he drove



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

back toward 4<sup>th</sup> and Higgins he muttered to himself. "Now, settle down, settle down. What a fuckin' mess I've gotten into. I'll try to find a new training officer. No, that won't do. Captain Ashley will ask questions and my big mouth won't let me tell him a lie. Damn, Sam, what next?" Jinkx saw the brick mailbox and turned slowly into the driveway. Wainger was waiting, impatiently, at the hedge lining the driveway.

As he walked toward the unit Jinkx noticed a slight imbalance in his walking. Wainger took three times grabbing the door handle before he finally opened the door. As he settled into the seat the smell of an alcoholic beverage filled the patrol unit. "A little late, but I was a little late too," he laughed and burped. He hung his head and propped up against the door. "Carry on, carry on. You're doing good."

Jinkx looked at his watch. It was 10:45. He remembered that he had not cleared with the dispatcher on the call at the apartment complex. "321, Grabe County. I'll be clear, and 325 will handle the report."

"10-4, 321. Is Deputy Wainger with you?"

"10-4, Grabe County."

"Deputy Wainger, be advised that you are to drop by the Grand Samaritan Medical Center at the end of your shift as your wife wants you to pick up her jewelry and take it home."

He looked at the motionless body, what he now considered a "piece of shit," leaning against the door. "10-4, Grabe County, 10-4," he mumbled. He grabbed Wainger by the shoulder and shook him. "Wake up. Wake up."

Wainger sat up and stared ahead. "What? What?" He rubbed his eyes and shook his head. He tried to read his watch, but couldn't focus on it. "What time is it?"

"It's almost 11:00. I'm headed to the gas pumps now. If anyone should ask, we, or I, answered a call, man with a gun, uninvited guest. Cramer assisted me and one gun-totin ass-hole was arrested. Shift change time, Deputy Wainger."

"A little sarcastic aren't we, Deputy Finner?" Wainger rubbed his eyes.

Jinkx waved his hand back and forth to try to move the sickening smell of alcohol from his face. He smiled and mellowed, against his better thoughts, though. "No, not really. I'm tired, I guess. Oh yeah. You are to



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

11

go by the hospital, where your wife is, and pick up her jewelry and take it home. The dispatcher just told me."

As they drove up to the gas pumps Deputy Wainger advised Jinkx on how to use the gas card and code number for each unit, that was kept in the glove compartment. "I'll put the gas in if you clean these dirty windows and check the oil."

"Sounds fair. Pull the hood latch." Jinkx was glad to get out of the smelly unit and breathe some fresh air. As he raised the hood and proceeded to check the oil he noticed that Wainger was at the pay phone. "Bet he's not calling his wife," he mumbled. After he had washed the windows he walked to the gas pump that was still running, and was in hearing distance of the pay phone.

Wainger noticed that Jinkx was near. "Get in and have a seat. I'll be there in a minute."

He was in the unit for about five minutes when he saw Wainger filling out a gas slip, and when finished put the receipt in the locked box on the pump.

Wainger got in and started the unit. "When you put down the amount of gas, and mileage, drop the receipt in the box by the pump, OK"? Wainger jammed the unit into low gear and gave it the gas. The unit lurched forward and a popping sound came from the rear. "Damn. Did I hit something?"

When the unit was stopped Jinkx and Wainger got out. They looked at the rear of the unit, and then Jinkx looked at the gas pump. "Did you take the nozzle out of the tank?" asked Jinkx, as he pointed to a dangling gas hose on the pump and a nozzle lying between the pump and the unit.

"I'm sure I did," replied Wainger. "I think." He shook his head and walked over and picked up the nozzle. "Maybe I didn't. I'm glad there is an automatic cut-off when you pull the nozzle off the hose."

"You mean when y-o-u pull the nozzle off the hose," blurted Jinkx.

"I didn't mean you, per se. When anyone does it. It'll be all right. I'll tell the dispatcher about it. You don't have to say anything. Let's go to the courthouse and call this a day, OK?"



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

It was 10:40AM when the phone broke the silence and Jinkx awoke abruptly to the annoying noise. He glanced at the clock as he reached for the receiver. "Hullo," he mumbled.

"Sgt. Rutherford here, Deputy Finner. I know you have been off shift several hours, and I need you to come in a little early and see Chief Donner. He didn't say what it was about when he asked me to call you, but it sounded important."

"Hey, Barron, what's new with you? It's been a while. I haven't seen you since you got promoted to Sgt. and now sit behind a desk. I thought you liked it on the street." Jinkx swung his legs out of the bed and tried to wake up.

"Well, I'm not chained to a desk. I get out occasionally. I was off yesterday when you started, and Captain Ashley told me that you had worked last night. I didn't want to call you and wake you up, but the Chief said that I should call you now. As you know, J.M. Graham is the Administrative Chief Deputy and Jamie Boy Donner is the main Chief Deputy. I don't know what he wants, but you need to come in a little early and see Chief Donner. Think you can make it?"

"I don't see why not. By the way, don't run off, as I want to talk to you when I come in early. Are you going to stay on days all the time? I know that when we worked together in Klimore, you said that you didn't like days."

"I think that I will be going on nights sometime in the near future, but there is no definite date. I think that they are going to make a few more supervisors, and when they do I will probably go on nights. I'm going to let you go for now, and maybe you can grab a few more winks of sleep. See you later, OK?"

"I'll catch you later, Barron. Good talking to you. Bye." Jinkx cradled the receiver and tried to get comfortable with a thousand things running through his mind concerning the meeting with Chief Donner. He thought that with just one day on the job, surely he couldn't be in trouble already.

\*\*\*\*\*

After hours of tossing and turning after the interruption of his sleep by Sgt. Rutherford, Jinkx lumbered into the courthouse and walked toward the Sheriffs Department. Sgt. Rutherford was seated behind the front desk, and he noticed Jinkx walking toward him.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

13

"Rutherford," called Jinkx. They shook hands.

"Let's go in my office where we won't be interrupted. I know a little about why the Chief wants to see you. "

At that instant Chief Deputy Donner entered the room from his office. He pointed to Jinkx. "Are you Finner?" he asked gruffly.

"Yes sir," answered Jinkx as he started, just started, to extend his hand and walk in the Chief's direction.

The Chief turned and walked away, saying, "Come into my office."

Jinkx dropped his hand to his side, and turned to Sgt. Rutherford. "I don't think I like him. Does he always have a shitty attitude?"

Sgt. Rutherford shrugged his shoulders and shook his head, then nodded up and down.

"Sit down, Finner," said Chief Donner. "You know anything about a gas nozzle being pulled from the hose at the gas pumps last night?"

"Yes sir, I do know about it. Deputy Wainger said that he would tell the dispatcher about it. I assume he made some kind of report. I really don't know your procedure concerning incidents like this, but since he was the senior officer, he said that he would take care of it. Now Chief, I don't know why he didn't take care of it like he said he would."

"Why would he make a report for something that maybe he knew nothing about? That would be your job, wouldn't it?" He tapped his fingers on the desk then put both elbows on the desk and leaned toward Jinkx. "Wouldn't it?"

Jinkx looked bewildered. Jinkx stuttered as he tried to answer. "I-I'm a little, ah, a little bit confused here, Chief. I wasn't driving the unit when the nozzle was pulled from the hose. I checked the oil and washed the windshield while Deputy Wainger filled the tank. If you would check the slip, or receipt, or whatever you call it, you will find that he filled it out." Jinkx put his hand on his chest. "Not me. It was Wainger. He got in the unit, after he filled the tank and filled out the receipt, started the unit and drove away. That's when we heard a popping sound from the rear. We stopped, got out, and saw that he, Deputy Wainger, had not taken the nozzle out of the tank. The nozzle was laying between the unit and the pump, and the hose was dangling on the pump."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

The Chief straightened up in his seat, and again tapped his fingers on the desk. "Deputy Wainger didn't say anything about it. I looked on the log and saw that your name was listed as checking out unit 881, and the log specified that you were the last unit to get gas, at 10:58PM."

"Yes sir. That was about the time, but Deputy Wainger was driving when the nozzle was pulled from the pump. If you heard different, I call that a lie. Him being the senior officer, I assumed he knew what to do when he does, I repeat, he does, something like this. I don't fade the heat for anybody."

The Chief stood up, walked to the window, with his back to Jinkx. "You can go now, Finner."

He stormed out of the Chief's office and went immediately to Sgt. Rutherford's office. He knocked on the door.

"Come in," he heard. The Sgt. noticed that the hair on Jinkx's neck was standing up, and a scowl was on his face. "Didn't go to good, huh?"

"I can't believe that I have stepped off into a pile of shit called the Grabe County Sheriffs Department." He's," hand-pointing back towards the door, "some kind of idiot. He thinks that I pulled the nozzle from the gas hose last night. That Goddamn alcoholic Wainger did it. He fills the fuckin' unit with gas, fills out the receipt, gets behind the wheel and drives off with the nozzle still in the tank. Then the idiot says that he will take care of it. Now I know why he tells me not to say anything about it. Wait till I see that son-of-a-bitch. He is going to get his ass kicked, deluxe. He's a fuckin' drunk. I dropped him off on 4<sup>th</sup> Street, and when I picked him up, a little over an hour later, he was blasted. He was blasted when he pulled the nozzle off the hose. Is this the way it's done here?"

"No, it's not the way it's done here. Tell you what I'll do. I will take care of this." The Sgt. raised his hands, hallelujah style. "I don't know exactly how, but I assure you, I will take care of it."

"What is with this guy, Wainger, anyway? What about his married life? Is his wife in the hospital?" Jinkx shook his head in disbelief. "He was with some woman on 4<sup>th</sup> Street."



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

15

"His wife is a paraplegic, confined to a wheel chair, and helpless from the waist down, if you know what I mean. I know that Wainger is an alcoholic." The Sgt started to continue, but was interrupted by Jinkx.

"That is no Goddamn reason for him to jeopardize my job here. I don't play those silly games. He was drunk while on duty and I let him drive a county owned vehicle, a taxpayer bought vehicle, and I was stupid enough to ride with him. If I'm going to be this stupid, I'll fit right in, won't I?"

The Sgt. and Jinkx laughed. "See, it grows on you, and you've only been here one day," remarked the Sgt. "Look, I have a man coming off vacation tonight, Sam Retton. He's been here about six months and he knows the territory real well. Also, Deputy Wainger is going to be off a few days, so I'll team you with Retton. By the time Wainger gets back, you probably won't have to ride with anyone as you should know the zones good enough to be on your own."

"As long as you keep me away, or out of close proximity, from Wainger. I'm still pissed off because Chief Donner insinuated that I was the one who did the trick with the nozzle. I could look at him and tell that he wanted it to be me instead of shit-head Wainger. Does he really have that much pull with the Sheriff and Chief Deputy?"

"Afraid so, but I want you to just take it easy. I'm not going to tell you to ride with the tide, as you older guys don't take too much shit from us youngsters, or overbearing ass-holes like Donner and Wainger, do you?"

"Look, I didn't get into law enforcement until a few years ago. I'm now in my late forties, a Korean War Veteran, and a former Private Investigator out of California, divorced twice, and just looking for solitude. These guys are not fuckin' with 'Little Bo Peep' or 'Santa Claus.' I stand up for my rights. Always have, always will."

The Sgt. entered the briefing room, put his notes on the desk and sat down. "Gentlemen. I know that you didn't have a meeting yesterday, as Captain Ashley paired you up and told you to hit the road. New Man." He pointed to Jinkx. "Deputy Jinkx Finner, formerly of the Klimore Police Department. I've known him for several years, and worked with him at



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

the KPD. Good man to have on your side." He pointed to each individual deputy and called their name. "You know Lowell Cramer," and he went down the line. "Lyle Farmer, George Akers, Bodie Denny, and the one you will ride with for a while, and sitting next to you, Sam Retton."

Jinkx reached to shake his hand. "Sam. Glad to meet you."

"Here's the story for our new deputies. We don't have separate call numbers like we used to have. Only the supervisors have separate numbers." The Sgt. got up and went to the blackboard. He drew a big plus sign. "Example. North zone, 321. South zone, 322. North roving unit, 325. South roving unit, 324. All over roving unit, 323. Captain Ashley, 315, Sgt. Rutherford," he put his hand to his chest. "That's me." He looked around and saw that nobody laughed. "I can't take my show on the road. No audience participation."

"Sure you can," yelled Lowell. "We'll take up a collection, then you can hit the road." That got some laughs.

Several deputies tossed coins on the floor at his desk.

"316, is me," he said casually, "And your desk Sgt. is Sgt. Bodie Denny, 317. Your day shift has other numbers, and you will get to know them eventually." He motioned with his hands. "Stay away from the day shift. They'll get you in trouble."

"Speaking of trouble, Sgt., who pulled the nozzle off the gas hose last night? I've heard all kinds of stories." asked Deputy Farmer. He looked at Jinkx.

The Sgt. saw the expression on Jinkx's face, and before Jinkx could involve himself in an answer, and a possibly a lecture, Sgt. Rutherford interrupted. "Deputy Wainger left the nozzle in the tank and drove away from the pump, and it ends right here, right now. Accidents do happen, you know, and it could be you. Now, in the south zone. Lots of dope going through that new nudie joint on the strip. Lots of 150-miligram methaqualone, quaaludes to you, being possessed sold and used on the parking lot, and inside this joint. We have a blue\black Chevy pickup, partial license number is, let me see." The Sgt rummaged through some of his notes. "Ah yes. Here we go. Blank, blank, blank, 123. Last three digits is all we have, 123. Three sisters are pushing the same thing, but they are



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

17

in a white Mustang convertible. Their names are Trudy Toomie, Barbara Toomie and Patricia Toomie. If you want a good dose of the clap, or maybe something a little stronger, you can probably buy that too. There is no license number, yet. The key identification is 'white Mustang Convertible.'"

Jinkx raised his hand, and was acknowledged by Sgt. Rutherford. "Sgt., do you, ah,--know these girls personally?" That question brought laughter from everyone, including Sgt. Rutherford.

"No, I don't know them personally, but Deputy Farmer does, as I was informed today that he went to school with them at Linview High School, class of 1978 or thereabout."

Deputy Farmer registered a surprised expression on his face, and was barely able to speak. "Well, ah, yes. I—I do faintly remember them." He looked down at the table and thumbed through his notebook. "I don't know that much about them. I, ah, haven't seen them in quite a while."

"Well, any information that you can give would be appreciated, and I thought you, or everyone should know, is the fact that they do have in their possession, along with all their dope, a 38 caliber handgun. My informant is sure of this, so, a word to the wise, friend or foe, you better be extremely careful. One man units will call for back-up before you approach. Two man units will also call for back-up, and approach cautiously. Hit the streets, and, oh yes, be on your toes out there. Unit assignments are on the board." The Sgt. left the room.

They were about five hours into the shift and Jinkx and Sam seemed to agree on most everything. Everything was as smooth as silk. "Did you ride with Robert Wainger when you first came here, Sam?"

"I rode two times with him, and that was about all I could stand. He was going with some snaggle toothed, dirty, ugly, big tit civilian jailer a few months back. I think she lives over on 4<sup>th</sup> Street. Her husband is in the Texas Detention Center in Huntsville. He probably intentionally committed a crime to get away from her. I would." He laughed.

Jinkx laughed, and pounded on the dash. "That's where I let him off last night. When I came back to pick him up he was blasted. Maybe he has to get drunk before he can stand her. Well, I had my period of



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

drinking from 1952 to 1955, when I was in the army. After that I probably won't drink a bottle of beer a year."

"I'll tell you one thing, Jinkx. If you ever go to one of Sheriff Waverley's department parties you'll laugh your ass off at some of the things that take place there. Now that I have kind of felt you out, we think along the same lines and I can openly express myself."

"Before I forget. There's a little skinny female Lt. in the jail. What's her name?" inquired Jinkx.

"Oh, yeah. Let me think. Let me think. A scrawny broad, and if you screwed her you would have to pick the bones out of your whattzit." He snapped his fingers. "Got it. Shirley Bossie. And, you do know who she goes with, don't you?"

"Yes, I sure do." Jinkx related the story about seeing the Sheriff and Shirley Bossie at the motel.

"When she comes to his parties they don't necessarily try to hide it. His wife doesn't make it to every party. I don't think that she can stand the embarrassment." Sam strained to look ahead. "Is that a mustang convertible up ahead, with the top up?"

"Looks like it. Get a little closer and I'll run a check on the license plate. Looks like they are going to turn up here." Jinkx waited for a few seconds until he could see the license plate clearly. "322, Grabe County, traffic. A white Mustang. John, Paul, Paul, 764. Off Highway 3 at the Village Barbeque. 28 and 29 request." The overheads caused the car to pull to the side of the road, the unit behind them.

"324, Grabe County. En route to assist 322," said Farmer.

"10-4, 324. Be advised 324 that you need to return to the Klimore PD after this call. You left your weapon in the bathroom."

Farmer felt for his holster and found it empty. "Damn, she didn't have to put that out over the radio."

They laughed. "I don't trust Farmer all the way, Jinkx,"

"We think along the same lines, partner." Jinkx nodded.

The lead officer, Sam, approached the driver side of the vehicle, and Jinkx cautiously walked down the passenger side, shining his flashlight through the back glass then the windows on the right side. Jinkx had his weapon out, and to his side. Sam did the same.

"Put your hands on the steering wheel," yelled Sam.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

19

Jinkx squatted low so as to see in the vehicle. The passenger in the front, a female, looked at Jinkx "Put your hands on the dash," yelled Jinkx. "You, there in the back seat. Put your hands on the back of the front seat. I mean now," he shouted authoritatively.

Sam opened the door on the left side. He noticed three females in the vehicle. "You there, driver. Get out slowly. You in the back seat. Get out on the other side of the vehicle."

The driver sat motionless, and did not obey Sam. Sam reached in and grabbed her by the arm and started to physically take her from the vehicle, but she resisted.

The passengers in the front seat and back seat had gotten out as ordered, and Jinkx had lead them to the rear of the vehicle. "Put your hands on the hood of the patrol unit, and don't move. I mean don't move," he demanded. Jinkx moved to the driver side of the vehicle, still watching the two with their hands on the patrol unit. Jinkx holstered his weapon and ran to the driver's door, reached in and pulled the female out. "Goddamn it. When you're told to get out, that's what you have to do. You don't set there like an idiot," he yelled. "Put your hands on that police car."

Sam followed them to the patrol unit, with his weapon trained on the driver. He was surprised at Jinkx's action with the female.

Sam approached the driver. "I need your drivers license."

"It's in my purse on the front seat, shit head." She shot him the finger, then put her hands back on the patrol unit.

Jinkx and Sam looked at each other and said in unison, "We got the right ones."

The driver asked, "What do you mean, you got the right ones?"

"I'll watch them if you want to look the inside of that Mustang over," said Jinkx.

At this time, another unit, 324 rolled up and stopped behind Jinkx and Sam's unit. Deputy Farmer got out and strolled to the front of the lead vehicle. He glanced at the female, the driver. "Hello, Barbara."

Jinkx and Sam looked at each other and shook their heads. Sam spoke. "I'll look at their car while you two watch the females."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"I'll help you," said Farmer. He took two steps.

... "No" snapped Sam. "I'll look the vehicle over, and as I said, you two watch the females."

Barbara took her hands from the hood and turned toward Farmer. "Whatcha been doing, Lyle?"

Jinkx grabbed her arms and proceeded to place her hands back on the hood. "Keep your hands on that hood. Take them off one more time and you'll be handcuffed and put in the back of this unit, understand?"

She looked at Farmer. He shrugged his shoulders.

Sam came from the mustang and took his walkie-talkie from his side. "322, Grabe County."

"Grabe County, go ahead 322."

"Grabe County, next wrecker on call to this location. We will be 10-95 three times, three females. Beginning mileage will be given when we leave this location and head to the courthouse." Sam had several baggies in his hand and shook them in front of the females. "Anyone want to claim these?"

He handed one of the baggies to Jinkx. Jinkx took several pills from the baggie and shined his light on them and examined them. "These pills have, what appears to me, to have R-O-R-E-R on one side, and a slot on the other. I suspect that these are quaaludes, methaqualone, or as they are known on the street, quays. Otherwise, it is known to me and my partner, 'jackpot.'" Jinkx handcuffed one female then spoke to all of them. "You all have the right to remain silent. You have the right to have an attorney present while you are being questioned. You have the right to stop answering questions at any time. If you cannot afford an attorney, one will be appointed by the courts to represent you at no charge. I want to warn you, that if you give up these rights, anything you say, can, and will, be used against you in a court of law. Do you understand these rights?" Jinkx turned her around and faced her. "Do you understand these rights?" he repeated.

"Fuck you," she answered.

"Sorry, I don't have time for romance." He turned to Farmer. "I'm sure they had rather be searched by an old schoolmate than a stranger, so, would you search them for us? You don't mind, do you? And, by the way,



which one is Trudy and which one is Patricia? We already know Barbara..”

Farmer pointed them out. “That’s Trudy. That’s Patricia.”

....“You fucking fink,” shouted Trudy. “You, you told on us? You Goddamn dope head.” She turned to Jinkx. “When we were in high school, just a few years ago, he was the biggest doper in the school, and a drunk, too.”

Farmer got up in her face. “Shut your mouth. You don’t know what you’re saying.” He turned to Jinkx and Sam. “She’s drugged out. She lying. I don’t take drugs.”

Jinkx got in between them. “Enough, enough.” He turned to Farmer. “After all, you said at tonight’s briefing that you did know them,” he said nonchalantly. “Handcuff the others.”

“Now, wait a minute, Goddamn it. I didn’t say anything about them. I don’t believe this,” screamed Farmer.

Trudy leaned on the hood of the patrol unit. “Lyle can’t search me, but you can,” nodding to Jinkx. “I don’t want his fucking hands touching me. We had enough of that in high school.” She raised her head and looked Farmer in the eyes. ....“You no good son-of-a-bitch. You, you fucking fink.”

Barbara butted in. “That’s enough. You can search us. We won’t give you any problems.” She leaned on the hood of the patrol unit. She glared at Farmer. “I won’t forget, Lyle.”

“You can get back on patrol, Farmer. You need to go back to the Klimore PD and get your weapon. We have everything under control,” said Sam as he handcuffed the other two.

Farmer was visibly upset when he walked briskly to his unit, mumbling to himself. He jammed it in gear and left a streak of rubber as he U-turned and drove away.

Trudy leaned on the hood of the unit and spread her legs. “I thought you were going to search me.” She looked at Jinkx. “Well, do your thing. But, be damn sure you don’t try to do my thing, if you know what I mean.”

He did a light pat down and was careful not to pat too close to the crotch. He patted down Trudy and led her to the right rear door of the



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

unit. "If you search the other two, Sam, I'll inventory the Mustang. The wrecker should be here any minute. Is that OK?"

"Sounds good to me." Sam started to search the other two.

Jinkx grabbed his clip board which contained most of the documents to be completed in the field. He took the keys from the ignition and unlocked the trunk. He talked to himself as he filled out the Vehicle Inventory Sheet. "One spare tire. Lug wrench." He moved the items around to make sure nothing was hidden underneath. "A variety of female clothes. Jumper cables. A pair of woman's shoes." He looked inside the shoes. "Nothing there." He was satisfied that there was no contraband in the trunk, and slammed the trunk shut. He pulled the hood latch and raised the hood. "Lets see. One engine in working condition." He took the top off of the air filter, as that is a hiding place for drugs. "Nothing there." He shined his light all around the engine compartment and was satisfied that it was clean. He opened the door on the drivers side and began looking under the floor mats, under the seat, in the console and when looking under the dash he saw a holster taped to the top of the steering column, hidden, unless you looked for it. "Well, well. Look what we have here." He took his boot knife from his boot and cut the tape that secured the holster. He pulled the holster from the steering column. "A 38 caliber, Colt revolver. Ooh, a Detective Special. Very expensive." He laid the gun in the seat and continued with the inventory. He found no other contraband inside the Mustang.

...."Find anything?" Sam startled Jinkx as he had his head down finishing his inventory. "Sorry, man."

"Whistle next time. You scared the shit out of me." Jinkx held up the holster. "Expensive piece of weaponry in this piece of cowhide. And, I might add, another charge. What do you say about just charging the driver, Barbara, with unlawful carrying a weapon? She, as the driver, is in charge of the vehicle, and that charge would surely stick with no complications."

"Sounds real good to me. Damn. I like your style, man. I was a little concerned when you drug, I mean assisted, the driver from the front seat, but we had a situation where we were already informed that they had a gun. We're gonna tear these criminal's asses up." He repeated. "I like



your style." He settled down and calmly asked. "What do you think about Deputy Farmer? I knew he was a drinker, as you're going to smell it on his breath from time to time, and he always fills up on booze at the Sheriff's parties. When I worked for the Linview PD, I was told by one of his former classmates that he was a dooper in high school. He might not do drugs now, but from what I've heard, he was heavy on them in high school."

"I think that he bears watching. His ass was sucking putty balls when that girl tore into him about his drug use. I do think that I would believe her before I would believe him." Jinkx looked around. "Here comes the wrecker."

The wrecker pulled ahead of the Mustang then backed up to it. The driver got out and came to where the deputies were.

"Well, Finner, good to see you again." He extended his hand. "I heard that you left our fine city and went to the Sheriffs Department."

...."Yeah, I did. You pulled in many a vehicle when I was there in Klimore." He turned to Sam. "Mr. Ellis, do you know Sam Retton?"

"Sure I do. How are you doing, Retton?" They shook hands. "Are you ready for a hook up?"

...."Sure are," replied Jink. Jinkx tore out a copy of the vehicle inventory. "Here's your copy. We're going to be on our way. Good seeing you."

As Sam started the unit Jinkx picked up the mic. "322, Grabe County. 10-95 with three females. Beginning mileage," Jinkx strained to see the odometer. "22,618.8, Grabe County."

"10-4, 322. 9:17PM. Sgt. Rutherford says 'good show.'"

"10-4, Grabe County."

As they drove to the courthouse they listened to the three sisters bitch and moan about Lyle Farmer, still thinking that he had informed on them. "Did you know about Lyle's accident down toward Houston last year or the year before? He like to have killed us all," blurted Trudy.

"I don't believe I heard anything about it," replied Sam.

Jinkx shook his head. "I didn't hear anything about it either. What happened?"



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"Shut up, Trudy," urged Barbara. "He told you that you had the right to remain silent. Shut up."

"Piss on you, big sister. I didn't l-o-v-e Lyle like you did. I only put out to get dope from him. That's all I was interested in."

Barbara mumbled under her breath. "Why don't you just shut up. Don't give these bastards anything to talk about."

"I'm going to tell it like it is. I'm telling the real story. I went with Lyle to a town down by Houston, and I can't remember the name of it now. Anyway, there was me and Lyle, and two of his friends in an El Camino. We had been drinking and doing several kinds of drugs. Meth, marijuana, pills, lots of stuff. Lyle was driving, high as a kite, and had the pedal on the floor. He ran a stop sign going 75 miles an hour and we flew through the air and hit some trees and a fence. We almost hit a house, but the trees stopped us. I was sitting in one of the guy's lap, on the outside. I was thrown from the car into a clump of bushes and a hedge. All I got was scratches and bruises on my ass and back. I didn't get too hurt and neither did Lyle. The other two were taken to the hospital with injuries. Lyle was so out of it that he was like a rag. Ain't it the truth that the more someone is drunk, or doped up, or both, the less they get hurt? I wasn't even included in the police report. Lyle said it might look bad because there was too many in the front. No one even knew that I was in the car."

"Are you satisfied now?" asked Barbara.

"You bet your ass I am," answered Trudy.

"Oh yes, Barbara. I'm afraid I have some bad news for you." Jinkx turned around to face her. He dangled the holster. "Since the driver is in charge of the vehicle, you will also be charged with unlawful carrying a weapon."

For the first time, Patricia spoke up. "See, big sister. We told you not to put that gun in the car. You always think you know everything. Don't worry, you say. I know what I'm doing, you say. Lyle will help us, you say. You want to bet on that one? What do you say now?"

The sisters were still arguing when Sam pulled into the sally port. "Last stop for a while, girls."

After the three sisters were booked, Sam and Jinkx rode the elevator to the 5<sup>th</sup> floor to fill out their report. "I'll make my report about finding



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

25

the dope, and you supplement my report about finding the gun, OK, Jinkx?"

"That's the easy way. Then we won't have two long reports." Jinkx noticed Sgt. Rutherford coming toward them.

"See you a minute, Jinkx?" asked the Sgt.

"Sure." Jinkx led the Sgt. into a corner. "What's up?"

"The Chief chewed Wainger's ass out about that gas hose. He called up here and wanted to speak to you, so I chewed his ass out again about not making out a report. I told him that it was settled, for good and he better leave well enough alone. If he says anything to you about it, let me know. I want this ended, now."

"Best he don't come around me. Did you tell him that?" Jinkx put his hands on his hips and his face flushed bright red.

"I'm trying to get him transferred to days, but nobody wants him. They don't even want him in the jail, and that's the last resort." The Sgt. started to walk away. "I'll see you later, and, oh yes. Good job on these dope heads."

Jinkx returned to where Sam was, and made his report "Think we should go back out and see what we can stir up?"

"Well Jinkx, I'm game if you are. We need to swing through the parking lot of that crummy nudie joint, the Naked Grape, and look for that blue/black pickup. What a name for a nudie joint. Naked Grape."

"I guess the name serves the purpose. It draws the under loved and over sexed crowd. Mostly the younger ones wanting to see their first naked woman. When we were by there earlier I noticed a few cars with the Klimore College parking sticker on the window. Pissy assed kids looking for excitement. That's all they are."

As they drove into the parking lot of the Naked Grape, Sam killed the lights. They drove up and down the rows of parked cars.

As they drove to the front of the building. Jinkx pointed to a pick up that started to pull behind the building. "Pick up. Blue/black. U-turn and pull around back and stop him behind the building." Jinkx was excited as Sam swung around and raced to the back of the building.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Jinkx grabbed the mic. "322 Grabe County, traffic. Behind the Naked Grape. Stand by for the license number." As they met behind the building, the pick up had its bright lights on. Sam turned on the overheads and the pick up stopped.

He tried to block the brightness. "I can't see a damn thing, can you Sam?"

"I'm blinded. Let's get out and check them out. You have the hand radio ready and get that damn license number. Watch your ass, Jinkx."

As they got out of the unit and walked toward the pick up, Jinkx shielded his face long enough to see the complete license number. As he raised the walkie-talkie, the pick up backed up fast, sending gravel and dirt into the air, surrounding the pick up.

They ran back to the unit. "Oh, shit! We got a runner." Sam stumbled while getting into the unit. "Hang on to something. We're going for a ride." Sam pulled the selector into low and gave it the gas. He almost lost control on the gravel. He was on the tail of the pick up when it cut the corner of the driveway to get onto Highway 3. Jinkx grabbed for the radio, and that's when Sam tried to negotiate a sharp right turn, but the wheels would not turn in the gravel, so the unit continued straight ahead. It plunged into a six-foot deep drainage ditch.

Jinkx braced against the dash, but the impact slammed him forward, at an angle, and he was in the floorboard. He looked at Sam. "You OK? Are you hurt?"

Sam shook his head. "Only my pride." He shook his head and tried to push the door open. He noticed that the dash was lit up, and the engine wasn't running. He reached over and turned off the ignition. "You sure you're OK, Jinkx?"

"I'm pretty sure. Boy, am I sore." He pushed open the door and fell to the ground, "Damn, my legs don't want to work." He pulled up on the side of the unit. He stomped his legs and moved around. "I'm OK, now." He walked briskly back up the incline.

Sam joined him at the top of the ditch. "Goddamn it, he got away. I couldn't see shit with those lights in my eyes. I couldn't see that license plate."

"All is not lost, my friend. I recognized that pick up." Jinkx ran back down the incline and retrieved the walkie-talkie, joined Sam, and called



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

27

on the radio. "322, Grabe County. We were in a short pursuit of that pick up. Need to BOLO (be on the lookout) for a blue\black pickup, eastbound on Highway 3. License number Adam Zebra 7123. Adam Zebra, 7123. Should be occupied by two or more, and the driver will be Archie Denmon, white male about 23 years of age. He lives on Lunderman Street in Klimore. I don't know the exact address. Need to advise KPD, as they know him well." He turned to Sam. "I recognized the pick up, and I recognized Archie as the driver when he drove into the lights. I've handled him before. Everyone at the Klimore PD has handled him. He's a known dooper. We'll find out more when we run a 27 on his D.L. Just a minute. "322, Grabe County."

"Grabe County. Go ahead 322."

"Grabe County, I'll be off channel for a few minutes, and oh yes, Grabe County. We slid into a ditch on that pursuit. No damage to this unit. We need a wrecker to pull us out of the ditch, 10-4?"

"10-4, 322. Ellis wrecker will be en route."

He switched channels on the walkie-talkie. "Grabe County 322, Klimore PD, inter-city."

"Klimore PD, 322, go ahead."

"Klimore, need you to BOLO for a blue/black pickup. The license number is Adam Zebra 7123. The driver should be Archie Denmon of Lunderman Street, your city. If located, hold for Grabe County. If unable to locate I'll have a warrant for him tomorrow. Grabe County will also advise you of this."

"10-4, 322. Received. I have his DL number from our records. I'll run it and hold the read-out for you."

Sam looked at the unit with its nose in the ditch. "That gravel wouldn't let the wheels turn. That pickup caught the grass and made the turn. I was too wide." He looked at Jinkx. "Are you sure you're all right?"

"Oh, I'm sure. Both of us are going to be sore tomorrow. I'll bet that if we could have searched that pick up we would have had a pile of drugs. Knowing Archie, he was holding. I'll see the Justice of the Peace tomorrow and get a warrant for Mr. Archie. He won't be hard to find. We'll get him tomorrow night. Nothing to do now but wait on the wrecker. I don't think that there is any damage. Maybe a little on the bumper when it hit. You know, I just got off the hot seat about that gas



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

hose and Wainger deal, so, if you don't mind, I want you to make out the report on what happened with this unit tonight. If you don't mind, that is."

Sam laughed. "Yeah, I think I better. I'll make the report. And you know that when I say I will, I will do it. You don't have to worry about getting a phone call at 10:40 tomorrow morning about this. Well, here comes the wrecker. Looks like Mr. Ellis again."

Mr. Ellis was laughing when he came to a stop behind the unit. "I like it when you two are on the street. I get lots of business." He pointed to the unit. "Think this will start when we yank it out of here?"

"I hope so," replied Jinkx. "I didn't think about it not starting. Lets hook it up."

The unit sat motionless as Jinkx and Sam stared at it. "I hope this thing cranks. You want to drive us to the courthouse, Deputy Retton."

"Let's do it," replied Sam. He turned the key and the motor hesitated a few seconds, then caught hold, and they headed to the courthouse. "No stopping on the way, partner."

"That's for sure, Sam. That's for sure." Jinkx laughed as they drove down the road. "Oh, yeah. We need to stop at the KPD and get that 27. I'll use his past driving history record to get the warrant. I'll have our dispatcher run a CCH (complete criminal history) on Archie, and I know the judge will issue a warrant after he sees that."

\*\*\*\*\*

Two weeks later Jinkx and Sam were on routine patrol in the Klimore area when they drove by 666 Lunderman, looking for Archie Denmon. "I can't believe that he disappeared into thin air, Sam. Archie usually don't stay hidden this long."

At that instant the dispatcher called their number.

"Grabe County, 322."

"322, go ahead."

"322, need you to go by the Klimore PD. Archie Denmon was arrested on a traffic violation. You can execute your warrant."

They looked at each other. "Fantastic. Fantastic news tonight. This makes my day." Jinkx was elated.

A few minutes later they arrived at the KPD, and strolled into the station. Archie was standing by the book-in desk and stared at Jinkx. "Officer Finner, where have you been?"



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

29

"Deputy Finner, now, Archie, Sheriff's Department. I can go into your territory now. I'm not confined to the city limits of Klimore. You used to fly out of town when the city police was after you, and we couldn't chase you."

...."Screw you, Finner. You're fucking crazy." Archie spit on the booking counter.

Officer Burleson slapped Archie and grabbed him by the shirt and raised him off the floor. He put him down at the insistence of the officers around him. He spun Archie around and pulled his T-shirt off and wiped the counter, then rubbed the T-shirt in Archie's face. "That could have been your head I wiped the counter with, ass-hole. If we didn't have an audience," he paused "If we didn't have an audience."

"I'm going to sue your fucking ass, Burleson. Look. I have all these witnesses." He swung his arms around.

Officer Burleson looked calmly around. "What witnesses. I don't see anyone here but me, and you." He punched his finger into Archie's gut.

Archie grabbed his stomach and made a few sounds. "You bastard. Fuck all of you."

"I'm going to answer your question as to where I've been, kid." Jinkx got up in his face. "I've been chasing some idiot in the parking lot of the Naked Grape. This idiot left me and my partner in the ditch at the Naked Grape, and I'll bet this idiot, who happens to be you, thinks that he got away. I have for you, Archie Denmon, this warrant of arrest." Jinkx displayed the warrant then stuck it in Archie's pocket. He turned the stunned young man around and proceeded to search and handcuff him.

Archie tried to turn back around but was pressed up against the counter. "You ass holes. You fucking ass holes. I wasn't at the Naked Grape."

He turned him around and looked him in the eyes. "All you have to do is convince the judge, don't you?" Jinkx asked officer Burleson, when they searched Archie's pick up, did they find any drugs.

"He was in his girlfriend's pick up. A white Ford, not his black pick up. We searched it and found nothing. We released it to her, the owner. We had nothing on her. You know her, Gail Plunk. A little bitty girl."

"Yeah, I know her. Well, can we have him, or do you want to pursue this traffic thing with him?"



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"You can have him. Anything to get rid of the little shit," replied Burleson. He looked at Archie. "I suggest you don't say one Goddamn thing." He shook his fist.

As they drove to the courthouse Jinkx turned around. "You know, Archie. I know you're a fuck-up. Your rap sheet shows a dozen or more traffic citations. Several arrests for misdemeanors, including drugs. Our warrant is for fleeing the police and fail to signal a turn from a private drive entering onto a main thoroughfare. It's not much for now, but you'll be off the streets for a while, and it adds to your sheet. Remember when I told you, a long, long time ago, that when you commit crimes continually, you could be considered a habitual criminal. If some young assistant D.A. didn't have anything to do, he could file on you as habitual, and send you up the river for a while. Don't that bother you?"

"Don't try to lecture me, old man. All those that wear a badge can get fucked." Archie spit through the wire cage at Jinkx and Sam.

Sam slammed on the brakes. "You little son-of-a-bitch."

"Don't stop, keep on going." Jinkx tried to brace himself against the dash. "Don't give this little ass-hole the satisfaction of getting under your skin. There is a simple solution to this," pointing to Archie, "problem". I'm going to see the District Attorney Ron Faber tomorrow, and get him to file on his ass as a habitual criminal. He's a square shooter. He's going out of office December 31, as he did not seek re-election. We will have a new D.A. come January 1, Danny Bonham. I don't know him. I'll go with Faber."

"I like your plan, partner. We'll get rid of this turkey for quite a while. I'm going to go to the D.A. with you." He glanced back at Archie. "What goes around, comes around, punk."

Archie was solemn. He kicked the back of the seat for a few seconds, then quit. "Piss on you all, and the D.A."

## CHAPTER 2

It was mid November when Sheriff Waverly announced that there would be a departmental party on the 21<sup>st</sup>. Sam had made Jinkx aware of



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

31

what transpired at his parties, but it was right that he would make an appearance. He checked his work schedule and he was working that night. He decided to go, but would only stay for a short time, and then leave and go to work.

They were assigned to the south zone, and since it was turning a little cold, they had been advised to wear long sleeves, tie and coat. "I don't care too much for a tie, do you, Sam?"

"Not really, but it's that time of year. Are you going to the party on the 21?" Sam pulled into a convenience store on Highway 25. "Want some coffee?"

"I sure do. Hey," Jinkx pointed to a woman getting out of her car and walking toward the door of the convenience store. "Don't she work at the Grand Samaritan Hospital?"

"Yeah. Her name is Marissa. I remember seeing it on her uniform. Got the hots for her?"

"Shit. I'm old enough to be her daddy. She probably has a dozen doctors running after her." Jinkx walked hastily toward the door.

"Whoa," said Sam as he grabbed Jinkx's arm. He let go. "Maybe you better hurry. At your age you don't have too much time left." He laughed as they entered.

"Glad to see someone happy," said the clerk.

Jinkx eyed the young woman in the nurse's uniform. "Excuse me, but don't you work at the Grand Samaritan Hospital?"

She turned and smiled. "Yes, I do. I remember seeing you several times." She pointed to Sam. "Him too."

"Do you live here in Klimore?" asked Jinkx.

"No, I live in Linview. I brought my car to the Ford dealer down the street. A minor problem with a recall notice. A problem with the emergency brake."

Sam nudged Jinkx from behind. "Here's your coffee Deputy Finner. Deputy Jinkx Finner." Sam smiled at her.

"I'm Marissa Golden." She took her change from the clerk.

"Marissa Golden. Yep, Marissa Golden." He was moonstruck, and looked at Sam. "Deputy Sam Retton," He nodded to Sam who was walking toward the door. "My partner."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"I'm on my way to work, now. Someone is working over for me. I should be on my way." Marissa picked up her sack off the counter. "Lots of gum. I'm trying to quit smoking."

"Say, do you want to have a coffee with me after you get off? I get off at 11:00." Jinkx looked into her eyes.

She thought for a few seconds. "Sure, why not? Meet you at the Whistle Stop? I get off at 10:00, but I'll be there."

...."Great. Super." Jinkx turned and walked to the door. "See you." He turned and walked to the patrol unit.

Sam was on the passenger side, and motioned for Jinkx to drive. When Jinkx started the engine Sam laughed. "I think your engine is running faster than the engine in this Dodge. Old man, you better watch it. You couldn't keep up with her. She's only about 25 years old."

"I'm having coffee with her after work. I'll let you know tomorrow how old she is. If I have a heart attack when I'm with her, she can give me mouth to mouth, to resuscitate me. I didn't see any rings, did you?"

"I really didn't look for rings. You're really hung up on her, aren't you?"

"Women in uniform turn me on. My ex was a policewoman. No man should be alone. Jinkx's law. Enough of this. Enough. Let's hit the strip and see what we can get into. Let's do a walk through the nudie joint. I need to, how does that go, charge my batteries?" Jinkx laughed.

"It sounds like you're in heat," replied Sam. He laughed too, as they drove toward the strip on Highway 3.

"I'm only kidding. I won't look at the naked girls. Not even once." He shook his head.

"Yeah, sure. By the way. We have some more deputies starting tomorrow. Daniel Hummer will be back. He used to work here before. I knew him when I was with the LPD. The Sheriff used to have this group that was on their own. They were like the 'Untouchables.' They were a fledgling narcotics unit/drug task force/robbery detail/burglary unit and most of all, they were a bunch of ass holes." Sam grinned at Jinkx. "Of course, that's my own personal opinion. They only reported to the Sheriff. They screwed up more than they did right. They had several cases thrown out of court because they couldn't show probable cause for a stop or an arrest. They arrested many times without a warrant, without reason. The



Sheriff kept most of the bad publicity out of the papers and within the department. The truth always leaked out. He finally disbanded this unit."

"Who were the members of this elite unit, anyway?" asked Jinkx.

"Let me see now." Sam thought for a few seconds. "If I remember, there was Daniel Hummer, I think Barron Rutherford, Jimmy Walsh, George Acres, several more I cant' remember, and your friend and mine, Lyle Farmer."

"I sure as hell didn't know that Rutherford was kicking around with a crew like that. And if anyone knows about drugs, you can bet your ass Farmer does. Rutherford has always been OK with me. He worked at Klimore for a while. He's sharp. But," Jinkx continued, "How did they escape publicity? How could a Sheriff keep public knowledge out of the newspaper? Court trials are public."

"I don't know exactly how he did it, but, well, there is a writer for the Linview News that tried to get some of it in the paper. She was at the courthouse every time one of these cases came up on the docket. She dug and pried, asked questions, attempted to conduct some interviews, but was shut down every time. Her name is Kerrie Wintz. Cute little trick, too. She couldn't get a grip on what was going on. It was, what we know as, swept under the rug. I'm telling you right now, and I know you've heard it before. This is the most corrupt county in Texas. I'm getting out of law enforcement as soon as I can. I have an application in at the chemical plant in South Linview, and when my application is approved, I am gone."

"You know, I was inadvertently warned about leaving the Klimore PD and coming to the Sheriffs Department. Chief Graham kind of coaxed me into making a decision. Of course, he didn't twist my arm. I made my own stupid mistake. Or at this point I think I made a mistake. But, I'm here, and I'll stay here as long as I can."

\*\*\*\*\*

It was 11:20 when Jinkx pulled into the parking lot of the Whistle Stop. He glanced over the parked cars to locate Marissa's car. He failed to see it. When he entered the restaurant he saw her in a corner booth. "Hello, kiddo." He noticed that she was not wearing her uniform. "Sweater and blue jeans, my favorite dress. Are you hungry? Maybe for a bacon, lettuce and tomato sandwich?"



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

...“That sounds good. Are you having coffee?” she asked as the waitress approached the booth.

He turned to the waitress. “Two BLT’s. I’m having de-caf coffee, and she’s having—” He pointed to Marissa.

“Regular coffee. De-caf does nothing for me.” She offered Jinkx a cigarette.

“No, thanks. I quit smoking a few years ago. I thought you were quitting smoking.”

....“I am quitting. I just haven’t quit yet. I have a question for you. You’re not married are you?”

“No, I’m not. I have been divorced for about five years now. I have an ex wife and a son and daughter in California. Lisa is 26 and Lenny is 24.” He looked at her. “And your age is--?” he nodded at her.

“I’m 26, and also divorced. I have no children. I have been a nurse at the G.S.M.C. for four years.”

“Well, I actually have been married twice. I was married the last two months when I was in the Army in 1955. The marriage only lasted a couple of years, and then I married one more time, and, as I said, divorced a few years ago. Both divorces were calm, no name-calling, and no hard feelings. Irreconcilable differences. That’s the way it reads.”

“I had the same. It just wouldn’t work. He was an oil field worker, a truck driver. He was gone most of the time. He spent a lot of money and couldn’t remember where he spent it. ....This talk is too morbid. Let’s change the subject.”

The waitress brought the sandwiches and poured them more coffee. “Anything else?”

“Not for me,” replied Jinkx. “How about you, Marissa?”

“I’m fine. So, how do you like police work? When the officers come to the hospital with a victim, or sometimes with a prisoner, they seem so dedicated to their work, their responsibility. Are all of you like that?”

“Well, when I come to the hospital, all the nurses, and other workers seem dedicated and responsible. We follow along the same lines, I guess. Was that a good answer?”

“You are very complimentary, Deputy Finner.”

“I do have a first name, you know. It’s Jinkx.” He laughed. “I’ve always been kidded about my name. I was a change of life baby. My



Mother was over fifty when I was born, and my Dad said that he hoped I was a 'jinx' to his reproductive system, and would be the last one born. So, that's what showed up on my birth certificate. Unique, don't you think?"

"Different, I think. I'm going straight home and go to bed when I leave here. I've been running all day. I am tired. I'll change the subject. What days do you have off?"

...."I'm off Monday and Tuesday. Say, would you like to go to a departmental party on the 21<sup>st</sup>. I have to work, but I thought I would at least make an appearance. Would you like to go? I can probably change days off with someone and go."

"I'll have to get back to you on that. I have some advanced classes coming up. In-service training at the hospital. Off hand, I don't know the exact date they are going to have them."

Jinkx took out his notebook and wrote a note. "Here's my telephone number. That's in case I don't get by the hospital to see you." He handed the note to her. "I have just enough ink and paper to write your number down."

She told him her number. "I have a room mate. Her name is Yvonne Cub, so if she answers, leave a message for me, OK? I've got to be going, Jinkx. I'm very tired." She stood up.

Jinkx looked at the check and left money on the table. He motioned to the waitress and pointed to the table.

The waitress nodded, and Jinkx read her lips. "Thank you."

As he walked her to her car he asked, "I don't have to wait until the 21<sup>st</sup> to take you out to dinner, do I? We could go out to dinner, take in a movie or go for a ride. I'd like to call you tomorrow. What time do you get up?" He looked at her, and gently touched her arm. "I'm not rushing this, am I?"

"You're pretty fast, Jinkx, pretty fast. I don't mind you calling me. Sometime in the afternoon will be fine." She took her key and unlocked her car door. She smiled at Jinkx. "Good night." She got in, started the car and drove away.

\*\*\*\*\*

The next day at the briefing, prior to hitting the streets, Sgt. Bodie Denny held the briefing. "Listen up. We have new people with us today.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Deputy Daniel Hummer, who previously worked here, is back with us. Deputy Paul Finnegan is with us off days. Also, Deputy Robert Wainger is off his leave of absence, and will be on patrol tonight. Who do we have here tonight? Cramer, Finner, Akers, Retton. Where's Wainger?"

...."He's talking to Sgt. Rutherford, Sgt.," replied Cramer.

"Deputy Akers, pick up Wainger and report to the hospital. They have this logger over there that is really giving them a problem. Let me warn you, right now. This guy has been logging all his life. He's in his mid twenties, stocky, and strong as an ox. He can lift up one of the hospital beds and slam it in the wall. Be careful. One of you, you or Wainger, you two make your choice, will stay there for two hours and the other will go on patrol. At 5:00 someone will relieve whoever stays there."

Jinkx raised his hand. "I'll volunteer to relieve someone at 5:00."

"Oh, shit," remarked Sam in a low voice. "Ain't this something? This is probably the first thing that you have ever volunteered for. Is nursie Marissa on duty tonight?"

...."OK. Settled. Finner at 5:00. Akers at 7:00. Cramer at 9:00, and the third shift takes over at 11:00." Sgt. Denny looked over the room. "Any questions? Any comments? Nobody?"

"Sgt. Denny." Cramer stood up. "I noticed on the bulletin board that there was going to be a sergeants test given in January. It doesn't state as to whether or not you have to be here any certain length of time to take this test. Is there a requirement concerning this?"

"No. There has never been a requirement in longevity concerning a sergeant's test. So, I will have to check with someone who knows and make sure."

At this time Sgt. Rutherford and Deputy Wainger entered the room.

"Here's the man to ask, Sgt. Rutherford. Sgt., is there a longevity requirement concerning the sergeant's test to be given in January?" Sgt. Denny asked.

"I don't think so," replied the Sgt. "I will check to make sure." He turned his attention to the deputies. "We have two good arrests this week out on the strip. Finner and Retton. Whoever is in that zone tonight needs to do a walk through frequently at the nudie joint, the Naked Grape. You need to advise the dispatcher that you are going inside the building. Don't rely on the hand radios as that is a metal building and you can't get out



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

37

too good from the inside. Be sure you tell the dispatcher. Roving unit south. When the south unit checks out at The Grape, head that way. Check on the deputies inside. Any questions? No? Go do it."

As Sam and Jinkx walked toward their unit, Sam broke the silence. "Well, did you meet the little nurse last night?"

"Sure did. Yep. Twenty six." Jinkx kept walking.

"I was close. I said twenty-five. Go ahead." Sam opened the door and put the shotgun in the rack on the cage.

"Go ahead? What?" Jinkx smiled and threw his coat in the back seat.

Sam waved to the deputies as they passed, going to their units. He checked the siren, radio, and looked at Jinkx. "Don't get a case of the dumb-ass on me. Are you two going to be an item? I got that term from the TV." Sam grabbed the mic. "325, Grabe County. 10-41."

"I have been around, sir. I consider myself a devout lover of women, a man whose life is a celebration of the fact that there are females in the world, and they arouse psychological interest. Volumes have been devoted to the natural sex and to the Don Juan complex, but the man who deeply, hungrily, passionately and persistently enjoys women in all their characteristics, not merely sexually, and is as rare as he is little acknowledged." Jinkx tried desperately to keep a straight face, as he could see that he had thoroughly confused Sam. "What I'm trying to say, sir, is that if you can't dazzle them with brilliance, you confuse them with bull shit." He busted out laughing.

Sam shook his head. "You're a mess, Jinkx. A complete mess." He laughed out loud. "You had me going. I have to admit it. You had me going. You sounded just like a college professor. You had my undivided attention."

...."I couldn't resist. I just couldn't. All bull shit aside, I did have coffee with Marissa last night. I called her today and we talked for a while. I like her. I like her a lot. That's about it. No big romance, at this point, but, well, you know, anything could happen." Jinkx backed out onto the street. "We're north tonight, aren't we?"

"I'm glad I checked the assignments. We are 525, north roving. Say, did you know that the Sheriff used to be a college professor? Well, not



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

what you would consider a college professor, just an instructor. He used to teach Police Science at Klimore College."

"Yeah, that's right. He was an instructor, wasn't he? I remember when Captain Ashley was helping him when he ran for Sheriff. I had forgotten about that. I had heard that when he was with the Department of Public Safety, the Highway Patrol, he had a big drinking problem." Jinkx caught a red light. "Damn. Why don't they synchronize these lights? You can't go two blocks without having to stop."

"I didn't have to go through the Klimore Police Academy, as I have a degree in police science from the Klimore College. So, guess who my instructor was?" Sam nodded to Jinkx.

"The High Sheriff?"

"That's right. Him and Bubba Edison. You know, we went on a field trip to Austin to the DPS Academy, and Waverly and Edison always had a few of the young college girls on their heels. They were shacking up with several of the little darlings while at Klimore, and also on the field trip. You can bet your ass they didn't have to keep up with their studies. They paid for their good grade while on their back. Hey, they didn't try to hide anything, Waverly and Edison. Both worthless ass holes. ....Of course, that's my own personal opinion from personal observation. As I said, as soon as I get the word from that chemical company I am gone. I've had enough of this."

"Ain't that a kick in the ass? I also heard, from a pretty reliable source, a DPS officer that used to work with Waverly, that he was kind of a pussy when it came to enforcing the law. He didn't get involved in very much. Made very few arrests. I understand he had a lot of women friends though. He would tell them that if they would put out, date him, or whatever approach he used, he would cut them some slack, or even let them go. If this was true, and I think it is, that's some kind of fuckin' law enforcement officer. He ain't worth a damn. Do you agree?"

Sam nodded yes. "Most certainly."

"Sam, let me tell you about the first time I ever saw Bubba Edison. I had been with Klimore a few weeks and was southbound on Matlin Street. A car was coming toward me and was all over the road. I thought it was going to hit me. It passed me and turned left at the first block. I turned right at the first corner, then turned right again. I blocked the road about



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

39

halfway up the block. When I got to the car and shined my light in the window, all I saw was badges and teeth. There was DPS Troopers Robin Gregg, who is now a Texas Ranger, Jim Bryan, Ted Dodson, and Keith Patterson, who was getting ready to join the Klimore PD, and Bubba Edison. All were drunk on their ass and thought it very funny that I had stopped a car with such prestigious occupants. I'm pissed by this time. I made it very clear that I didn't give a good Goddamn who they were, and if there was ever a next time that they were on my street in this condition, I didn't give a fuck who they were or who they represented, they were going to jail. I told them that I didn't owe any of them anything, I was not a drinker, I was not one of their home boys, and I was a mature man, not one of the local pussies that went along with their bull shit. I think that I got through to them, as the smiles immediately disappeared from their faces. They pissed me off with those kiddie laughs."

"I can assure you that they did the same thing the next day or shortly thereafter," remarked Sam.

"They were getting ready to pull into a driveway when I stopped them. I should have taken them to the slammer. All except Keith Patterson was with the Sheriff at Jon's Supper Club drinking when the Sheriff did the one car rollover on Highway 4. I saw them there all boozed up."

"You know, Jinkx. It chaps my ass for a law enforcement officer to get drunk on his ass, drive on a public street and endanger his life and the lives of others, then come in to work and arrest someone for doing what they did the night before. I've seen Lyle Farmer do it many times. If you say anything about it he says it's his job to enforce the law, and besides, 'I didn't get caught.'"

It was 4:45 when Jinkx pulled up in front of the hospital. "We didn't have any excitement, did we? I'm going to try to stir up some excitement in here the next two hours, partner. I'm gonna use the john and grab a coffee, and by that time it should be about 5:00. See you later. I wonder who is here, Wainger or Akers? I guess that Wainger is still pissed at me. I'm just in that kind of mood to go up beside his head with my slapper. See you at 7:00?"



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

"Don't get into trouble, Don Juan. You know what I mean." Sam drove away.

....He saw Marissa at the nurse's station at the emergency room.

"Hello, kiddo," greeted Jinkx.

She greeted him with a warm, broad smile. "There's some fresh coffee in that room." She pointed to a corner room.

"Where's that now?" He looked all around. "Would you show me where the coffee is? I don't know if I can find it."

"This way, deputy." She took him by the hand and led him to where the coffee was.

When they were out of sight of the waiting patients, and others, he leaned forward and kissed her gently. "I would like to thank you, ma'am, for being so helpful in a moment of need."

"I didn't know you needed coffee that bad." She poured him a cup.

"Maybe it's not the coffee I need. Did you ever stop to think about that? Maybe I needed soft lips. Sugar for my coffee, you might say." He backed up slightly. "Am I being corny?"

"No, you're not. I like it. But, I must get back to work. Coffee at the Whistle Stop after work, Deputy Finner?"

"I like that. See you there. Oh yeah, Before I forget. What room is that prisoner in that we are having to guard tonight?"

"Room 122. Down the hallway, right turn at the first hallway, third room on the left. Be careful." She smiled and walked away.

When he turned at the first hallway he saw Wainger sitting in a chair outside room 122. Wainger got up when he saw Jinkx. "Any problems with the prisoner?" he asked.

"He started some bull shit when I first got here, but I straightened his ass out fast. I don't take any noise from some black ass."

As Wainger talked Jinkx could smell alcohol on his breath. "Let's take a look at him together. Me and you. When I take over a prisoner I make sure that they are still breathing. You understand what I'm saying?" Jinkx led the way into the room. A black male was on his back in the bed with his right hand handcuffed to the side rail. As Jinkx approached the bed the prisoner pulled away as far as he could go, and his eyes were fixed on Wainger. Jinkx glanced over his shoulder at Wainger, then back



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

41

to the prisoner. Jinkx noticed a swelling of the upper lip and forehead above the right eye. Jinkx exited the room hastily and went to the nurse's station. "Excuse me." The nurse turned around. "When was the last time you checked that prisoner in room 122?"

"Why? What's wrong?" she asked nonchalantly.

"If you would have checked on his welfare you would know what's wrong. I think you should follow me and look that prisoner over, kiddo. Like right now, or do you prefer that I call someone who cares what goes on around here?" Jinkx turned and walked back to the room with the nurse following.

Wainger was standing in the doorway. "What the hell is wrong with you Finner? What are you trying to do now?"

"Trying to do? Let me tell you something, dip-shit. After that little trick with the gas nozzle, I don't, won't, trust your ass for anything. You remember that, don't you?"

The nurse entered the room and bent over to get a closer look at the prisoner's face. The prisoner pulled away and covered his face.

"You took the handcuffs off, didn't you?" Jinkx grabbed the right hand of the prisoner and held it for the nurse to see. .... "You see these marks on his hand, nurse?" She nodded yes. "These bruises are called handcuff marks. They're too tight and on too long. Do you understand this situation now?"

"Yes. Yes, I do. I was down here several times and the deputy told me that he was asleep. I didn't enter the room." The nurse tried to calm the prisoner as he kept making strange sounds and looking at Wainger. "I think you better leave, deputy." The nurse looked at Wainger. "I mean now, sir." She turned back to the prisoner.

Wainger turned and walked down the hallway.

After an hour the prisoner had calmed down and the nurse had apologized about a dozen times to Jinkx and the prisoner. "Everything that has happened will be in a report. I can assure you of that, deputy."

"It should never have happened. Your responsibility in the protection of a patient, and he is a patient or he wouldn't be here, is the same as my protection of the prisoner while in custody."

The last hour passed fast, as Jinkx, the nurse and her supervisor had calmed down the prisoner-patient. Jinkx walked outside the room and



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

looked down the hallway. He saw Akers turning the corner. Jinkx went to meet him. "Did you talk to Wainger about how he guarded the prisoner?"

"I talked to him but he didn't say anything was wrong. Is there something wrong?"

"I'm going to tell you this. He is some kind of nut. I don't know how long he has been here, and I don't understand the relationship he has with the Sheriff and Chief Donner, but some of the things he does are idiotic. He handcuffed the prisoner to the bed. Handcuff marks all over his wrist. He has a busted lip and a swelling over his right eye. I think he slapped him around quite a bit, but he wasn't going to say anything about it until the nurse and I examined the prisoner. He's a shit-head. That's the best description I can give you."

"I know he's strange, and drinks like a fish. I can't stand it when they pair him up with me. I don't say anything about him as it always gets back to Chief Donner. He gives you a bad time when anything is said about Wainger."

"I'll tell you what the fucking problem is. All the little pussies have cowered down instead of facing reality. What's right is right, and what's wrong is wrong. Goddamn it. No one is going to set me up or walk on my ass, and I think that all you youngsters need to develop a mature type of attitude. You can't go through life looking the other way and ignoring what is happening. I've been here only a few months and it's like I walked into a kindergarten class." He shook his head. "I guess that is enough preaching. Read the nurses report. That will tell you what happened here tonight. I'll see you later." Jinkx walked down the hallway and disappeared around the corner.

Jinkx looked for Marissa at the nurse's desk at the emergency room, but was told that she was busy. As he started to walk away someone called his name. He turned around and saw a young woman coning toward him. "Yes ma'am. Can I help you?"

"Are you Deputy Finner? The Deputy Jinkx Finner?" She smiled and extended her hand.

"The Deputy Finner? I am Deputy Finner. I guess I'm the Deputy Finner." Jinkx had a puzzled look on his face.



"I'm Yvonne Cub, Marissa's roommate. I answered the phone the other day. Marissa said that you were in the hospital. She had described you to me and you match her description. I waited around to meet you. I've got to go back to work."

"I'm afraid to ask how she described me. Where in this hospital do you work? You're not a nurse?"

"No, I'm not a nurse. I work in records. I don't have to wear a uniform. Anyway, I couldn't take it as a nurse. Blood, broken bones, burns, accident victims. Aaggh. I could not take it."

He looked through the double doors and saw Sam in the patrol unit. "I've got to go for now. Hey, I'm glad to have met you, and we'll be talking again, OK?" Jinkx started out the door and turned and waved.

As they drove along Jinkx described what had happened at the hospital. "I'm going to make a report on this. I have to. I'm not going to be hung out to dry like before."

Sam agreed. "You should make a report. Your report should reveal what you and the nurse observed and that your main concern was the welfare of the prisoner. The shit is going to hit the fan about this, my friend. Mark my word, that by the time Wainger tells his version, you will be standing in front of Chief Donner explaining why you're picking on his boy." He glanced at Jinkx. "You know this, don't you?"

"Yeah, I know it."

As Jinkx was walking past the front desk, getting ready to leave and meet Marissa at the Whistle Stop, Sgt. Denny handed him the phone. "A call for you, Finner."

"Thank you, Sgt." Jinkx thought that the call was Marissa telling him that she couldn't meet him. "Hello."

"Marissa. I was hoping that I would catch you before you left. Why don't you come over to my apartment and I'll fix us some coffee, and a good, good, breakfast. Do you like a Spanish omelet? I fix the very best."

"I love it. By the way. I do need your address. My pen and paper are ready to write it down. OK. OK. Got it. Be about fifteen minutes. Bye." Jinkx whistled as he walked out the door.

He knocked lightly on the door. When it opened he could smell the peppers and onions. "Boy, does that smell good." He entered and shut the



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

door. "By the way, I met Yvonne, tonight at the hospital. She seems like a nice kid."

"Is that what you think of me, a nice kid?"

"I call anyone younger than me a kid. Sometimes I say kiddo. Habit. That's all. Where can I wash up? I feel kind of funky. Did you have a rough time tonight?"

Marissa looked straight into Jinkx's eyes. "I have a rule and it helps through certain moments of pain and sometimes agony. The rule is that I don't talk about what has, or will happen, where I work. I'm trying to say that I don't bring my work home with me. I'm sure you understand this."

"I do understand, and I have a similar rule. I was trying to carry on a conversation. I sometimes ramble on about what happened during my shift, but I'll try to remember not to talk too much about it." He washed up and went back into the kitchen. "Where is Yvonne? Is she eating with us?"

"She is working over for another records clerk, Patty. I think Yvonne said that Patty had attended a wedding in Dallas and might not be back in time to work her shift. I would think that she wouldn't try to drive back tonight." Marissa set the table and motioned for Jinkx to sit down. "I hope you like this. You said you like Spanish omelettes."

Jinkx took a bite. "Ummm, good." He took a drink of coffee and that made the picante sauce much hotter. He took a big drink of water. "Got any ice for this water? It's not cold enough."

Marissa got some ice. "I didn't ask you if you liked hot or mild picante. I like it hot." She glanced at Jinkx.

He looked at her and crazy thoughts ran through his head. His imagination was running away with itself.

As they chatted casually and pleasantly through a leisurely early breakfast, both Jinkx and Marissa drifted in and out different states of mind, neither aware of the other's thoughts. On one level they were taking the basic inventory of any new acquaintance, asking and answering carefully superficial questions about each other's lives. On another level, as all people do without thinking about it, they were taking note of the other's physicality: details of muscle tones, directness of gaze, mannerisms, gestures, everything the greedy, constantly judging eye can register. On a third level they were each thinking of getting the other into



bed. Not if. Just how and when. On a fourth level they were thinking of all the excellent and compelling reasons why they would not, should not, and must not seriously contemplate such a thing. Jinkx, with the age difference in mind. Marissa, thinking that she might disappoint him in her performance. On the fifth level, the rock bottom, they were both filled with the clear and thrilling knowledge that no matter how many reasons there were against the idea, it was simply going to happen.

"That hot sauce made me sweaty, Marissa. I wish you had a big swimming pool, as no matter how cold it is outside, I could take a plunge. Whew." Jinkx wiped a trickle of sweat from his temple.

"Why don't you take a shower? Maybe it will cool you off. I don't want you cooled off too much, if you know what I mean." She started to pick up the dishes and put them in the sink.

He walked to the bathroom and shut the door. He turned on the shower and adjusted the temperature. He stripped hastily and entered the relaxing high-pressure spray. After the shower, when he was drying off, a knock sounded on the door. Before he opened to her knock he knew who it was. She stood silent, unsmiling, and very naked. He drew her into the room and took her into his arms without a word. They stood together for a time, not kissing, just pressing tightly against the firm length of the other's body like two people who meet after an absence too long to be interrupted by mere words. Then she led him by the hand into her bedroom. The two bedside lamps were already glowing. Suddenly they both fell on the bed, consumed with a lust that knew no barriers, no hesitations, no pride, no age, and no limits. Time out of mind.

"I hope I didn't disappoint you, Marissa." Jinkx leaned on one elbow and fingered her hair.

"Oh God, no. It was beautiful. I was afraid that I was going to disappoint you. I didn't disappoint you, did I?" She kissed him gently.

"No, you didn't disappoint me. At a certain age, my age, you sometimes think it will be your last time, so you, how can I say it, make sure your partner enjoys it, ah, maybe a little more than usual. Did I say that right?"

"You not only said it, you acted it," replied Marissa.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Jinkx slowly got out of the bed. "Bathroom time. Please excuse me." As he got between the bedroom door and the bathroom door the front door swung open and the lights came on. He froze. He couldn't move.

Yvonne's eyes fixed on Jinkx. "Oh, my," she sighed.

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx had slept until the afternoon, wanting to forget the early arrival of Yvonne and the embarrassment of her eye balling him while he was naked. He did not want to forget the pleasure in the night, and Marissa was a blinding encounter. He had to call her. "She's unreal," he said to himself. "Extremely unreal. Sensuality seeping out of every pore. I didn't know they still grew women like that." He dialed her number, and hoped to hell that Yvonne did not answer the phone. It rang several times and then a sleepy voice answered.

"Hello," said Yvonne.

"Uh, hello. This is Jinkx. Marissa?"

"Hello, big boy. Yvonne here. Do you want me to wake Marissa?"

She snickered as she waited for his answer.

"Would you call her to the phone, please? I would like to apologize for last night. I didn't mean to get caught, uh, I mean, I uh, uh. Hello? Hello?" He realized that she had not heard his apology, as he heard her calling Marissa in the background.

Marissa picked up the phone. "Hello, big boy." She laughed.

"She put you up to it didn't she. That's the way she answered the phone. I apologized to her but she didn't hear me. She was getting you. I'm so embarrassed. I don't know what to say."

"I was embarrassed too, but it's not the end of the world. Now, you might as well plan on getting razzed by Yvonne about this. She's that kind of female. Don't pay any attention to her and she'll leave you, or us, alone. She won't tell the world about it. Maybe." She laughed.

"Well, I just wanted to talk to you, as I was thinking about you. I mean really thinking about you."

"I was thinking about you too. Why don't I get dressed and you pick me up and we'll go out to lunch. How does that sound?"

"Whoa. Sounds great. Say, how about some Chinese food. Let's go to the Chalon on Hugh Street. Have you ever eaten there?"

"No, I haven't. Pick me up in about forty five minutes?"



When they drove into the Chalon parking lot he noticed that the Sheriff's car was parked partly behind the building. "That's the Sheriff's car." He pointed to a white Chevrolet.

"I've heard a lot about him," remarked Marissa. "And a womanizer, I understand. Likes his booze."

When they entered the restaurant Jinkx asked for a corner booth. He looked around but didn't see the Sheriff. As they ordered, Jinkx noticed several men being led to a back dining room.

Marissa noticed that Jinkx kept staring at the men. "Is there something wrong?" she asked.

"I don't know. I'm curious as to why a particular clientele is being seated in a, I guess you would say, a private dining room." He turned to Marissa. "Do you have a pen and paper?"

Marissa opened her purse and gave him a pen and paper. "You're the curious type, aren't you?"

"I'm what you call nosy. Also interested in what goes on in Grabe County. Did you know that this county is the most corruptive county in Texas? I've been told that. I believe."

...."I've heard rumors. Do you know any of those going into that room?"

"Some I do. Some I don't. I don't dare ask questions. They all know each other." He nodded. "I think that the one in the lead is a District Attorney. The one behind him is a Precinct Commissioner. The third one is a District Judge." Jinkx was writing fast. "Whoops. Here comes a County Judge." Jinkx motioned to the waiter to come to their table. "Say, I'm thinking about having a birthday party next week, or the week after. About twenty five people. Would it be possible to get a dining room? ....It will be on a Friday, like today. Do I have to make a reservation? And, oh yes. While you are here, two number 5's, please. "

"I'm sorry sir, we only have one dining room large enough to handle that many people, and that is reserved every Friday at this time. Maybe something in the evening?"

"I'll get back to you on that. I can call in and set a time can't I?"

"Yes sir. I'll get you a complimentary menu. It has our dinners and phone number. We appreciate your business, sir."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"I smell something, and it isn't Chinese food." Jinkx looked toward the door. "Low and behold. Constable Hal Dawkins and the head of the Texas Alcoholic Beverage Commission in Linview, Lance Lincoln. This is like a Who's-Who in the land of graft." Jinkx noticed the waiter coming to their table. "OK. Enough for now." Jinkx ripped out the sheet of paper from the notebook and stuffed it in his pocket. He looked over the food being placed on the table. "Looks and smells good. We can do some serious eating on this."

After they had eaten, the waiter placed before them a cookie. "Aren't you going to open your fortune cookie and read your fortune? It might tell you that something exciting is going to happen, or has happened." She touched his arm and smiled.

He picked up the cookie and started to break it open. He stopped for a minute and tried to remember what was told him by Captain Ashley. He replayed the conversation in his mind. He remembered the Captain saying: "I want you to understand one thing, and that one thing could keep you out of serious trouble. I don't think you know who, or what, controls Grabe County. A word to the wise. You might see and hear a lot of things that you don't agree with. Sometimes it's better to close your eyes and ears than get involved with the 'Fortune Cookie Boys,' and don't ask who the 'Fortune Cookie Boys' are. It's bigger than both of us." The more he thought about it, the more he understood. It was no more, X=The unknown. He knew who X was now.

As they drove away from the Chalon, Marissa settled in her seat. "That was good. Chinese food always makes me sleepy. I didn't get enough sleep last night, did you?"

"Not really. As I lay in bed, my bed, I kept thinking about Yvonne opening that door and catching me in stride. I was so embarrassed. That's why I got dressed and left so abruptly. I hope you understand that."

"I thought she would work all night for Patty. Oh, well, I enjoyed it tremendously. I wish we would have had more time together. "

"Well, we could spend some time together now. We still have some time before we go to work. I'll show you my etchings on the ceiling, I mean wall." He smiled.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

49

"I know what you mean, Jinkx. You don't have anyone that would interrupt us, like Yvonne did, do you?"

"Absolutely not." Jinkx licked his lips. "Absolutely not."

As they entered his apartment she looked slowly around and saw a neat, clean, moderately furnished bachelor type apartment. "You even make your bed when you get out of it in the middle of the day? I don't even do that."

He moved closer and gently pulled her to him. He held her tightly for a few minutes, not saying a word. He held her at arms length and started to gently pull her sweater upward. She took his T-shirt from the bottom and tried to pull it upward. For all of their experience, both of them were curiously clumsy, as if each separate movement was happening for the first time. When they were naked at last, lying on the king size bed, Jinkx thought that he had never seen such wholeness, such perfect unity. A moment of passion swept over them again. And again.

\*\*\*\*\*

...As Jinkx was leaving the briefing room he read the assignment sheet and tonight he was riding alone. Somehow, that's the way he preferred it when Sam was off, as there was no comparison between Sam and the other deputies. The Sheriff's party had come and gone and Jinkx had taken some hazing because a younger woman, Marissa, had accompanied him to the party. He ignored the razzing and told the younger deputies that when they got older, this was what they could look forward to. They had become an item and Jinkx detected a note of jealousy in most of the deputies. He knew how to ignore them. The early evening has gone smooth. Very little activity. As darkness fell and he was driving eastbound on Highway 8 towards Witt Olney, he noticed a pickup crossing the stripe between lane number one and lane number two. He fell in behind the pickup and followed it for about one tenth of a mile, and decided it was time to have a look at the driver as he failed to maintain a single lane. As he activated his overheads he called the dispatcher. "325, Grabe County, traffic. John William 2348. Witt Olney on Highway 8 just east of Highway 4." The driver did not stop for the overheads, and Jinkx touched the siren to get the attention of the driver. Still he did not stop. Jinkx hit the siren and the squealing noise made the driver pull to the side of the road.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

The driver of the pickup pulled into the parking lot of a closed business, swung open the door, and walked hastily back toward Jinkx, who was getting out of his unit. "What are you stopping me for? What did I do?"

Jinkx met him between the two vehicles. "The reason I stopped you is because you failed to maintain a single lane. You were weaving between two lanes. I need your drivers license, please."

The driver started to speak. "Now, wait a minute, "I, ah—"

Jinkx interrupted. "This is not up for discussion. And, I want your driver's license now. Right now." Jinkx took the license from him. "Kline Jimmy Whitley, and you live in Klimore. I know you. Do you remember me?"

"No. I don't. Why do you say you remember me?" He leaned against the patrol unit.

...."Get your ass off my car," yelled Jinkx. "Me and my partner, Lowell Cramer, caught you with a trash bag of marijuana a couple of years ago. We had to run you down and got you in your driveway when you were trying to make it to your house. And you're saying you don't remember? When did you get out?"

"Oh, yeah. I remember. I ain't talking. I ain't sayin' nothing." He crossed his arms and stood looking at Jinkx.

"I don't want you to say anything. I want you to listen. Put your hands on the hood of my police car. You have the strong odor of alcohol on your breath. I'm placing you under arrest as I suspect that you are driving while intoxicated. As you know from experience, I only tell you once." Jinkx motioned to the hood of his patrol unit. He patted the hood.

Kline complied, but mumbled cuss words as he did it. "You know something, turkey? My boss, Sammy Sothern, is good friends with your boss, the Sheriff. If you arrest me I'll be out before you finish your paper work. You're going to get in trouble for this."

"I know your boss. He owns a business in Klimore. Look at it this way, sonny boy. I did my job. I know you're drunk. You know you're drunk. I'm taking you off the street before you crash into an innocent family and kill or injure someone, maybe yourself. I'm doing you a favor." Jinkx called the dispatcher on his walkie-talkie and asked for a



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

51

wrecker. He gave the driver his Miranda warning as he gave him a field pat down search and handcuffed him.

When Jinkx and the prisoner got off the elevator on the jail floor he asked Gladys Boren, a civilian jailer, if there was an intoxilizer operator on duty. He turned to the prisoner. "Will you submit to an intoxilizer test?"

"Sure," he replied. "It won't make any difference. You're wasting your time, anyway. Hell. I'll take two of them."

"Richard Matlock is here. He'll run the test for you." said Gladys.

A fat, buffalo ass type of jailer came from the back room. He pointed to Jinkx. "You want a test run?"

"Yeah, I do." He took the handcuffs off the prisoner. "Put your hands on the table." The prisoner complied. Jinkx searched the prisoner thoroughly, turning his pockets inside out. The prisoner even had to take off his shoes.

"Get a kick out of feeling my crotch?" asked the prisoner.

"Oh yeah! You know, kid, from what I felt, someday you might grow into a man. Don't give up hope."

Gladys and Richard laughed.

"Fuck you. Every ass hole that carries a badge is a fucking clown. You would never make it if you had to work. Piss on all of you." He scowled at all three.

"You just trash talked your way into another charge. Your dirty mouth will get disorderly conduct laid on your ass. How do you like that, cowboy?"

The prisoner stood there, and for once had no reply.

Jinkx led the prisoner into a room that contained the intoxilizer. "Sit down."

"Can I have a cigarette?" the prisoner begged.

"Sorry. No smoking till after the booking procedure, and then the jail personnel has to make that decision. You belong to them now."

Richard Matlock ran through the testing procedure and gave Jinkx his copy of the test. Jinkx read it aloud. "And you told me you didn't think you were drunk. How does 0.027 % sound to you? Do you realize your alcohol content is almost three times the amount that Texas law allows?"



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

He took the prisoner by the arm and led him out into the booking area and seated him. Gladys started doing the booking. Jinkx returned to where Richard Matlock was. "Didn't I see you down in Larkmount a couple of weeks ago in a police unit?"

"I'm the City Marshal there. I'm going full time when they start to adjust their city budget and can pay me full pay. I work here full time and down there on my off hours and on the weekend. I have big plans for law enforcement in that community. A lot of traffic rolls through that area. I can stop their ass from speeding, and other things."

"Yeah, you can. But remember, you have to treat the public right. Have you been through the Police Academy yet?"

"No, but I will go when they take me on full time. I have big plans down there."

"In other words, you know absolutely nothing about traffic laws. Is that correct?"

"I'm learning. The public will have to put up with me for a while until I go through the academy."

Jinkx started to walk away. "Well, I'll see you later. Good luck on your police work, and thanks for running the test." As Jinkx left the room he thought to himself. "This is exactly what we need on the street to turn loose on the public. This ass hole will make it tough for police officers everywhere. Big ideas for the city of Larkmount. Yeah, sure. We'll see."

....He stopped where Gladys was processing his prisoner. "Is he cooperating or giving you a rash of crap?"

"Yes. He's been very cooperative. By the way, did you hear that we were getting a new boss here? Just a minute." She motioned to Richard as he approached. "Take the prisoner and let him have his phone call and put him in a cell, will you?"

"Sure will." After he made his call he was led to a door that opened into the cells. They disappeared behind the big heavy door. The sound of the door closing always sent a chill up Jinkx's back.

"Our new Jail Captain is going to be, non other than, Deputy Robert Wainger. And, I have heard that you know him under rather unusual circumstances."

Jinkx stood there, positively petrified. His jaw almost fell to the floor. "You absolutely have to be kidding me about this move. What is going to



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

53

happen to your present Jail Captain, uh, what's his name again, Benny Richardson?"

"He is going into civil, I hear. He was good for the jail. He got on the Sheriff's list for trying to do more and better things for the jail and the jail personnel. We have never had a bad report from the Texas Jail Commission. Everyone working up here was happy, except you know who, Richard Matlock. So you know who won out. I really think that Captain Richardson was glad to get out of here."

"You really made my day by telling me this. I can't believe it. Well, I'm going downstairs and make my report on Mr. Whitley."

He had been working on his report for almost an hour, and of course shooting the bull with Sgt. Denny and others, when he was called to the phone. It was jailer Gladys Boren.

"I thought you might want to know that your prisoner, Kline Whitley, will be released on his personal recognizance in a few minutes. He called his boss and his boss called the Sheriff and the Sheriff called Justice of the Peace Jason Baldwin and the J.P. called us. We are to release him. His boss, or someone, is on their way to pick him up. Captain Richardson has a standing order that we are to hold drunk drivers four hours before they can be released, but you know how that goes. The Captain has had problems like this before and has went around and around with the Sheriff about this, but lost the battle. So, I'm bringing him down now. Sorry."

"We did our job. That's all we can do. I still have the charges against him. I'll see him one more time in court."

"Don't count on it Deputy. This is Grabe County, remember?" She hung up.

He did not want to be reminded of this. After he cradled the phone he signed the papers and poured a cup of coffee. He put the paperwork in the basket. As he turned to get his coat he saw Gladys bringing Whitley towards the desk. Sgt. Denny took the paperwork from the jailer.

Kline Whitley stared at Jinkx. "Told you," he said.

"See you shortly, Mr. Whitley. You'll never stay out of trouble. We'll do it again, I'm sure." Jinkx winked at him.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

It was the holiday season, crime season. Deputies were two per unit on orders. Jinkx was now partnered with Daniel Hummer, and Hummer seemed to be obnoxious and irritating as a hemorrhoid. It was all that Jinkx could do to tolerate him. "Someone said you attended Texas A&M, Daniel. Are you an Aggie?"

"I really don't like the term Aggie. It has a degrading ring to it, don't you think?"

"No, not really. After all, their athletic teams are called Aggies. Do you think that the founders of Texas A&M college would give a degrading nickname? After all, did they consult you personally before they did this? You were only a student, not a member of the faculty or governing board, right?"

"Yes, I was only a student. I've heard that you were a Korean War veteran, is that correct?"

"That's true. I was in the Army, in Korea. I was a Staff Sergeant. A nineteen-year-old punk ass kid. I was an RA."

"What's an RA?" asked Hummer.

"You don't know what an RA is? Regular Army. It means that I volunteered. I couldn't bitch or complain, and I didn't. Did you know that Texas A&M graduated more military officers during World War II than any other military academy?"

"I didn't know that. I was only there for a few semesters. I flunked out. I admit it. It's not a secret."

Jinkx thought to himself. "That's what I thought."

"Jinkx, do you think that Captain Ashley is a good Captain?"

He was stunned at a question like this. "Yes, I do. He is mature, experienced, law enforcement educated, and gets along good with the men. Why? Do you know something I don't know?"

"He seems to be laid back. His programs are outdated. I understand he is having some little problems with his wife, and they are going to divorce."

"I know him pretty well and I haven't heard this. I don't see how this would affect his programs. His performance maybe, but nothing else. Are you planning on taking his place?" Jinkx meant this as a joke, but Hummer was solemn in his answer.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

55

"It's something to think about. I think that I have some better ideas. More up to date progressive stuff."

"More stuff?" thought Jinkx. "More stuff? I warned the Captain. This turkey has plans to take his job. I wonder how many more he has tried to recruit and go against Captain Ashley?"

\*\*\*\*\*

Ten days had passed since the arrest of Kline Jimmy Whitley and Jinkx had almost forgotten about it. When he entered the Sheriff's Department he was told that Sgt. Rutherford wanted to see him. He knocked on the Sgt.'s door and was told to come in. "Sgt., what's up?"

"I want you to know that this is not my idea. Here's the story." He handed him a sheet of paper. "This is a complaint form. The Sheriff wants you to drop the DWI on Whitley to a public intoxication." The Sgt. could see that Jinkx was about to express his opinion. "Don't blow a gasket. This is bigger than both of us."

"Boy, where have I heard that before? Surely you're kidding me. The ass hole blows a 0.027% on the intoxilizer He tells me that I am making a mistake and that he will walk on the charge, and you and the Sheriff, well, not you, but the Sheriff, now tells me that I wasted my time in making the arrest. Is that correct?"

"That is correct. You did your job. Let it go. Don't take it personal. Don't stir up any shit."

"I didn't stir up the shit. Your Sheriff stirred up the shit. What happens if I don't sign the complaint dropping it to a lesser charge?"

"The Sheriff said that if you did not sign the complaint it could mean your job. That is as direct as you can get. I know what you want to do, but just once, just once, do it the Sheriff's way."

Jinkx thought for a few seconds. "Tell you what, Rutherford. I'll do this once, but don't you, or the High Sheriff ever, and I mean ever, approach me with this kind of bull shit again. You can pass that back up the line to the Sheriff, and you keep it in mind also." Jinkx signed the paper, and stuffed it into the Sgt.'s hand. "You know where I would like to stuff that, don't you?"

Sgt. Rutherford shrugged and sat down. "I understand."

He walked to the door then turned around. "I never in my life thought that you would go along with bull shit like this. I made a big fucking



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

mistake leaving the Klimore Police Department and coming to this Goddamn place. It's like a cartoon here." He slammed the door and left.

\*\*\*\*\*

It was now January and those that were interested in the sergeants test were studying the Code of Criminal Procedure, Penal Code, Motor Vehicle Code and all other information they could find that might be in the test. All except Jinkx.

....Jinkx and Sam were riding together intermittently, and both expressed their dislike concerning the events that happened at the Sheriff's Department.

"That new deputy I rode with a few weeks back, your buddy, Mac Gaines, is pretty good. Real good. We had that killing at the Red Pen Inn awhile back and we have to go to court on it in two days. That is the fastest court hearing, after the crime, that I have ever heard of. I know about the Speedy Trial Act, but this is ridiculous."

"I'll bet it's in the 12<sup>th</sup> District Court, Judge Kriley's court, right?"

"Yes, it is. Are you thinking what I'm thinking? Oh! Now I get the picture. It takes me a while. This is going to be a deluxe sell out. A new D.A. that is very close to the owner of the Red Pen, Cal Jones. A judge that, I heard, frequently helps to pick a favorable jury. It doesn't take a college professor or mathematician to figure this out, does it?"

Sam shook his head. "What's the name of the one that killed this guy at the Red Pen?"

"Rodney Hill, Jr.. As I told you before, I've known him for several years. I used to see him all the time when I was with the KPD. I thought he was a pretty nice guy. He flat out strangled that big old boy from Louisiana that night. I wonder what kind of jury we'll have?"

"You can bet that the jury will be made up of friends of friends of friends. Typical Grabe County politics and ass kissing," replied Sam. "I'll bet you that the defense attorney will be Olin Hall and/or Shady Haynes. They both have ties with the owner, Jones. Want to bet on it?"

\*\*\*\*\*

The court date has arrived and Deputies Finner and Gaines were in the witness waiting room. The 12<sup>th</sup> District Court bailiff opened the door and called Deputy Gaines first. Jinkx sat for about thirty minutes and was called next.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

57

As he passed Deputy Gaines outside the door, Gaines talked from the side of his mouth and low so that the only one that could hear him was Jinkx. "You're going to puke over this one." He then continued out the door.

When Jinkx was seated he was sworn in and answered the usual employment experience questions by the Assistant District Attorney. He looked around at the jurors seated in the twelve seats reserved for a jury. He also noticed that around the defense table was seated the defendant, Rodney Hill, Jr., defense attorney Olin Hall and defense attorney Shady Haynes. Jinkx knew that the defendant was going to walk. No doubt about it.

Assistant District Attorney: "Deputy Finner. Are you familiar with and incident that happened at the Red Pen Inn on December 12<sup>th</sup> of last year?"

Deputy Finner: "Yes sir, I am."

Assistant District Attorney: "Would you please tell the Court what happened on that date?"

Deputy Finner: "My partner and I, Mac Gaines, were dispatched to the Red Pen Inn, that was in reference to a fight in progress. Upon arrival at approximately 1:13AM, we observed a white male, later identified as Tim Sims, in a semi-crouched or fetal position, with his forehead flat on the asphalt parking lot. A white male, later identified as Rodney Hill Jr., an employee of the Red Pen Inn, was partly across the body of Tim Sims holding him in this position. Rodney Hill's arms held Tim Sim's head in a restraining choke hold manner. My partner and I told Rodney Hill to let Tim Sims up, twice, and at that point Rodney Hill said for us to put the handcuffs on him first. I told, for a third time, told Rodney Hill to let Tim Sims up, at which point he released him. When Rodney Hill finally released Tim Sims, and got to his feet, he stated: 'I think I know how to hold someone.' Tim Sims was still, at that point, in a position with his feet and knees drawn up under him, and his face to the asphalt. My partner and I observed a head wound and blood running out of Tim Sim's mouth. We rolled him over gently to his side and his eyes appeared to be dilated, pupils nearly as large as the color portion of his eyes. At this point I called for an ambulance, as Tim Sims showed no signs of movement and I could not get a pulse. Upon arrival of the ambulance, the



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

two attendants advised us that the injured party appeared to be deceased, and that a Justice of the Peace should be called. At this time my partner, Mac Gaines, called for a J.P. and an investigator from the Criminal Investigation Division. Investigator Albert Ponds arrived at the scene as the first CID officer. Tim Sims remained at the location as found on initial contact, which was approximately fifteen feet from the front entrance to the Red Pen Inn, behind a pickup truck. When I called for the ambulance I was confronted by a white male, later identified as Randy Jones, the owner's son. He wanted to know where to go to file charges on Tim Sims. He was—"

Defense Attorney Olin Hall: "Objection. Relevancy, Your Honor. "

Judge Kriley: "Over ruled. Proceed deputy."

Deputy Finner: "He wanted to know where to go to file charges on Tim Sims. I kind of went along with him to see the expressions on his face. I advised him to go to the Grabe County Sheriff's Department. At this time Randy Jones became irate and insisted that Tim Sims be handcuffed and taken to jail. I advised him that Tim Sims was going to be transported to the hospital because that was where people were taken when their face was smashed in. He demanded that Tim Sims be handcuffed at the hospital and taken to jail so charges could be filed on him, and that he was to be taken directly to jail. I—"

Defense Attorney Shady Haynes: ...."Objection! Objection! Your Honor. Where is this taking us? This deputy is concentrating on the demeanor of a bystander, even though he is the owner's son. It has no bearing on the issues at all. I object to his testifying in the narrative. He's just rambling on about nothing that would be critical to the verdict of my client."

Judge Kriley: "Over ruled. Continue deputy?"

Deputy Finner: "I then advised him that the Grabe County Sheriff's Department would handle the situation accordingly and did not need any help from him. I then told him to leave the scene, or at least back away and let experienced law enforcement make the decisions. He left. I never saw him until later when the J.P. notified us, and all that were standing nearby, and get this, including the dead man's wife, that Tim Sims was dead. D-e-a-d. When Randy Jones heard this, he really disappeared."



Jinkx sat there waiting for someone to ask questions. He looked at the prosecutor, then at the defense.

Judge Kriley looked at the prosecution. "Any more questions?"

Assistant District Attorney: "No more questions."

Jinkx was astounded at the abrupt ending with just a few questions asked by the prosecution or defense. He had been to many a criminal court hearing and never had there been silence by the prosecution and defense. He thought to himself, "What a joke, an absolute joke." His partner was right. He might just puke over this one.

He had stepped just outside the courtroom when he heard his name called. He turned around and was confronted by a young lady. "Can I help you, ma'am?"

She extended her hand. "Deputy Finner, I'm Kerrie Wintz, reporter for the Linview News. Can we talk?"

"I've heard of you, Kerrie." He shook her hand. "Are you just a reporter, or an investigative reporter?"

"They don't know what an investigative reporter is in this town. I've tried to dig up buried bones in this county but I get stopped immediately. I didn't know so many people had so much pull." She raised her steno pad and positioned her pen to write. "Since you were the first on the scene when Tim Sims was strangled, do you have a comment on the court proceeding thus far?"

"Pardon my French, but I could really get my ass in a crack by commenting on a trial that has yet to have an ending. Did you attend the trial today?"

"Yes, I did. Have you ever testified in a criminal case before an unattentive jury? Is this the usual procedure? Were you surprised when the jury didn't seem to pay any attention to your testimony? I noticed this, did you?"

"Machine gun questioning will get you nowhere, young lady. Let me sum up today's trial, as far as my part in it. I know that there is such a thing as a 'Fixed Jury.' I have never participated in a criminal case before a 'Fixed Jury'. As far as this being common in Grabe County, I don't think so. My testimony was the truth. My partner's testimony was the truth. The decision that will be rendered by the jury is unknown at this



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

time. I hope they follow the letter of the law. The defendant strangled a man. The defendant was a bouncer at the Red Pen Lounge. He has no right in killing a customer, unless his life, or the life of another, was threatened. What I have told you is for the record. We need to speak off the record. OK?"

"That's OK with me. You're the first law enforcement officer in Grabe County that will speak to the press."

"Let's get one thing straight. I am not speaking to the press on what I'm going to tell you. I am speaking to Kerrie Wintz, a person. Deal? I'm going to back up here a little on the trial here today. If you remember, the grand jury returned a murder indictment against Rodney Hill Jr. Our offense report said that he was an employee of the Red Pen Inn on that date in December of last year, when a fight presumably broke out. Hill attempted to subdue Sims, and choked him to death with his arm. His throat was crushed with the arm hold. I want you to take notice of what the autopsy report states, and the doctor's statement that performed the autopsy. There's no one else in the witness room. I don't know what the other witnesses said, but there should be enough for a conviction. You need to attend more of the trial. Are you limited to what you can write about the elected and appointed officials of Grabe County?"

"As of today, if you haven't heard, we have a new editor and he tells all the reporters, just this morning, to go get the news. I'm going to write the truth, and we will see how far they will take the story. Everything I, or we, have written before, has been edited. I think this new editor will go for the throat. I will."

"What I'm going to tell you from here on has to be off the record. Deal?"

"Deal. I appreciate this." She put her notebook away.

"I don't know exactly what is going on, but you need to be at the Chalon, the Chinese food place on Hugh Street, next Friday about 11:30AM. Stay there for a while and observe who goes in and out a dining room off to the side. Don't be obvious. I would suggest that you do not be recognized. Don't be a reporter. If I have any information to give you, I'll call you. On the other hand, let me give you my phone number and I want you to keep in touch. I do not want to call you at the newspaper. Would you mind giving me your phone number?"



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

61

"I don't mind." They exchanged phone numbers.

He looked around and saw Chief Deputy Donner getting off the elevator. "Bad news at the elevator. Good bye."

\*\*\*\*\*

The day finally had come when all that was going to take the sergeant's test had signed up. Naturally the one on the top of the list was Daniel Hummer. Jinkx read the list from the bulletin board. Someone tapped him on the shoulder.

"Why didn't you sign up for the test?" asked Captain Ashley.

"I would be wasting my time, Captain. I need to talk to you about your buddy, Daniel Hummer. I did ride with him a few times and he seemed to concentrate on one subject continuously. I told you before that he had big ideas and you better watch him." The Captain started to speak. but Jinkx stopped him. "Let me talk first. He has been talking to everyone he rides with about your not being acceptable as a Patrol Captain. This is really none of my business, but are you having marital problems?"

"Well, Denise and I were having a little trouble, but we have ironed everything out. Why do you ask that?" The Captain had a puzzled look on his face.

"Listen very carefully. When I rode with Hummer, he said that you and Denise were getting a divorce, and—"

The Captain interrupted. "What in the hell is he talking about? My personal life is not to be talked about by anyone, especially one that has me as a supervisor. Are you sure he said that?"

"Don't act dumb ass on me. If I say he said it, you know damn well he said it. You just will not believe any thing that is said about this jerk. Admit it. You act like the sun rises and sets in his ass. Listen to what I'm saying. He has started trouble and also says that you are not a good Patrol Captain. He says that he is going to take your place. I'll tell you something else. He, and I repeat, he, Daniel Hummer, will be the one who is selected sergeant, and I know that the Sheriff has the final say in this. Hummer will be a sergeant within the next couple of days, and he will shoot your ass out of the saddle. I told you, and I'm sure others have told you, he has his nose so far up the Sheriff's ass, that if the Sheriff turned the corner fast it would break Hummer's nose. You harped and harped on the fact that he would be an asset to the department. He'll be made the



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Patrol Captain, and your ass will set on the sidelines. I'm telling you as a friend that you better watch your ass. Am I getting through to you?"

"I think you are wrong, Jinkx. The Sheriff brought me here from the Klimore PD as his Patrol Captain. He won't do me wrong."

"Yeah, sure, There's friendly Indians over them hills, said Custer. If you think your ass is not expendable, you better give that some thought."

"I have a say-so in who is promoted to sergeant. I'll be the one who grades the test, and recommends the one, or ones, that would be acceptable. Why don't you take it?"

"I'm not wasting my time on it. I already know the outcome. Let's change the subject. I testified in the trial of that turkey that strangled Tim Sims at the Red Pen. Did you know that the jury looked like they were picked especially for the defense attorneys, Hall and Hanes?"

"I told you that's the way it works in this county. See and hear a lot, but say very little, or nothing. Chief Donner said that he saw you talking to the reporter from the Linview news. He wanted me to—"

Jinkx cut him off. "Don't even think about it. I know what you're going to say. Don't be a messenger boy for these ass holes. Freedom of speech. No gag rule on this trail, if you could call it that. I'm disappointed in you Ashley. Don't approach me on matters such as this. 'Freedom of Speech', remember?" Jinkx walked into the briefing room.

### CHAPTER 3

Jinkx and Sam had cussed and discussed everything that had happened recently at the Sheriffs Department. Jinkx was still pissed at the Captain for his attitude concerning Hummer "Let's stop at the Klimore PD and see what is happening in this part of the county."

"Good idea. Maybe they have some fresh coffee for a change. I heard a rumor today about Captain Hadley, the CID Captain."

"I've heard lots of rumors about him. One of the officers at the Witt Olney Police Department used to work with him up by Dallas. He was a deluxe woman chaser. Did you ever see his wife? Ugly. She was at the Sheriff's last party. Real nice, but ugly. He might have a reason for chasing strange pussy. The sack on the head trick."



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

63

"He is identical to the Sheriff from what I have heard. Anyway, the rumor is that Chief Briarly is going to be replaced by Hadley as the new Chief of Police of Klimore. I heard it from Lenny Sims in CID."

Jinkx set up straight. "You got to be kidding me. I thought Briarly was set for life. He left the DPS to be the Chief of Police. What a turn around. We'll get the real skinny inside."

The first one Jinkx saw was Sgt. Monroe. "Sgt. Monroe." They shook hands. "What is the latest word on Chief Briarly being canned and Hadley from the S.O. replacing him?"

"That is the only word. The change comes next Monday. The City Council has already give the green light. I hate to see it. As you know, I'm just waiting to retire. Only a few more months and I'm gone."

"You know Charlene, the dispatcher? From what I hear she was married to Hadley's brother or something. They're divorced now, but when Hadley took the CID job at Grabe County, he brought her down here as his bed partner. I don't know if Hadley, his wife and Charlene fit in the same bed, but I think his wife is getting seconds. You know that old saying; 'its not whether you win or lose, it's how you lay the dame.' Remember?"

"He says this kind of crap all night long," said Sam. "I can't even concentrate on fighting crime." Sam sipped on the coffee. "Are you sure this is coffee?"

Sgt. Monroe said very sincerely, "I was soaking my dentures in that. Who said it was coffee?"

\*\*\*\*\*

The knocking on his door awakened Jinkx. He looked at the clock. It showed 6:15AM. Half asleep he went to the door. "Who is it?"

"It's Marissa. Open up."

"I was just thinking about you, and here you are." He gave her a smooch. "Is my clock wrong? Are you OK?"

"I told you the other day that I was going to work over for someone so I could be off when you are off, the day after tomorrow."

"God. I forgot. I've slept since then." He looked at the clock again.

Marissa unfolded a newspaper and held it in front of him. "You didn't make the headlines, only the third page."



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

He took the paper and sat down at the table. "Would you make us some coffee?" He spread the paper on the table, and began to read.

### **GRABE JURY RENDERS DECISION IN STRANGLING OF LOUISIANA MAN**

**By Kerri Wintz  
Staff Writer**

A Linview man, accused of strangling a Louisiana man, was found guilty of involuntary manslaughter by a Grabe County 12" District Court Jury. Two Grabe County Deputies, Mac Gaines and Jinkx Finner, had testified that when they arrived at the Red Pen Inn on December 27<sup>th</sup> of last year, the defendant, Rodney Hill, was choking the victim, Tim Sims. After repeatedly telling the defendant to release the victim, he finally loosened the chokehold, saying that he "knew how to hold someone". It was too late to release the hold, as Tim Sims had already been murdered, strangled to death.

This reporter finds that it is unusual for a jury to be so lenient considering the evidence, but for Grabe County it was not so unusual when a defendant gets away with murder. The Grand Jury handed down a murder indictment on Rodney Hill in March of this year.

....According to the Officers of the Court, "the jury weighed the evidence, searched their conscience and rendered a fair and just decision based upon the evidence presented."

The District Attorney's office presented the case weakly, and in a laid back manner, and failed in their attempt to convince the jury that a murder was actually committed.

....Deputies Gaines and Finner gave convincing testimony that a murder actually occurred. The jury felt otherwise. Deputy Finner gave explicit, entailed details of the murder, and expected the coroner's report presented to corroborate his testimony. The doctor who performed the autopsy was finally called to the stand, gave expert testimony, and was excused.

Deputy Finner stated that he had never lost a case like this before, and would be surprised if the jury, in a case of this magnitude, would let the scales of justice unbalance so much in favor of a murderer.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

65

The defendant, Mr. Rodney Hill, was found guilty of involuntary manslaughter. He was fined \$250.00 and was put on probation for six months.

This is Grabe County justice! Get used to it.

Jinkx folded the paper and hit the table with it, then threw it across the room. "Do you believe that someone can murder someone by strangulation, and walk because of the so called justice system in this county? I find it hard to believe. No, I'll take that back. Normal for Grabe County."

Marissa put her arms over his shoulders and hugged him. "Do you think that they will give you a bad time when you go to work this afternoon? Can you take a day off, sick day or something?"

"I think that you should know by now that I do not dodge anyone or anything. Hey." He stood up and pulled her close. "I was ignoring you, wasn't I? I remember you saying that we shouldn't bring our work home with us. You know, since you just got off work, and I just woke up, suppose we turn on the water and see if my shower is big enough for two. Are you in the mood for a little lovin'? Maybe in the mood for a whole lot of lovin'?"

"I'm always in the mood for, as you say, lovin', when I'm with you. Start the water."

"Ooohh. Don't you dare keep me waiting, pretty lady." Jinkx went into the bathroom.

He was standing up, everything was standing up, when she pulled the curtains back and gently stepped into the hot, purging water. The steam hindered his vision, but his eyes scanned her almost perfect body. "What took you so long?"

She put her arms around his neck and leaned against him. He lifted her right leg over his left leg and massaged her buttocks. She gently uncoiled herself and turned her back to him. He reached around her and cupped her soaking breasts in his hands. "Are you ready?"

"Yes. Yes I am," she purred.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

When Jinkx entered the department the first one he saw was Sgt. Rutherford. "Good evening, Sgt.. Did you hear that Captain Hadley was going to be the Chief of Police in Klimore?"

"Yeah, I did. By the way, why didn't you take the sergeant's test? Anyone could take it."

"I'd be wasting my time. Do you have the results yet?"

"No, the Sheriff is looking over the tests and the recommendations. He is going to make two sergeants instead of one. He might make three. That's still up in the air."

"The sergeants will be, Hummer, number one. Cramer, number two. And Walsh, number three. Want to place a bet on it?" asked Jinkx.

...."Hummer won't be one of them. He has only been here a short while. Of course that doesn't have anything to do with it."

"We'll see. Are you conducting the briefing today? I was thinking that if we continued to get all these new people we could cut one of them loose from patrol, take one of the old unmarked cars, and work a little narcotics. I know plenty of the dope heads in the Klimore area. We might stumble onto a big bust. What do you think about that idea?"

"That sounds pretty good. I'll talk to Captain Ashley about it right now. See you at briefing."

Lowell Cramer joined Jinkx as he walked toward the briefing room. "Saw your name in the paper this morning. I didn't know that the newspaper wrote about the mighty judge and the prosecutors. I'll bet they're pissed off about it, don't you?"

"I'll bet I'm on everyone's shit list for what I said. Tell it like it is, I say. By the way, did you hear about Briarly being replaced by Dirk Hadley?"

"Sure did. I wonder what went wrong there? Ever since the reserves and their wives kicked up about that SWAT team bull shit, and caused the chief to be investigated by the past DA, Faber, his head has been on the chopping block. I don't know if Hadley will be any better, from what I hear."

"I'll change the subject. How did the sergeants test go today? Think you'll be one of them?"

"One of them? There's going to be just one, isn't there?"



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

67

"Sgt Rutherford thinks that they might make three. Hummer, Walsh, and of course, you."

"I wasn't really that interested in being in supervision. I took the test just to have something to do."

"Yeah, sure. Uh-huh. Just to have something to do. By the way. Has Hummer approached you and maybe suggested that the Captain be replaced? Hummer seems to think that he isn't doing a good job."

"When I rode with him the other night he told me that he thought that Ashley should be replaced, by him. He kind of insinuated that he could do a better job. Some of the other deputies have said that he talked that trash to them too."

"When he worked here before he was a suck ass to the Sheriff, and I'm sure he hasn't changed. I told Captain Ashley that he better watch his job, as Hummer is trying to get it. Of course Ashley keeps saying his job is safe."

"Jinkx, I forgot to tell you about last night. I was on patrol in the north zone. I think you were roving south. Did you hear when Lisa Palmer, the dispatcher, told me to public service the office?"

"I heard it. I thought maybe you had something going with her."

"You dumb shit. That's one of the Sheriff's shack jobs."

"Lisa? Are you serious?"

"For sure. Anyway, when I called her she said that the Sheriff had a flat tire on Highway 8, east of Witt Olney. He didn't have a spare tire, so I was to take him a tire. When I got there he was with Deputy Shirley Bossie, who works in the jail. So I open the trunk and take my spare and roll it to the front of his car. I'm the only one driving a Chevrolet and have a spare to fit his car. He opens the door and tries to get out and falls and hits the ground. He was as drunk as a shit house mouse. The broad is as drunk as he was. I help him get back into his car, jack up the damn thing and change his tire. I'm pissed off by this time, but I don't say anything, just drive away. When I checked out last night I had to stir up some shit by telling Lisa that her man was out with a lieutenant from the jail. She didn't say a word, just sat there and fumed."

"There is no doubt about it, now. You are a sure bet to make sergeant. Changing the Sheriff's tire, and picking him up out of the gutter. Good job, sergeant."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"You're full of it, Finner. I don't see how you can stand yourself."  
\*\*\*\*\*

Two weeks passed and the new sergeants, Hummer, Cramer and Walsh were trying to impress the department. Cramer was doing his best, but Hummer and Walsh had formed their own little clique with Sgt. Rutherford leaning in their direction. This pissed Jinkx, and those that had a mind of their own, off, and Jinkx was biding his time and just keeping his head above water. He only associated with Sam, Mac, Lowell and a few of the others, and stayed away from Hummer, especially. Captain Ashley was distant and wasn't as sociable as he used to be. There was something on the horizon, but Jinkx couldn't grasp it.

Jinkx and Sam were again riding together, and Sam was getting closer and closer to employment with the chemical plant. Jinkx dreaded this. He could never find as good a partner as Sam. "How soon do you think it will be before you kiss this place good bye?" asked Jinkx.

"I figure about one month. I keep bugging them almost daily, and they will probably give me the job to keep me from calling them so much. I'll take it under those circumstances. What time is it getting to be? I'm ready for something to eat. How about you?"

"Grabe County, 522."

Jinkx answered. "522, go ahead."

...."522, need you to be en route to Old Glidding Highway and Interstate in reference to a vehicle parked in the roadway."

"10-4, Grabe County. En route."

"524 will be en route to assist, Grabe County."

Sam and Jinkx recognized the voice as that of Deputy Paul Finnegan, the south roving unit.

"He might get there before we do," said Sam. "We have a long way to go."

"He might do that. Have you noticed how Finnegan has sided with Hummer and Walsh? They get their little heads together and talk and talk. They point a lot too," remarked Jinkx.

Several minutes passed and Deputy Finnegan was on the radio. "524 is 10-23, Grabe County. Run me a 29 on Adam Henry William 586, Grabe County. We'll be out here."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

69

"I think that Bowles is with him. He's not alone. We still have a ways to go," said Sam.

Five or so minutes had passed before they arrived at the scene, and saw Deputy Finnegan leaning into the back door of his patrol unit, and swinging a flashlight. As they got closer they could see a handcuffed white male being struck about the head and shoulders, and as they shined their flashlights into the back seat, they could see blood running down the face of the prisoner.

Deputy Finnegan turned around when the lights hit him and he stopped hitting the prisoner. He backed out of the doorway, shut the door and blocked their lights from shining on the prisoner. "He's OK, now. He gave us a rash of shit, hitting us and kicking at us. I gave him something to think about the next time some law enforcement officer tells him he is under arrest. He won't bow up again." Finnegan had a shitty grin on his face. "It's all over boys. The show is over." He turned and motioned for his partner, Falon Bowles, to get in the unit.

As Sam and Jinkx walked back to their patrol unit you could see the anger in their faces. "This is bull shit," remarked Jinkx. "I've never beat a prisoner. Either before he was handcuffed or after he was handcuffed and defenseless. I will write this date and time down and make a few notes on what happened. I have a feeling I might need them in the future. If this guy would happen to file suit against Finnegan and/or the Sheriffs Department, I want to make sure I have all my ducks in a row if I was included in the suit or called as a witness."

"I'm glad I'm getting out of this bull shit, Jinkx. I heard that when Finnegan worked for Sheriff Sims in Sims County, he answered a call in the Womack area and beat a seventeen-year-old so bad it turned him into a vegetable. No one pressed charges against him and he slid by on it."

"I heard that when Sheriff Sims got those seventeen indictments against him, and was accused of burning someone's car, Finnegan was with him. I remember the headlines. It went something like: 'Sheriff Sims admits he intended to burn the car.' And, it went on to say that suspended Sims County Sheriff Jim Bob Sims says that he 'fully intended to burn' a mans car in retribution for setting a Sims County patrol car afire. Sims, the final witness in a civil lawsuit in which he seeks reinstatement to office, also admitted using jail inmates to work on his property and using



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

his patrol car for personal trips outside the county. Sims also asked that the pending prosecution of criminal cases against him be barred. He claimed the proceedings were filed only because he gave testimony unfavorable to the state in a big narcotics trial.' Here's the clincher. 'Sheriff Sims testified that he and,' now get this, 'his deputy Paul Finnegan, poured gasoline on a car owned by a Chip Wells, two or three years earlier when the car was stuck in the ice on a local highway.' I remember that Sheriff Sims was indicted for burglary of a vehicle when prosecutors learned the arson statute was not in effect in that year. Sheriff Sims denied prying open the car's door. And, Sheriff Sims justified driving his county car on personal trips by saying he was on duty 24 hours a day. He said that he 'could never draw the line, when he was on duty and when he wasn't.' He also said an arrangement under which he gained a rent-free apartment for doing security work at an apartment complex was standard practice for Texas law enforcement officers. He denied an accusation that he used on-duty officers to patrol the apartment complex for him. When he used the inmates to work on his personal property, he said he paid the men and considered the plan a 'work release' program until he learned from an assistant district attorney that he did not have the authority to release inmates from jail. I remember a similar situation right here in Grabe County, just recently. Anyway, when Deputy Paul Finnegan was called to testify in the car burning, he invoked the Fifth Amendment clause of 'self-incrimination.' That's like saying, 'you want me to actually admit that I helped someone to commit a crime?' I can't understand how Sheriff Sim's attorney, Willy Holden, had seventeen indictments quashed, and then a Sheriff like Sims is put back in office. East Texans love this kind. Finnegan was guilty as sin, just like Sheriff Sims."

Sam shook his head and got in on the passenger side.

Jinkx drove into Klimore and parked at the Klimore Comfort Inn. "Let's eat. They have good food here."

As they finished their meal Jinkx noticed a familiar face in the lobby. He told Sam to look at the young man with the three young girls standing in the lobby. "See that turkey with the three girlies? Do you recognize him?"



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

71

"I don't think I do," answered Sam. "He does look familiar, though. I can't put a name to the face."

.... "You've heard of Senator John Mallory? That's his son, John Mallory Jr.. He's a dope head and runs a string of prostitutes, and probably working out of here. I need to get a room number if they go to it, and also need to get a few license plate numbers of those that go to his room. If you are down this way help me keep an eye on this, OK?"

"Sure will. I think he's going down the hallway now."

Mallory led the girls down the hallway and stopped at room 151, with Jinkx within a short enough distance to estimate the room number.

He returned to the table. "Did you get the room number?" asked Sam.

"I'm pretty sure I got it right. I couldn't get too close. Room 151, I'm pretty sure. The bad thing about it is that there is another entrance down the hallway. One person can't watch both entrances. Let's park in the back and see who comes and goes."

They positioned the patrol unit out of sight, but still had a view of the back entrance. Jinkx opened the trunk and took a pair of binoculars from his brief case. As he got back in the unit he adjusted the binoculars. "Perfect angle. I can see the door and whoever might want to go inside. Perfect."

A half-hour had passed and Sam was getting restless. "I would never make a detective. I couldn't take a stakeout. I'm too impatient."

"Here comes a Lincoln and a couple of males in it. It came into the parking lot with its lights off. I think we have a buyer. Let me get that license number. Damn it. He parked where I can't see the license plate."

"Let him go inside and I'll get out and get the license number." Sam eased the door open while Jinkx blocked the inside light so as not to expose them. Sam walked slowly to within a few feet of the vehicle. When he returned he eased back in the unit. "Henry Adam 321."

"I'm going to run it when I check out. I don't want to put it out over the air. It seems that everyone nowadays has a scanner, especially the criminal element. Maybe we can make a stop on these turkeys when they pull out. We can't follow them too close. I'll let them get away from the motel, and just maybe they'll fuck up. All criminals do."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Sam pointed to the entrance. "Here they come. They must have made a buy or had a quickie with the girls."

The two men looked around as they walked to their car. A dead giveaway for being up to no good. As they pulled out onto the street they drove north on Highway 25.

Jinkx followed about fifty yards behind them using the other traffic as a shield. When they approached Highway 3 the light turned amber, then red, catching the suspicious vehicle at the end of the red light. The driver speeded up and ran the light. "That's it." Jinkx eased up to the crosswalk, saw that there was no traffic coming from the left.

"Clear on this side," said Sam.

He gave the Dodge the gas and was behind the suspicious vehicle in a short time and activated the overheads causing the vehicle to slow down, pull to the shoulder and stop. As Jinkx stepped from the unit he cautioned Sam. "Be careful. I think we have some dopers here." Jinkx approached on the driver's side. "Roll down the window, and kill the engine," he told the driver.

He complied. "What did I do, officer?"

"Sheriffs Department. Deputy Finner. You buzzed the red light back there. You had the opportunity to stop, but failed to do so. Need your driver's license, sir."

He handed Jinkx the driver's license. "I knew that I was close, but I didn't think I run the light."

Jinkx stepped back out of hearing distance, and used the hand radio. "522, Grabe County, traffic. North of Highway 3 on Highway 25. Run me a 10-27 on Texas D.L. 08855558." He walked to where Sam was standing and motioned to him. "I'm running a 27. If you hear me signal you, or see me signal you, you know we have something. I'll take the driver, you the passenger."

"Do you want ID from the passenger?" asked Sam.

"Not yet. I have a feeling we're going to get a hit on the driver, then we'll get to the passenger."

At this time the dispatcher called. "Grabe County, 522. 27 return. Isaac, Jerry L., of 5111 Marcella Court, Greenville, Texas. Numerous arrests and convictions for narcotics and weapons offenses. Several outstanding warrants at this time. Use caution."



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

73

Their pre-selected signs and warnings were put into use. Jinkx yelled, "Bingo, 10-32." At his instant both deputies had drawn their weapons and had them pointed at the driver and passenger. "You have warrants out for you, Isaac. Don't be funny. Blink your eyes and you'll die in darkness."

By this time Sam had opened the passenger side door and pulled the passenger from the vehicle, handcuffed him and had him standing in front of their unit.

Jinkx again cautioned the driver after he was out of the vehicle. "Don't try to be funny-assed, Isaac. Put your hands on that patrol car. Spread them legs," Jinkx kicked his legs apart, and began patting him down. When he came to his mid-section Jinkx felt a bulge in his back. He raised his coat and took a revolver from his waist band. "You're in a heap of shit, Bubba."

Sam was searching his prisoner when he held up a large baggie filled with white powder. "Looka hyeah, partner. Ooh wee. We have suspected methamphetamine. Listen up, people, as I'm going to give you your Miranda warning, because you are both under arrest."

The vehicle was inventoried and they were waiting for the wrecker to tow it in. The prisoners sat motionless in the back of the unit. "You know, Deputy Retton, I'll bet that we could swing some kind of deal with the D.A. on these suspects if they would tell us where they got the speed. What do you think?"

"I don't know. They haven't said a word yet." Sam turned around and faced the prisoners. "What do you guys think?"

Not one word was said from the prisoners. They looked out the window, but said nothing.

The wrecker pulled up and Jinkx went to meet the driver and give him his copy of the inventory.

After the two were booked, they went into the briefing room to make out their report. "Why did you lead me in here?" asked Sam. "We usually make it out at the front desk."

Jinkx led him to the back of the room. He pulled a black notebook from his coat pocket. "I glanced through this when I inventoried their car. It contains lots of names, amounts of money, addresses and notes. I'm tired of the damn CID investigators taking it easy with every ass hole we



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

bust. It goes to court, maybe, and they take all the credit. I'm going to hold on to this and if Captain Ashley gives the OK on my proposal to let one of us patrol deputies work in plain clothes, I'm going to work this little deal myself. I haven't studied it, just glanced through it. I think we are on to something big with these two dopers. You don't think I should turn it in, do you?"

"Hell no. Work it. I'll help you as long as I am here. By the way, who is going to be the new CID Captain now that Hadley is with Klimore?"

"I heard that it was going to be Lenny Sims. He's the lieutenant, and next in line, I think." Jinkx heard voices in the hall, and had put the book back in his coat.

Sgt. Hummer entered the room and looked around. "I didn't know why the lights were on. I came to check it out."

"Come in Sgt.. Have a seat." Jinkx pushed his paperwork aside. "I've been meaning to talk to you about an idea that I have."

Sgt. Hummer sat down. "I think I know what you have in mind. Sgt. Rutherford mentioned something about one of the deputies working drugs in plain clothes. Is that it?"

"That's it. If you hadn't heard already, me and my partner stopped a car in Klimore for a traffic violation and found a big baggie of suspected speed, crank or meth, whatever you want to call it."

"I heard that you made a bust. Do you think that the CID should take your report and work on it?"

Jinkx shook his head. "I don't think so. They violated a traffic law and the driver and passenger had warrants out. I think that's about as far as it goes. Our report will be available if CID wants to take a look at it. Traffic, drugs and felons in possession of firearms. That's it."

"I like your idea. We have a new man coming in tomorrow, Chick Colley. He worked here a few years ago. He will be replacing Lyle Farmer in patrol, as Farmer is going into the Criminal Investigation Division. Before I forget. There is going to be a departmental meeting tomorrow at 1:00PM. Everyone has to be here. It is mandatory. Everyone will be notified. Sheriff's orders. I think we will adopt your idea. I'm going to let you be the first one to go plain clothes. We have an old red Ford Fairmont available for such a job. It has a police package and will



fly. Within one week we'll implement your project. Good job tonight." Sgt. Hummer left the room.

Sam looked at Jinks. "You kissed up to him to get this plain clothes thing off the ground, didn't you?"

"That's right. I don't hate anyone, but I really dislike that guy. Something drastic is going to happen, maybe tomorrow, mark my word. I can see a sense of accomplishment in his eyes. No, I don't think its accomplishment. It's more of a 'I told you so' look. CID don't need in on this bust."

"I think not, too. OK, where were we? Oh yes, traffic, possession of a controlled substance and firearms violation. That all?"

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx drove to the hospital when he finished his shift. Marissa had been working many hours because of the flu bug that was going around. He hadn't seen her as often as he wanted to. He entered the lobby and the first one he saw was Yvonne. "Hey, you there."

Yvonne turned around sharply. "You startled me. You haven't been around very much."

"I didn't want to bother Marissa. I call all the time, but we haven't had a chance to be together. You know, the flu bug, and all the nurses having to work more than they usually do. I thought I'd drop by and see her."

"I saw her down the hallway in the last room a few minutes ago. We had a fast coffee and she was in with an accident victim. If you have a weak stomach you better not go in that room."

"I'll go there for a few minutes. Maybe I will have a fast coffee."

Marissa was all smiles as she met Jinkx as he approached the emergency room. "Hi there, big boy," greeted Marissa.

"Hello, kiddo. I've missed you. How long do you think you will have to work these long hours?"

"There doesn't seem to be an end to sick or injured people. Good news though. Three nurses are coming back to work tomorrow. I'm taking three days off and I expect to be in your company three whole days. How does that sound? You have one more day of work, tomorrow, is that right?"



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"That's right." He pulled her into one of the vacant rooms. He kissed her tenderly and held her close. "I missed you, so much."

She pulled away slowly. "I'm running a temperature now. You do that to me, you know. Changing the subject, one of the deputies was in here earlier and said that there was a departmental meeting tomorrow. They were skeptical over the basis for this meeting. Do you know what it's about?"

"I have no idea. We're both off tomorrow and the next day, so I'll call you after the meeting and fill you in, and we can go get something to eat. See you tomorrow, OK?"

\*\*\*\*\*

Everyone was milling around, waiting for the meeting to start and speculating on what the meeting was to be about. Sgt. Rutherford walked into the briefing room followed by Sgt. Akers, Sgt. Cramer, Sgt. Hummer, the Sheriff, Chief Deputy Donner, and deputies from the day and deep night shifts. They stopped just inside the door and talked low so no one could hear.

Sgt. Rutherford brought the meeting to order. "Listen up. Several deputies will not be here as they are on the streets. The Sheriff has an announcement and then we will conduct our other business." Sgt. Rutherford passed some papers to the Sheriff, who signed them.

"We have a change in the Patrol Division, and this decision is not up for discussion. ....Starting right now, Sgt. Hummer is the Patrol Supervisor, and by the first of next month will be on the payroll as Captain. Deputy Ashley will be in the Civil Division. Sgt. Rutherford is being promoted to Lieutenant. Deputy Retton handed in his resignation this afternoon, as he will be leaving in one week. Some of you deputies have been critical of the way things are run around here, and that will change immediately. If those that are critical of this administration don't change their damn attitude, they will also be leaving. I'm sure you know what I mean. No deputy will say anything to outsiders, including the press, that will degrade any elected or appointed official or any decision that they may make. Captain Hummer has come up with an idea that I will work drugs in plain clothes. This only pertains to the second shift. One more promotion is that Deputy Wainger will be promoted to Captain



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

77

and be in charge of the jail. Deputy Richardson is transferred into the Civil Division. Chief Deputy Graham is now in politics as he was sworn in as Commissioner, January 1. The position that he held will not be filled, as there will only be one Chief Deputy, Chief Donner. What I have told you will be posted on the bulletin board." He turned to Sgt. Hummer. "Sgt. Hummer." The Sheriff left the room, followed by Chief Donner.

Sgt. Hummer looked over the deputies. "I know that this change is sudden, but that's the way it has to be to improve the Patrol Division. You will be given new departmental policy manuals. These policies are excerpts from the Dallas County Sheriffs Department, and they will fit into the program that will be drafted for this department. I have been working on this program for several months and have the approval of the Sheriff to implement this program. Any questions?"

No one said a word. They were mesmerized at what had taken place.

Sam looked at Jinkx. Jinkx cut his eyes at Sam, but he didn't say what he thought. Sam nodded in agreement with Jinkx's thoughts.

...."Deputy Finner," called the Captain-to-be Hummer. "When you come back from your two days off, be in plain clothes. You are going to start this pilot project of patrol deputies working drugs. You and your partner made a good bust last night. Congratulations."

"Yeah, you turkey," thought Jinkx. "Getting the Sheriff to believe it was your idea for this project. I won't forget that." He forced a smile, but didn't speak, just nodded. He looked at Sam. "Going to leave, huh?"

"I didn't have time to tell you that the job came through and I was notified this morning. I don't have to put up with any more of this bull shit."

"Does anyone have questions?" asked Hummer. "A list of do's and don'ts are posted on the bulletin board. This concludes our meeting." Hummer left the room accompanied by his entourage.

Jinkx called Marissa from a pay phone in the courthouse. "Are you awake enough for me to come over? I thought maybe you might want to have an early dinner."

"I've been up for about an hour. I'm having coffee. Want some coffee? Yvonne has gone to work, and I'm by myself."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"I am on my way." He stepped out of the phone booth and came face to face with ex-Patrol Captain Ashley. Jinkx shook his finger and nodded to Ashley. He couldn't help but rub it in because he never listened to him. "Great guy, this Hummer. He'll be an asset to the department. The Sheriff won't do me wrong. You wouldn't listen, would you?"

Ashley was depressed and it showed. "We live and we learn. I passed over every bit of advice that was given to me. You hit the nail right on the head. I refused to listen and I got demoted. I'm not going to sneak in the back door. I still have a job to do. You know, Hummer called me and told me that it wasn't necessary for me to come to the meeting, then he told me why."

He felt sorry for Ashley, as he was a good supervisor. "This place is going to go to hell with these pissy assed youngsters at the controls. The Sheriff is in his glory as he now has hand picked his puppets and he is the puppeteer."

"I have to report to one of the sergeants as I am to be on patrol for two days, then go into Civil." Ashley then turned away and walked slowly to the elevator.

Jinkx knocked on the door and Marissa smiled and hugged him. "Bad meeting. huh?"

"Very bad. Do you want to talk about this, or want me not to talk shop? Remember our agreement?"

"Sit down. I want to hear all about it." She poured him a cup of coffee. "Want a touch of booze in it?"

Jinkx looked at her strangely. "Are you serious? Sure, why not? But, just a touch. As you know I'm not very much of a drinker." Jinkx watched her as she poured a small amount of brandy in his coffee. "Coffee Royal. I haven't had that in years."

She set across from him and sipped her coffee. "What happened?"

Jinkx related the day's events to her and told her that the new Captain would be trouble for those that did not join the clique that he was forming. "Not only that, but Sam is quitting in a week. He found out about it today. The best partner I ever had. One more thing. This plain clothes thing I was telling you about? Well, when I go in after my days off, I'm working it first."



"Oh, no. I don't like that. I see enough dope heads at the hospital and they are dangerous. I wish you wouldn't do it, Jinkx. Please."

"How would it look if I told the new Patrol Captain that I didn't want to work drugs, even though it was my idea?"

"You're right. You could not do that. I'm just concerned about you, that's all."

"I'm glad you are concerned, and I love you for it."

Marissa had a surprised look on her face. "What did you say?"

"You heard me. I didn't stutter. I said that I loved you for being concerned about me. Is that a surprise?"

"Yes, it is. I haven't had anyone tell me that they loved me and seemed so sincere. I love you too, but you know it, don't you?"

"I think we show each other our affection. That is important. We have two days together, and we are going to enjoy it immensely. I don't want to change the subject so abruptly, but do you remember me telling you about Kerrie Wintz, the newspaper reporter?"

"I sure do. You said she was going to get in touch with you. Did she?"

"She hasn't yet. Could I use your phone? I said that I wouldn't call her at the newspaper, but I need to find out what she has done about the 'Fortune Cookie Boys.'"

Marissa handed him the phone as he searched his wallet for the number. "Found it." He dialed the number and waited for the operator to dial her extension.

"Kerrie Wintz," she answered.

"Jinkx Finner calling. I said that I wouldn't call you there, but I expected you to call me before now."

"I just dialed your number. I've been trying to reach you since 1:00PM. I left a message on your answering machine."

"I've been gone since about 12:30. A departmental meeting was held this afternoon. That is the reason I was not home. I'm at my lady friends house. It's been a couple of weeks. Did you make an appearance at the place I mentioned?"

"I sure did, two weeks in a row. We need to meet. I have some notes on what I observed. This is almost like the Cowboy Mafia."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

....“I knew I was on to something. Just a minute.” He turned to Marissa. “Would you mind if we had a meeting here? I can’t be seen talking to her in public, and then again I don’t want to get you involved in something that could be dangerous.”

“I’m with you. I prefer you meet her here than be seen with her in public.”

“Kerrie, write this address down. Can you come over here now?”

“I sure can. Just give me the address. I won’t write it down. I’ll remember it.” She nodded. “I know exactly where that is. Give me ten minutes.”

“Don’t park in front, park about a block away. I don’t want any of the deputies to wander by here and see your car. The Sheriff is already on to us deputies that talk to the press, understand?”

“I understand. Ten minutes.”

He turned his attention to Marissa. “I hope this don’t blow up in my face. I can’t let go if I find something out of place. My nature, I guess. I don’t like getting you or any one else involved, especially you. Do you have any regrets getting involved with me?”

“None at all. It is obvious that you are set in your ways and I think it’s exciting. I used to set around wondering what I was going to do day to day and was more or less married to my job. Now, I look forward to each day.”

They talked for a while and then there was a knock on the door. Jinkx looked out the window. “It’s the reporter. Open the door.”

Marissa opened the door and invited Kerrie in. “He didn’t tell me you were so attractive.” She looked at Jinkx.

Kerrie stopped and looked at Jinkx. “Am I interrupting something here?”

Marissa smiled and led Kerrie to a seat at the table. “I didn’t mean it the way it sounded. I’m trying to inject a little humor into a serious situation. If you took at it the wrong way, I’m sorry.”

Everyone felt at ease now. Jinkx sat down at the table. “Was your mission successful?”

Kerrie took her notes from her valise. “You better believe it. Look at this.” She handed Jinkx a stack of papers.

Marissa brought the coffee to the table. “Coffee, anyone?”



"I need some of that. Do you have anything stronger" Kerrie took a sip of the coffee. "Maybe a little additive of some sort?"

"We're going to get along good," replied Marissa. She poured a little brandy into her coffee.

"Perfect. Thanks, I needed that. After seeing these hoodlums parade in and out of the Chalon, it will drive you to drink. This is big stuff. I don't know what is going on, but it is big."

He read aloud from some of the notes. "Let me get this straight. All of these listed on page three have been at the meeting at the Chalon? These people? The Sheriff, County Commissioner, Justice of the Peace, Jenkins, a Judge, Dawkins, Tom Pell, Constable Kiley French, Lance Lincoln, Lou Klingler, Jake Bonner, a guy named Clifton and a guy named Raines, Andy Callahan, a Linview City Councilman, and some of these people I've never heard of. Do you have a story to go with these names?"

"Sorry, not at this time. I'm afraid to go there too much. I might get recognized. And one more thing. I've ate so much Chinese food I can't eat anymore for a while."

He laughed. "Marissa and I will probably go there next Friday." He looked at Marissa. "OK?"

"OK." She turned to Kerrie. "Can we make a copy of those names?" Marissa poured more coffee.

"That is your copy. I have the originals in a safe place. One thing that bothers me is, what would this variety of elected officials and business men and hoodlum element have in common?" Kerrie asked for more brandy.

"That's what we have to find out. One name you left out, or wasn't at the meetings, and that was the owner of the Red Pen Inn, Cal Jones. I've always heard that he was the biggest promoter of prostitution in this area, and has been since the fifties. I think that he is involved in it someway. We do not want to get in a hurry. We'll take our time and gather all the information we can. I have a list of names that you don't have on your list. I'll give you those names later. Check your files and see what you can find out. A word to the wise. Be careful, and document everything out of the ordinary, by date, time, place and event. That's it." Jinkx motioned to Marissa to pour him more coffee.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"One more person I heard mentioned was named, ah, let me think now, Tom Pell, that's it. Ever heard of him?"

"I sure have," said Jinkx. "I see him at the Whistle Stop all the time. He sits with a group of businessmen over in the corner as you come in the back door. I remember that I was there one morning eating breakfast and the only seat I could find was close to their table and they were talking about Sheriff Waverly. Tom Pell doubles up his fist and says, 'I've got Waverly in the palm of my hand.' I didn't pay that much attention to this at this time, but I think he meant what he said. I think this Pell was the hammer, you know, strong-arm man for Jones, the owner of the Red Pen Inn. He has ties with the Cowboy Mafia, I understand. How about those apples? I'm going to check the records in the District Clerk's office tomorrow. Maybe I can find something of interest there."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx had the memory of his two days off in his mind as he reported back to work. His plain-clothes dress was noticed by the other deputies as he entered the briefing room. He walked to where Sam was sitting, in the back.

"Anything new while I was gone?"

"Not that I know of. Three more days. I can hardly wait. I'll be so Goddam glad to get out of here away from all of these ass holes, I won't know what to do."

Sgt. Hummer entered the briefing room. "Listen up. We have a unit on the street tonight and the deputy, Deputy Finner, will be in plain clothes. This plain-clothes unit, regardless of who is working, will be 326 Adam. That's a roving drug unit. 326 Adam. Remember that. Changes will be made with the personnel in this project in relation to how successful each deputy is. No information to pass on from the day shift. I'll be going on days next Monday. Lt. Rutherford will be the night supervisor, second shift, and Sgt. Walsh will be the third shift, deep nights, and the supervisor. A new deputy, Chick Colley, is joining us tonight, and will be on the second shift. He will be riding with Deputy Retton tonight. Any questions? Your assignments are on the board. Go get em."

"Looks like you have a new partner until you leave us, Sam." Jinkx took his notebook and walked toward the door.



He nodded. "You better watch your ass out there. I'm 324 tonight. I'll be in that area. Have you went through that book taken off those dopers the other night?"

"Sure did. Very interesting. It ties John Mallory Jr. into some big dope ring. Remember that meth lab they busted in Rashe County a few weeks back? The one where the Sheriff of Rashe County, Mel Strange, was rumored to have been a part of, and possibly protecting those arrested?"

"I remember now. He made a couple of hundred phone calls to the ones who ran the lab. Nothing ever came of it and the FBI, DEA and DPS narcotics conducted the investigation. Big cover up. I think the Texas Rangers were in on the investigation too. I don't care too much for Gene Ellis, our Texas Ranger. I've heard too much about him. One of our CID investigators, George Moore, is always with Ranger Ellis. I heard that both of them were special friends of certain people in Grabe County. What I have heard isn't good. They protect the hoodlums, I understand. They are part of the Grabe County problem. ....A friend of a friend of a friend. Of course, that's my personal opinion."

"We still think alike. Be careful out there partner. I am going to be close to the same place we were the other night."

Deputy Colley joined Jinkx and Sam. "Are you Deputy Sam Retton? I'm supposed to ride with you tonight."

"That is me. Let's hit the road."

Jinkx had the rear entrance of the Klimore Comfort Inn under surveillance for about two hours. It would be another two hours before it would be dark enough not to be seen from a distance. John Mallory Jr. and two young girls came out the back entrance. They looked around and got into a dark colored Ford. They drove out of the parking lot and southbound on State Highway 25 into Rashe County, out of Jinkx's jurisdiction. He stopped at the county line. "Crap. I'll pick them up later, I hope. Probably going to pick up a load of dope. I'll see what's happening at the Klimore PD. "

He parked in the front of the KPD and walked in the front door. Charlene, the dispatcher didn't recognize him at first. "Is that you Jinkx? You off tonight?"



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

He walked through the door into the dispatch office. "No, just doing a little plain clothes job. Say, would you run a 28 and 29 for me on this license number?" Jinkx handed her the number that was taken from the car Mallory and the two girls got into, WWH 994.

The return came back. "It comes back to a 1981 Ford 4DR, registered to John Mallory, this city. You know who he is, don't you?"

"I know, but it doesn't say Jr. or Sr., so we really don't know which one it belongs to. They both have the same address."

Sgt. Monroe then walked into the dispatch room. "What you up to Jinkx?"

"Working a little plain clothes job. Recognize this guy?" He handed the Sgt. the teletype copy.

"Sure do. I know both of them. Jr. is a little bastard. Dope and girls. He runs around with Donna Yantis, known as Dippy Donna, Kline Wille Parks, Dick Glenn, Bubba Mission and others I can't think of right now. Parks and Glenn were cooks in that drug ring they busted in Rashe County a while back. Sheriff Strange was involved in it, you can bet your ass on that. Are you working plain clothes all the time?"

"Not all the time. It's a new project started by our new captain, which was my idea. You did hear that Ashley is now in Civil, and our new captain is Daniel Hummer, didn't you?"

"I heard about it. From what I hear, this guy Hummer is a pain in the ass."

"I have no comment at this time. You know him. He was with the Sheriff's Department before. He was riding with me at one time. Half-Mexican. He interpreted for you when Burleson and Grantham brought in that load of drunk Mexicans involved in that traffic accident on 25 and 3. Remember?"

"Oh yeah. He slapped one of the Mexicans around a little didn't he? The Mexican acted like he did not understand English, and Hummer got him to understanding English and speaking English by thundering on his head."

"That's him. I can hardly tolerate him. I think I made a big mistake quitting here and getting involved in the bull shit at Grabe County. Big mistake."



"Our new Chief, Hadley, has froze all hiring and promotions. He says he has to evaluate the department."

"He's an ass hole," remarked Charlene.

The Sgt. and Jinkx looked at her. "You know him pretty well, don't you, Charlene?" asked Jinkx.

"I should know him. I've been his bed partner for years. I was married to his brother, and we were getting it on when I was married to him. I spent new years day and night shacked up with him at the Klimore Comfort Inn. His wife doesn't care what he does. She's dorfy any way to put up with his bull shit all these years. The first day he took over here he put the make on Katie Hopkins, our only female officer. Let me show you how slick this guy is. When Katie had her application here with Chief Briarly, the cleaners where she worked caught on fire and burned. Shortly after the fire, Chief Briarly hired her. Now get this. When Hadley looked over her employee folder, he convinced her that she was a suspect in the burning of the cleaners. He told her that she had to go to Dallas and take a polygraph test and he would take her there. She told me that they never got close to a polygraph, and that they spent the entire day in a motel."

"She told me the same thing," remarked Sgt. Monroe.

"She can have him. That will keep him off of me, maybe. Pardon my pun," laughed Charlene.

The Sgt. and Jinkx laughed also.

Jinkx was driving in the southwest section of the county when he heard unit 324 check out on a vehicle on Gamble Rd. at the Sims County line. He drove in that direction and heard Retton call in.

"324, Grabe County. En route to assist 322." This was Sam and the new deputy, Chick Colley.

At this time Deputy Finnegan requested back up and sounded out of breath.

"326 Adam will be en route also to assist, Grabe County." Jinkx put the gas pedal to the floor and the Fairmont took off much faster than expected.

They Sam arrived at the same time. A black handcuffed prisoner was lying in the middle of the road, and was swinging his feet from side to



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

side trying to keep deputies away. "We have enough here to subdue him without any injury to anyone," said Sam. "No problem."

"Just a minute," said Finnegan. He went to his patrol unit and took an axe handle from the trunk, and came back to where the prisoner was. "This is my Nigger knocker. This is the way I used to do it when I was a deputy in Sims County." He raised the axe handle and struck the prisoner on the head and upper part of the body. "I'll kill you, you son-of-a-bitch. You won't kick another peace officer, I guarantee you." He struck him several times.

Jinkx and Sam were caught by surprise and it took a few seconds to realize what he was doing. They both grabbed the axe handle and pulled Finnegan away from the screaming prisoner. Deputy Bowles stood there and did nothing. He seemed to enjoy watching a handcuffed black prisoner get unnecessarily beaten.

"I think that's enough," yelled Jinkx and Sam at the same time.

Deputy Finnegan was breathing heavily and his eyes were glaring enjoyment. "That black fucker won't mess with me again."

"Don't you think you're taking this kind of personal?" asked Jinkx. "We have enough here to control him without taking him to jail in a body bag, don't you think?" Jinkx was out of breath. "I think I saw a small chain in the back of my unit when I checked for a spare tire. We can wrap him up and you can transport him to the hospital, or slammer. He's your prisoner." Jinkx got the chain from the back of his unit and approached the prisoner. "I'm going to wrap this chain around your legs. This is what happens when you try to be a bad ass. Are you going to kick at me?"

"No sir. No sir. I won't kick nobody ever again. I won't. I huts. My haid huts me mister. I huts all over. I won't do nothing. Oh God. Help me!" He raised his legs letting Jinkx slide the chain under him.

He wrapped the chain around his legs from the knee down. "Lets pick him up and put him in the back of your unit, Finnegan. I think he should go to the hospital. His head is pretty well banged up. But, he's your prisoner." Jinkx looked at his bloody head.

"I ain't taking him to any hospital. He is going to jail as is. We have a nurse. She can look at him." He reached down and roughly grabbed the prisoner's feet. "Somebody lift his nappy head off the ground." When they opened the door to the unit, Finnegan forcefully crammed the



prisoner into the back. "That will hold his black ass. Thanks fellas." He motioned for his partner to get in the unit. "Next stop county jail."

As they drove away Jinkx looked at Sam, and Sam looked at Jinkx. They both shook their head. Jinkx made some notes.

Jinkx had parked his unit and joined Sam, as it was time to check out. "I think I'll just have a little talk with our new leader about what happened tonight. Think it will do any good? Let me emphasize that. Would you talk to Sgt. Hummer?"

"Hell no. These guys are on the same track, We are the ones who are on a different track, and can't you see that? Do you think Hummer is going to do anything to one of his buddies? That's the answer to question number one, and also answer to question number two."

As they walked inside they were approached by Sgt. Rutherford. "Need you to go outside and help Finnegan and Bowles carry in a prisoner. They're bringing him in from the hospital as he gave them a bad time. They're bringing a beat up black to the jail. A bad move. I have cautioned everyone about this. They should be pulling up out front about now." He turned and walked away.

Jinkx called to him. and he turned around. He walked toward him. "I need to talk to you after I check out. You going to be around?"

"I'll be in Hummer's office. Come in there, OK?"

....Jinkx and Sam helped Finnegan and Bowles carry the bloody, gauze wrapped prisoner to the elevator. Not a word was spoken from anyone.

Jinkx and Sam checked out and were sipping on a cup of coffee in the coffee room. "I forgot to tell you, Jinkx. I brought a drunk to jail about 4:00PM, and when I was leaving the building I took a prisoner from one of the DPS Troopers, as he was in a hurry to investigate a major accident. When I took him to the jail, and he was booked in, one of the jailers found a 38-caliber revolver in his shoe just before he put him in a cell. The Chief got hold of it and called me to his office. He chewed my ass out real good. I told him that I had taken him from the Hi-trol so he could go investigate the accident. He said that it was my responsibility to make sure that a prisoner did not have a weapon when taken into the jail



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

facility. He was the son of Captain Alonzo of the Linview PD. Danny Guy Alonzo. Chief Donner finally let me go after a while. I thought he was going to burn me at the stake. One more day, partner. I'll be out of this and maybe be around some understanding and mature people for a change. I thought that he had been searched."

"Well, I'm on my way to talk to Hummer about Finnegan. I might be out of a job myself."

"Sounds like a death wish to me. I'll tell you right now, a waste of time." Sam walked toward the elevator.

Jinkx knocked on the door.

"Come in," answered Sgt. Rutherford.

He entered and sat down. "Deputy Finnegan had a problem with a prisoner tonight, and I think he handled it the wrong way. I heard the back up call and went to where his black handcuffed prisoner was laying in the middle of the road. In my opinion there was enough deputies there to handle the prisoner without resorting to abuse. At least I thought it was abuse."

"We were just discussing that arrest. What do you mean abuse?" asked Hummer.

"Well, Deputy Finnegan retrieved an axe handle from the back of his patrol unit and proceeded to hit the handcuffed prisoner on the head and body. Sam and I had to forcibly pull him away from the prisoner so he wouldn't, shall we say, maybe kill him. When he started hitting him with the axe handle, he did say that he would, in his words, 'kill the son-of-a-bitch', so there was that possibility. He could even die during the night. I don't know."

"Did the prisoner straighten out after that? Did he give you any more trouble?"

"No. I wrapped a chain around his legs and he wasn't very active at this point."

"I don't see a problem with what he did. Do you think we should take this to the Sheriff?" Hummer grinned.

"I am only saying, or reporting, that this is a serious matter. A short time ago he made a stop and when Sam and me arrived as back up, we



saw him hitting the prisoner, who was handcuffed in the back seat, with his flashlight. He can't seem to make an arrest unless he uses police brutality. Do you think this is right?" Jinkx noticed the grin on Sgt. Hummer's face.

"Do you know what the Sheriff would say if we, or you, told him this story? He would tell you the same thing I'm going to tell you, and that is, 'he was just another Nigger.'"

Jinkx looked at Sgt. Rutherford, who was shaking his head. Jinkx shook his head. "Hummer, you're part minority, half Mexican, and I thought you would be more compassionate to another minority."

Hummer leaned forward in his chair. "You're not comparing me to a Nigger, are you?"

...."I think we are off the track here," said Sgt. Rutherford. "I didn't hear Deputy Finner compare you to anyone." He looked into Hummer's face.

"I don't discriminate, Sgt.," he said to Hummer. "I was in the Army with Blacks, Mexicans, Puerto Ricans, Whites, Portuguese, Hawaiians, and many more denominations. I don't discriminate, and I don't expect a supervisor, administrator or fellow officer to discriminate."

Sgt. Hummer pondered his thoughts for a moment. "You're right. You are absolutely right. I will conduct an internal investigation into this matter. I will personally handle it."

Jinkx knew that he was getting a snow job. "That's all I request. I think he could cause a suit to be filed against the Sheriff, County and Commissioner's Court. It has been known to happen, you know."

Hummer walked toward the door. "I'll have a talk with Finnegan right now, if he is still here. Thanks for bringing it to my attention." He opened the door and motioned to Jinkx. "Is there anything else?"

It took a few seconds for Jinkx to realize that he was holding the door open for him. "He wants me to leave," he said to himself. Jinkx exited the room.

Sgt. Hummer turned to Sgt. Rutherford. "I have to get rid of him. He is being more and more troublesome. The Sheriff has already made it very plain that he has to go."

"I think he is a good officer. If he has enough concern to take lawsuits into consideration where the Sheriff could be sued, it's worth thinking



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

about, and stopping it if even there is the slightest possibility," said Rutherford.

"I said he has to go. The final word. I'll find a way. It won't be hard. I expect you to look for a way to get rid of him also. You do understand, don't you?" Hummer left the room.

"Goddamn you," thought Rutherford. "You're the one who needs to go. I made a big mistake helping you get rid of Ashley as the Patrol Captain. What's wrong with me?"

\*\*\*\*\*

Several weeks had passed and Jinkx was intermittently in plain clothes. He knew he was on now Captain Hummer's shit list. He had been indirectly warned by Sgt. Rutherford as to what could happen. He had gathered pages of information on possible drug dealers, and buyers, in the Klimore area. The Captain now wanted a report on what he had done, and Jinkx was finishing up his report this night, just before he had his two days off. His main objective was to tie John Mallory Jr. into a drug operation. He had been observing a white van and Chevy Blazer making many trips into the parking lot of the Klimore Comfort Inn, and the female driver of the white van, Doris Kirkland, frequenting John Mallory Jr.'s room. He had gathered a list of names and license numbers and listed them in his report. Some guy known as Barton and a big man, unknown at this time, came and went also. When he finished his shift he looked for Sgt. Rutherford as he wanted to give the report to him to look over, with instructions for him to leave it on Captain Hummer's desk.

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx was leaving his apartment at 11:30AM the next day to pick up Marissa and have dinner at the Chalon Chinese Restaurant. The phone rang as he was going out the door. When he answered it, it was Captain Hummer. "Yes, Captain. What can I do for you?"

"When you come to work today be in uniform and come and see me first, OK?"

"Sure thing. See you later." Jinkx hated trying to be nice to this turkey. He knew that austerity was in the cards. He thought about submitting applications to some of the surrounding police agencies, and thought again that he would not let an ass hole or two run him off. He



could not let them be the winner. "Stand by your guns," he kept saying to himself.

When he knocked on Marissa's door he looked around and saw a Sheriff's Department unit drive by. It was an unmarked unit and the driver was Billy Wayne Ashley. He motioned for Jinkx to come see him. At that instant Marissa opened the door. He turned to her. "Ashley wants to see me. I'll be right back." Jinkx waited for Ashley to turn around and park.

"I thought that was your car. You can hardly miss a white over blue ex police car. I need to tell you that my predecessor, Hummer, is trying to get rid of you. He has enlisted the help of every other ass hole in the department. Rutherford is bucking him, or at least trying to buck him, but he might be on Captain Hummer's list also. Rutherford has had an application in at Klimore College, and wants to be an instructor. He might have a long wait, I don't know. I thought I should warn you. You did me, but I wouldn't listen."

"I was told of Hummer's plans. I've been toeing the mark lately. He called me and wants me to be in uniform when I come to work today. Something real big is going to happen. He might take me off this drug thing. He wanted a report so I left one for him last night. I still have a copy for my own benefit, and left out some of the information I gathered on one John Mallory Jr. You know who I'm talking about, don't you?"

"You're stepping into some deep shit messing with that dope head. He has his daddy, the ex senator, behind him regardless of what he does. You sure better watch your ass with these hoodlums."

"By the way, Ashley. I know about the 'Fortune Cookie Boys'. I'm going to take their ass down too. See you later." Jinkx left him with a puzzled look on his face. He opened the door, glanced over his shoulder and watched Ashley as he drove away.

"Troubles?" asked Marissa.

"No, a warning from Ashley. He thinks our great Captain Hummer is going to get rid of me, post haste. I really did it this time. The Sheriff is trying to get rid of me. The Captain is trying to get rid of me. What next?"

"I'm not trying to get rid of you. I intend to keep you for a while." She tried to comfort him, but she could see the anxiety in his face.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

The dinner was good, as usual. Jinkx jotted down some notes containing names and license plate numbers. The last person to enter the dining room containing the "Fortune Cookie Boys" was the Sheriff. Jinkx wondered what went on in that room.

"I see you finally made it, Sheriff," commented Cal Jones. "This is the last time you need to be late. Do you understand this?"

The Sheriff nodded "I had some business to take care of."

"Did your business have a skirt and panties on Sheriff?" asked Tom Pell. Everyone laughed.

"Our business today is of the utmost importance." Jones looked over those assembled. "The Sheriff is bringing too much attention to himself, and that means he will potentially bring recognition to us." He looked directly at the Sheriff. "This is the problem. A reporter from the Linview News has been sitting out there," he pointed towards the main dining room, "and we know that she has been taking notes." He shook his head. "Doing a lot of writing. Kerrie Wintz is the reporter. She gave publicity to Judge Kriley a few months back. She gave bad publicity to me and my business, the Red Pen. I have no idea what she is up to, but she is very friendly with one of the Sheriff's deputies." He looked at the Sheriff. "You know the deputy, don't you?"

"Yes, I know who you are talking about. I am in the process of getting rid of him. It shouldn't take very long. I have to do it my way so as not to have him challenge a termination in a court of law. I have to have a valid reason for firing him. My new supervisors are already working on a way to get rid of him."

...."That has never stopped you before, has it Sheriff?" asked a Precinct Commissioner. "Do like I do. Just make it look like he is being terminated because he violated departmental policy. That's the best bet. You have enough stooges in your department to get on his ass and stay on it until they can write him up, and then you can finish him off. I don't think he is smart enough to challenge you in a court of law." The commissioner sipped on his beer.

"Do you think an attorney in this vicinity would take a case against you? No attorney in his or her right mind will mess with you. Why? Because they know who and what they would be up against." He took a



drink of water. "Did you know one of your deputies is sitting right outside the door? He comes here too often, and he has been seen taking notes also," said Jones.

The Sheriff sat upright in his seat. "I didn't know this. Maybe he likes Chinese food. I can't stop him from coming into a restaurant. Don't you think that would arouse his suspicion?"

"I think his suspicions are already aroused. We are into a project like was in the past, only they got caught, remember? We don't need publicity, understand? You know who's boss around here. We," he waved his hand over those in attendance, "are the boss. So get your head out of your ass and get some results. Another thing. You better stay off the sauce. You have been seen in every drinking establishment in Grabe and Sims counties. You are also making a spectacle of yourself at the nudie joint in Sims County, Midnight Lace. You have been seen there by several people, including a Grabe County bondsman, Thad Lazewski. You know how he runs his mouth. You are our protector. If we lose you, we lose our protection. You don't want that to happen, do you?"

The Sheriff hung his head. "No, I don't. I'll take care of it. I will."

Lou Klingler, a local beer distributor, looked at the Sheriff. "I think we can do without the presence of the Sheriff. The less he knows the better off he will be. Of course he knows everything anyway, but if he gets drunk again, or more, however you want to term it, and gets his hands in some broad's panties, he might run his mouth. That would be disastrous. The young lady you are seeing now, and brought to some of our little parties, could tell a lot about us. I think you should dump her and maybe send someone around to 'persuade' her to keep her mouth shut. Good bye Sheriff."

The Sheriff looked around the dining room as he walked toward the front door. He saw Jinkx and Marissa sitting in a corner booth.

They were looking down as he looked at them. "He's looking at us," said Jinkx. "Keep eating and don't look up."

The Sheriff glared at them for a few seconds, then left.

"I think we've been had, Marissa. I know that they know we were here, and have been here previously. I can feel it. Remind me to notify Kerrie and tell her not to come here anymore. This makes our day, kiddo."



**CHAPTER 4**

Jinkx walked into the courthouse and was on his way to the Sheriff's Department when he met Chick Colley at the elevator. As they rode to the fifth floor, Colley asked, "Do you have those drug reports of the drug activity you have been working on in Klimore?"

"I beg your pardon," Jinkx replied with a puzzled look on his face. "What the fuck are you talking about, Colley? My reports are none of your business. Is there something going on that I should know about?"

The elevator stopped at the fifth floor. "Oh, I guess he didn't tell you yet. He will in a minute." Colley walked away.

Finally it hit him. "He's not in uniform," he said to himself. "He's in plain clothes." Jinkx proceeded to the Captain's office. The door was open and he knocked on the open door.

"Come in, Deputy Finner. I looked over your report and it is pretty good. I have decided to let someone else work what you have started. I'm letting Deputy Colley work it for a while. You can take a break."

Jinkx reluctantly agreed with him. "That's fine. I would like to have completed what I started, but if I can't, I can't. And I will be content in uniform, back on patrol."

"I also need all the copies of your report. Do you have any more copies?" asked the Captain.

"I really don't have a reason for making copies. What you have, is it. It's the property of the Sheriff's Department, not a personal deal." He hoped that the Captain bought his story.

"OK. No problem. Anything else?"

"That's about it. I guess I'll go have a fast cup of coffee before the briefing. Thanks Captain." He left the room. "Damn, it is hard to be nice to an ass hole like him," he said to himself. He didn't want to stir up anything else, as he had too much going.

Jinkx was the south roving unit, 324, and made sure he stayed away from the Klimore Comfort Inn. He didn't want Chick Colley to think that he was still working drugs. He did a walk through in a bar in an area of



south Linview known as Booze Alley, known for its many hole-in-the-wall bars and the drunks that frequented these bars. He got in his unit after the walk through, and drove North on Echo Parkway. A vehicle passed him at a high rate of speed and was changing lanes without signaling and cutting in and out of traffic. Jinkx called the dispatcher as he activated his overheads. "324, Grabe County. I'm behind a vehicle northbound on Echo Parkway leaving Booze Alley at a high rate of speed and driving reckless. I can't see the license at this time. You might advise Linview PD." He turned on the siren and got in behind the vehicle. It changed lanes several times, but did not slow down. "324 in pursuit, Grabe County. Coming up on Interstate." He had changed lanes many times to get behind the vehicle, but when it went to the outside lane, Jinkx remained in the inside lane. As they went over Interstate the vehicle cut across in front of Jinkx to catch the left turn onto Interstate. It was so sudden that he could not stop, and hit the left rear back door of the vehicle and pushed it down the road, almost into a Linview PD unit that was coming to assist. When they come to a stop, Jinkx unbuckled his seat belt and ran to the driver's side. He pulled open the door and looked at the driver, and the passengers. The driver attempted to get out. Jinkx could smell an alcoholic beverage on the driver. The inside smelled like alcohol. Beer cans were scattered all over the inside. Jinkx and the Linview officer pulled the driver out of the vehicle, and Jinkx handcuffed him.

"I saw the whole thing," said the Linview officer. "They cut right in front of you without a signal. You didn't have any choice but to hit them." He turned around. "Here comes the DPS." The Linview officer went to meet the DPS Trooper. They talked for a few minutes and the Trooper came to where Jinkx had the handcuffed driver.

"I'll need a statement from you, Jinkx," said Trooper Buckman. "Lets get the rest of these Mexicans in handcuffs. I'll take all of them in. Driving while intoxicated on the driver and public intoxication on the passengers. No one seems to be hurt, but lets check them over and make sure there are no injuries."

After they were checked they were loaded in the Trooper's unit. "Jinkx, I have several statements from witnesses, including a Linview PD officer. No problem. I'll take care of it. There is a wrecker on the way for your unit."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Sgt. Cramer tapped Jinkx on the shoulder. "Destruction derby, Jinkx?" he asked as Jinkx turned around. "Are you hurt?"

"Not really. I'll probably be sore tomorrow. Damn driver did a left turn from the right lane. I creamed his ass. He is as drunk as a skunk. Everyone in the car is drunk. They're all Mexicans that live in Sims County. Not one drivers license on any of them."

"I heard it on the radio at the office. Lt. Rutherford sent me to drive you back to the courthouse. You do know you have to make out a report on this, don't you?"

"I make out a report on everything I do. I learned my lesson on this fuckin' place." Jinkx got into Cramer's unit.

"I see that Colley is working drugs instead of you. He's a suck ass anyway. A few days ago he was in Hummer's office practically begging him to work these drugs. He said he worked drugs at some police department in Georgia. That's where he came from."

"I don't care anymore, Lowell. This is the most fucked up police agency that I have ever been around. Bar none. I made a big mistake quitting Klimore. Well, I can't say I made a mistake leaving Klimore. I made the mistake of coming here."

....When they arrived at the courthouse Jinkx was met by Lt. Rutherford. "Captain Hummer heard about the accident on his scanner and he called here wanting to know what happened, and if it was your fault."

"Goddamn. Can't I even have time to go take a leak and do a report? Rutherford, what the fuck is wrong with you. He says shit, and you squat and say how much. Can you Gold Dust Twins give me the opportunity to make a fucking report? I thought you were in charge of this shift. Why don't he move his bed up here, and he can get rid of every supervisor." Jinkx walked away talking to himself.

"He's right," remarked Sgt. Cramer. "The accident happened less than two hours ago. Give him a break, OK?"

He had finished his report and was having a cup of coffee in the briefing room when Lt. Rutherford entered the room. "I was a little hasty, Jinkx. Hummer has been on my ass lately."



"You think you're the fuckin' Lone Ranger? You think he hasn't been on my ass? He is on my ass now or he wouldn't have talked to you about this accident that happened a few hours ago."

"I agree. I know you are right. I don't appreciate you talking to me like you did in front of others."

"You should have called me aside and talked to me in private about something that I was involved in. This is an adult world. That's the adult way that a subordinate talks to another. You made sure anyone within hearing distance, although there was only Sgt. Cramer, heard what you said to me. Is this any of their business?"

"This started with Captain Hummer. Mark my word. He told me to tell you that you would go before the review board tomorrow at 2:00PM and tell your side of the story on this accident. A few weeks back I hinted to you that he was trying to get rid of you." The lieutenant walked to the doorway, then stopped. "Tomorrow at 2:00PM," he said without turning around.

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx's phone rang early, very early, the next morning. He looked at the clock. "6:00AM," he said to himself. "Who could this be at this hour? I hope it's not Hummer." He lifted the receive. "Hello. It's awful early."

"Jinkx, Kerrie Wintz. I know it's early to be calling. Let me tell you who had a wreck this morning about 3:00AM. Our Sheriff Waverly. Yes, yes. Read today's paper. I have an article in it about the accident. I visited the injured party, a woman, at the Grand Samaritan Medical Center. She was kind of woozy and rambled on about the accident. I wrote the article as was told to me by her. I think it is a good one, and might open the eyes of some people in this county. The paper will be late because of my story."

"I'll get dressed and go to the Whistle Stop and have some coffee and read the paper. Thanks for calling. Oh, by the way. You got my message I left on your machine, didn't you?"

"I sure did. I won't go there any more. We have them worried, don't we?"

"I think we do. The Sheriff was staring a hole in us. See you later, kiddo. Bye." He was happy as he slipped his shoulder holster on and gently placed his Super 38 Auto into it. "It might be a good day after all."



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

He dialed Marissa's number and she agreed to meet him at the Whistle Stop later

The paper was folded on the table when Marissa entered the Whistle Stop and walked to his table. "What does it say?" she excitedly asked.

"I haven't read it yet. I was waiting on you. Those that are reading the paper in here are talking about it. Set over here with me. We can read it together." He unfolded the paper as Marissa slid in beside him.

### **SHERIFF INVOLVED IN WRECK**

**By Kerrie Wintz**  
**Staff Writer**

Sheriff Waverly's second "reported" automobile accident occurred this day at approximately 3:06AM, and was called in by Sheriff Waverly from his county furnished vehicle, but when he called it in he gave the location as Gallo Road and Finewood. After a search by the Linview Police Department officers responding, they found the accident at Gallo Road and Roller Road, two miles north of the location called in by Sheriff Waverly. The first officer on the scene had to call an ambulance for the injured Jan Higgins. According to Jan Higgins, whom I interviewed at the Grand Samaritan Medical Center shortly after the accident, the reason that he said he hit her was because he was "fiddling with his radio." According to a spokesperson from the Grabe County Sheriffs Department, "a third car had just pulled onto the street from a parking lot, without lights." Two different stories. "A ghost rider" and "unlighted vehicle." According to information received, the initial call of the accident was at 3:06AM. The investigating officer, Willard Binns, was notified at 3:35AM and arrived at the accident scene at 4:00AM. Why did a period of twenty-five minutes lapse before an accident investigator was called? Jan Higgins states that Sheriff Waverly had a bloody nose and that he also kept a handkerchief over his mouth during the entire report making, and while officers were at the scene. Jan Higgins also states she smelled alcohol on the breath of Sheriff Waverly and he was reluctant to look her in the eye. Why wasn't Sheriff Waverly given the breath test, that would have been give to someone else? Jan Higgins also states that she did not



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

99

see a third vehicle. The Sheriffs Department spokesperson also stated that the Sheriff had a meeting with an informant, and that was the reason he was out at this hour. He was released to the custody of a Sheriffs Department Captain.

This is the second "reported" accident of Sheriff Waverly. His other accident occurred shortly after he was elected Sheriff of Grabe County. He was northbound on Highway 4, north of Klimore, in the wee hours of the morning. He did a one-car roll over on a curve. This time the Sheriff said that he was trying to catch up to a "suspicious" vehicle, and get the license number."

"I really like it," said Jinkx. He gave Marissa a hug. "Boy, Oh Boy. Kerrie did a number on the Sheriff's ass. I bet he won't be available for a few days. He's a weenie. I bet his cohorts get all over his ass for being so stupid. You know, kiddo, the worst a peace officer can do is to set a bad example for the public. An elected official should be honest with the public. I think he is past rehabilitation. One of these days he is going to kill someone because of his boozing. He got lucky on this one. I'll change the subject. I had a little fender bender last night. Nobody hurt. The problem is, I have to go before a Review Board today at 2:00PM. It could be bad. I have some things to do before I go take my medicine."

He had a busy morning behind him, running here and there trying to gather all the information he might need to circumvent the proposed action of Captain Hummer. His past experience of being a Private Investigator came in handy. He had worked for defense attorneys and knew what it would take to defend himself. The Captain had anointed himself as a super, supervisor. Little did he know that Jinkx had dealt with this type of childishness and idiocracy. "If he wants to play hardball, he has the right guy to play with," he said to himself.

He walked into the Sheriffs Department and went directly to Captain Hummer's office. The door was open. He knocked on the open door.

The Captain looked up. "Come in. I'll be with you in a minute." He eyed the briefcase that Jinkx set on the floor.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Jinkx set down in a chair just inside the door. He opened the briefcase and thumbed through some of the papers. He figured that he might give Hummer something to wonder about, as he kept glancing toward him.

"OK, I guess we're ready." He looked at Jinkx.

"I still have twenty minutes." He looked at his watch. "You did say 2:00PM didn't you? I still have time for a coffee. I believe in schedules. I just came by to tell you that I would be ready at 2:00. Where will we hold this Review Board, in the briefing room?"

"No, right here in this office. The members of this board are on their way here now."

He picked up his briefcase. "I'll be back in time." When he left the room he knew that Hummer was burning.

He returned to Captain Hummer's office at 1:57. He looked in and saw the members the Review Board gathered around the Captain. "Gentlemen," he said loudly.

They looked around and stopped talking.

Jinkx couldn't help but antagonize them a little bit "I hope I get the opportunity to present my side of this. What I'm trying to say is, I hope this is not a Kangaroo Court."

"This Review Board is convened on this day as per departmental procedure to review the fleet accident involving unit 825, Deputy Jinkx Finner operating. Deputy Finner, lets hear what happened, your side of the story," the Captain started.

"Thank you, Captain. Officially, there is only one side of the story, and it can be summed up in a few paragraphs. I initiated a pursuit on Echo Parkway at Booze Alley because a vehicle passed me at a high rate of speed, changing lanes without signaling, and cutting in and out of traffic. The driver's action jeopardized the lives of those driving on Echo Parkway at this time. I activated my overheads and siren, but the driver did not slow down. Instead, he increased his speed and became an erratic and reckless driver. I had changed lanes with him for a distance, but when approaching the Intestate, I decided to stay in the inside lane. At this time he was in the outside lane. As we passed over Interstate the driver attempted to turn left from the right lane, and catch the westbound on ramp to Interstate. He did not signal and was definitely too close to my



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

101

vehicle for me to do anything but hit him as he came into my lane. End of story."

"Deputy Finner, I know that there was not enough time for you to get an accident report from the Highway Patrol, as it takes about forty eight hours for them to get a report ready for examination and copying. Therefore, the only thing we have to go on is what you say. That is correct isn't it?"

"No, Captain. That is not correct. The DPS officer that investigated the accident was kind enough to come in early this morning and forego some of his sleep and prepare his report for me. I would like to offer, I guess you would say, into evidence, the accident report concerning my accident last night." He opened his briefcase and handed the report to Captain Hummer. "As you will notice, there is the Linview Police Officer's statement and the statement of two other witnesses on the report. I also have a copy of the intoxilizer report attached, and a copy of the arrest record. You will notice that the alcohol content of the driver is 0.024%, and the driver was arrested for DWI. Any questions, gentlemen? Also, no driver's license."

The members of the Review Board looked at Captain Hummer. They each read, or looked over, the documents that Jinkx had presented. They all agreed that there was no questions. Even the Captain.

Finally the Captain spoke. "The results of our findings will be given to you within the next few days."

"I would like to say one thing, on the record and off the record." Jinkx looked straight at the Captain.

"Go ahead, Deputy Finner."

"I hate to steal your thunder, Captain, but you're not fucking around with some pissy assed kid here. I know what you had in mind for me. Don't underestimate my intelligence. I am straight forward, and I don't ask anyone to do dirty work for me. Any questions from anyone?" Jinkx looked around the room. "If you have any comments say them to my face. Don't wait until I walk out the door and get out of sight, then talk about me. Let's be men, now. Speak up. "

\*\*\*\*\*

Three days had passed and during this time Jinkx had managed to stay away from supervision, other than casual meetings in the hallway



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

and briefing room. He had not heard from the Captain concerning his appearance before the Review Board. As he reported for work on this day, and as he entered the courthouse, he met Captain Skinner and Detective Brenner.

"How you doing, Deputy Finner?" asked the detective. They all got on the elevator to ride to the fifth floor.

"Holding my head above water," was his reply. He didn't know where he stood with those that were not in the Patrol Division.

The Captain spoke. "We want you to know that we did not go along with the bull shit that ass hole Hummer tried to pull on you. He was the only one that wanted to reprimand you. He could not give us any reason for a reprimand. He lost."

"Has he gave you our decision yet?" asked the detective.

"No. I guess he is trying to make me sweat. But he should know by now that I do not sweat. He can kiss my ass if he thinks he is going to get to me."

"He really was pissed off when you read him the riot act just before you left the room. I asked him why he didn't say it to your face when you were there. He had no answer. You're number one on his shit list. You know that don't you?" asked Captain Skinner.

"As the old saying goes, 'he ain't seen nothin' yet.'" As the elevator stopped he faced the two. "Thanks, fellas. I appreciate it."

The briefing was being conducted by Sgt. Bodie Denny, and was under way when Captain Hummer entered the room.

"I'm Just about finished, Captain. Do you have something for us?" asked Sgt. Denny.

"As you know, Deputy Finner had an unfortunate accident a few days ago. The decision of the Review Board was that," he unfolded a sheet of paper and read, "was that it is the recommendation of the board that no disciplinary action be taken on Deputy Finner." He walked over to Jinkx and handed him the paper. As he walked back to the desk he said, "We treat everyone here equal. We do not discriminate. We weighed the evidence that was presented at the board hearing and unanimously reached the same decision." He turned to the Sgt. "Continue Sgt." He left the room.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

103

Three weeks had passed and Jinkx had been minding his own business, for a change. He stayed away from all supervision except when it was on official business. He had been working the north zone for two weeks, but tonight he was to be in the south zone. He was on routine patrol on Highway 3 at the Sims County line when he observed a white van eastbound toward Klimore. He followed it at a distance and it turned into the driveway of the Klimore Comfort Inn and went to the back. Jinkx passed the driveway and turned in behind a fast food drive in. He started to observe those that got out of the van. He adjusted his binoculars. "All dope heads. Allie Sams, Dick Glenn, Kline Willie Parks, Dippy Donna and Bubba Mission," he said to himself. "Going in to get a fix, all of them." He saw enough and didn't want to meet up with Deputy Colley, who was supposed to be working drugs based upon his report. He was getting ready to go when he heard, and felt, a knock on the rear of his unit. His heart jumped into his throat. He was frozen in his seat. There was another knock on the window on the passenger side. He turned his head so fast he almost got a whiplash. He saw Sgt. Eli James Benfelder of the Klimore Police Department.

"Did you dirty your pants, Deputy Finner?" he asked as he was laughing. He got in beside him. "I thought I taught you to watch your ass."

"You son-of-a-bitch you," laughed Jinkx. "I would shoot you but you're not worth the price of a bullet." He shook his hand. "I don't see you very much. Where you been hiding?"

"I've been on deep nights and it seems like forever. I hear they are giving you a rough time over there."

"Who told you that?"

"Everybody. I told you that you would not like it working for that drunk, Waverly. You never had it so good when you were here. By the way. What you got going at the motel? It was interesting enough to let me park behind you and slip upon you. Can I help you with anything?"

"I was working drugs, plain clothes, but when I gave the Captain my report he suddenly replaced me with Chic Colley."

"I met that guy. He hangs around our office most of the time. He asked a lot of questions about you, and if you had told anyone at the PD



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

about what you had been working on. He asked for names, especially. ....Have you stirred up anyone lately, you know, any high falootin' individual? Maybe like an ex-senator or his son?"

"You have been talking to Sgt. Monroe, haven't you?"

"He told me you were interested in Sr. and Jr. Mallory. I have my own ideas about both of them. I'll bet we have the same idea. You do know that he, Jr., has a room at the Pinwheel Motel, don't you?"

"Yeah, I know that, and Jr. has a room inside this motel. There is more traffic there than normally should be. All dopers. I just now saw Allie Sims, Kline Willie Parks, Dick Glenn, Dippy Donna and Bubba Mission go in the motel, and I know they went to Mallory's room. I've seen that white van there several times. A week or two ago I saw Dick Glenn go across the street to the fried chicken place. He stayed for a while and was talking to one of the females in there. He brought a box or two of chicken back to the motel. Some big man and his riding buddy comes to see Mallory, or the girls. They drive a Blazer. I can't get anything on them. I shouldn't be here as the Captain said that Colley was working from my report."

"I don't think that you have heard that one of our officers, Gene Perry, is with the DEA now, along with one of your deputies, Lyle Farmer."

"You have to be kidding me. Those two ass holes with the DEA?"

"They are part of an organized drug unit set up by the DEA. They have officers from several agencies in this area, and they are sworn in as Deputy U.S. Marshals so they can go anywhere. No boundaries."

"I remember Gene when I worked here. He was let go by the police department he used to work for because he was extremely brutal with his prisoners. A fine pair to turn loose on the public."

"Sure is. Well, I better hit the road. I want you to call on me if you ever need anything, OK?"

"I sure will, Sgt.. Good to see you again. By the way. How do you like your new Chief, Dirk Hadley?"

"Now, I should shoot you. You made my day. I can't stand him. Why didn't you keep him over there?"



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

105

"We wanted you to get all the benefits of his expertise in law enforcement and supervision. We wanted to share."

Sgt. Benfelder slammed the door and gave Jinkx the finger as he walked back to his unit.

He noticed two of the well known dopers entering the Kinney Fine Chicken Restaurant and drove past them

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx and Marissa stopped by the Whistle Stop the next day, their day off, to have lunch. As they entered the restaurant they saw Kerrie Wintz in a corner booth.

She noticed them coming towards her. "Have a seat. I was just getting ready to order. It has been busy, hasn't it?"

They sat down. "It sure has," he replied. "I'm glad you're here." He took his notebook from his jacket. "I had to dispatch the other night for a few hours. I run a name that you have in your notes, also. Take a look at this teletype return on one of our hoodlums. I think you will really get the picture of what goes on in this county."

She took the paper and looked at it. "Well, well. Our Mr. Pell. Let me read this."

PELL, TOM ALLEN WM DOB/02/12/41 POB? TX  
DL 00031744  
HGT/6'2" WGT 228 EYES/BRO HZL/BRO  
DRE 01-02-72 DOLT 11-20-78

**ADDITIONAL IDENTIFIERS**

SOC/440-00-2600

CHARGES

CONVICTIONS

OFFENSE  
HOMICIDE  
ASSAULT  
LARCENY  
DWI

1  
2  
2  
1

0  
0  
0  
0

LAST ARREST STATUS (INCLUDED ABOVE)

10-28-78 TX 081000 LINVIEW SO.

03 ASSAULT NOT PROS FBI/NO/822311D



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"No convictions, Jinkx. What does that mean to you?"

"It means that he had someone on his side many years ago that protected these turkeys. That's what it means to me, and that's not all, Kerrie. I talked to some people at the courthouse in the District Clerk's office, and they said that he was involved in an assault or something like that, and he supposedly threatened the only witness. The witness never appeared to give testimony at the trial. The case was dismissed. This goes back a few years."

"This is about normal for Grabe County. We have a foothold on the type of individuals we are dealing with. Now, what are you two going to do today? We should divert our attention from what's going on here to our pleasures and personal lives. I can't get away. How 'bout you two?"

"I have decided, at this very moment, that we will drive to Dallas for a day or two. Maybe enjoy a little dining, a little dancing and a little romancing." He nodded and looked at Marissa. .... "Yep. How about it, kiddo? Whatcha say?"

Marissa's beeper sounded before she could answer. "Sorry." She looked at the number displayed. "The hospital is calling. I hope I don't have to go to work. We have so many taking their vacations this time of year. I should have requested mine. Excuse me while I call in."

"So," said Jinkx. "Does your new editor cramp your writing about Grabe County?"

"He has gotten many phone calls from those that don't like the exposure, especially the Sheriff and Judge Kriley. Well, they don't make the call personally. They have someone else call. The former DA, now attorney, Olin Hall, called several times concerning the article on the Sheriff. The editor told him to buzz off and for the Sheriff not to bring notoriety to himself and he won't be taking up space in our paper. I don't think Hall liked that."

Marissa returned to the booth. "Postpone our trip to Dallas. I have to work my days off. Too much going on at the hospital." She turned to Jinkx. "Sorry. I took those days off a while back when someone worked for me. I am returning the favor."

"Hey, I understand. There will always be a next time. Here comes our dinner." Jinkx winked at Marissa.



“Oh, I was going to tell you about the letters we are getting about the police in Larkmount. They are complaining about them setting up a speed trap there. Letters are pouring in. Where would I go to find out about the legality of a speed trap?” asked Kerrie.

“First of all speed traps are not legal. Whenever the term ‘trap’ is used, that’s a dead giveaway that it is illegal. You need to research this at the law library in the courthouse. Everything about the law that you want to know is in those books. They are there for public use. Ask the librarian. She will tell you where to find law books that contain what you are looking for.”

“I never thought about that. I’ll try to find the time to go there when I go to the courthouse.”

“Tell you what. Since Marissa has to go to work,” he looked at Marissa. “on her days off, I’ll go there when she goes to work at 2:00PM, and research it for you. I have nothing to do anyway. I need to look up a few other things too. I’ve been meaning to go there, so I’ll do it today. I’ll make some copies and get them to you. I’ll tell you the truth, I can’t stand Richard Matlock, the City Marshal. He is known as ‘Buffalo Ass.’”

“What’s his name, Richard Matlock?” Kerrie began to write.

“Let me tell you about this turkey. See, he is a civilian jailer for the county. He is also the City Marshal for Larkmount. When I talked to him a long time ago, he had never went through the Police Academy. From the date of hire, as a peace officer, you have one year to go through the academy. Don’t know if he has been through it or not. He told me he knew very little about traffic laws, and he was going to slow the traffic down in that area. I see him occasionally when I bring a prisoner to jail. He is one of the intoxilizer operators for the county. I haven’t seen him in a while.”

“Very interesting. I’ll check into this speed trap thing. I’ll contact some of those that have written into the paper about it. There is so much going on that I can’t keep up with it. I intend to do an article on it as soon as possible.”

“You will have the legal aspects concerning this matter as soon as I can get it. Let’s drink to that.” Jinkx raised his glass of water. They clanked their glasses together.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

He lowered his head and spoke softly. "The Sheriff and Tom Pell just came in, saw us, then left. Huh oh!"

Jinkx was looking through the books at the law library and saw attorney Henry Haskell also doing some research. "Hello, Mr. Haskell."

"Hey Finner. What are you doing here?"

"Doing a little research. I don't like to bother you, but I need to know the title I would look under pertaining to speed traps and peace officers jurisdiction."

"I'm doing research in relation to the same thing. Who and where are we talking about?"

"I'm more or less curious about what's going on with the City Marshal of Larkmount. I have heard some rumors."

"They are not rumors. I know what you are talking about. What is your interest in it?"

"Just curious. What's your interest in it?"

"Let me say this. I am an attorney, and people hire me to defend them."

"So what I am hearing is not rumors, like you said."

"That's right. Let me give you these papers to copy. I have almost finished my research. There is no use in you spending a lot of time looking, when I already have the information."

He took the stack of papers and was copying them when Haskell brought him the last few papers. "There you are. This is all you need." He leaned on the copy machine. "Have you heard that your Sheriff is getting a divorce?"

"No, I haven't. I guess his wife got tired of having seconds. The best thing she ever did. I went to a couple of his parties and she was totally neglected by him. I don't blame her. It's a wonder he hasn't brought home every venereal disease known to man, and some not known. When did she file?"

"This morning. I was filing some papers and her attorney filed the papers."

"I bet you anything that this is kept hush-hush. I don't think he can stand embarrassment."

"Have you seen the Sheriff today?"



"Today and tomorrow are my days off. I don't go up to the fifth floor on my days off, only when I'm on duty."

"In other words, you haven't seen the black eye that he is sporting. Right?"

"Say what, now? A jealous husband maybe? I saw him today at the Whistle Stop. He was with Tom Pell. I was there with some friends when they came in. They, or he, looked at us and left very fast."

"He hasn't been around in several days. I heard that he borrowed one of Sheriff Sim's girlfriends and one of her other boyfriends, who happens to be with the Texas Alcoholic Beverage Commission, came back in town unexpectedly. He came over to her apartment and wanted in. She told him she didn't feel good and for him to leave. This TABC agent, named Winslow, caught on real fast and pushed her aside, searched the apartment and found Waverly hiding in her closet. He thundered on his ass and sent him home with mental and physical anguish. I don't think Waverly will want to go back to Sims County. I know this is true because I was at the courthouse in Sims County yesterday and was talking to Winslow, as he is a friend of mine. I used to know him when I was with the DPS many years ago."

"Maybe he called the Sheriff's wife and told her to keep Waverly at home and away from his girlfriend." remarked Jinks. .... "Here's you paperwork. I appreciate it"

"The reason I am researching this particular subject is because I have been contacted by several, I guess you could say victims, and I intend to give Mr. Matlock all kinds of hell. He has always been sarcastic when I bailed out a client or wanted to speak to a client and he was on duty. I hold grudges. Don't get mad, get even, I always say. See you later."

"Yeah, sure. Thanks for the help. And, oh yes, the information." He made one more copy of each document for his own file. He left the courthouse and dropped one copy off at the newspaper for Kerrie. They had been seen together by the Sheriff, so everything was out in the open now. He then went to the hospital to tell Marissa about the Sheriff's run-in with the TABC agent.

Marissa saw him as he came in. "Like some coffee, sir?"

"Sure do, nurse. I have some gossip for you, kiddo."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

As they drank their coffee Jinkx filled her in on what was told to him by attorney Haskell. "Exciting, huh?"

"Very. Think Kerrie will have something in the paper tomorrow?"

"If she has time to submit it she probably will."

"I have to get back to work now. Let me give you my key to my apartment. Why don't you stay with me tonight, and we will go out to breakfast in the morning and read the paper?"

"Ooohh. Sounds very exciting. What about Yvonne? I don't need to be 'discovered' again."

"Good news. She found her a boyfriend. They took our trip to Dallas tonight. Think you can handle a red hot nurse a little later on?"

"Sure can. Say around tenish, or there 'bouts'?"

....As Jinkx and Marissa lay across the bed the conversation was soft. Marissa asked, "How did I get so lucky?"

"Just being you, I guess." He ran his hands over her back. "By being sweet and feisty and shy and smart."

Marissa shook her head, smiling. ...."I don't sound like much of a bargain, do I?"

He frowned quizzically. "I just might have left something out," he said softly.

"Like what?" Marissa whispered.

"Oh, like fascinating." Jinkx bent his head to brush his lips over her cheek. "Or maybe, sensual." He lifted his head for a moment, then bent over again. "Especially sensual."

She held him and kissed him and knew the exact moment when his embrace changed, and passion replaced the talking. Her body was burning, her skin was hot, and there was a hollow ache low in her belly. She couldn't ease that ache, only Jinkx could, and for one blind moment she didn't care about anything else.

Bonding is beautiful, they thought. Their bodies were now one. A state of being overpowered with emotion filled the room, as it had been a while since they had shared each other so passionately.

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx and Marissa decided to have breakfast at the Hot Biscuit this morning, as it was closer to her apartment. They ordered breakfast and



drank coffee as he spread the paper on the table. An article on the front page was about the Larkmount situation discussed the previous day. "Looks like she scored again," said Marissa.

"I'll bet Matlock is all up in the air about this." They began to read and noticed that other patrons were talking about the article.

## **LARKMOUNT CITY MARSHALL DENIES COMMUNITY IS A SPEED TRAP**

**By Kerrie Wintz**  
**Staff writer**

Larkmount—Critics charge Larkmount is a speed trap.

....City Marshal Richard Matlock replies they don't see the whole picture.

"What they see is a small town, population about 1,000, where a police car has somebody pulled over all the time," he said.

"We are a very small town, however, we have big city problems," Matlock said of the small community located just South of Linview. "People don't see the volume of high-speed traffic, the drunk drivers and the fatal accidents."

...A traffic survey during a 24-hour period in January showed 20,730 vehicles passing through one of the Larkmount intersections and almost 14,000 through another.

A group concerned about the activity of Matlock's department has planned a meeting for 8PM Thursday at the Community Center to discuss taking action against what they consider to be Larkmount traffic traps. Matlock said that last year his department issued 2,503 tickets, and traffic is his priority. These traffic fines resulted in \$72,702.00 revenue for the city. He says that he has already surpassed that through the first 10 months of this year, with 2,716 citations resulting in fines totaling \$119,627.00.

For the critics, that is proof enough that Matlock is running a speed trap on the approximately nine miles of state highways which runs through Larkmount. But Matlock points to statistics from the Texas Department of Public Safety that seven accidents occurred in the Larkmount area, and three inside the city limits.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

The public said that they won't buy Matlock's feeble excuse for writing so many tickets for a small community, and recites a Texas Legislature law, passed this year, to discourage cities widely known as "speed traps." The law states that the cities of less than 5,000 must turn over to the state all fine money collected in excess of \$2.00 for each mile per hour a person was ticketed for speeding on a state maintained highway. One small town laid off its entire police department when the law went into effect. The public is hoping that Larkmount and the City Marshal's Office will suffer the same consequences.

City Marshal Matlock says that he is not familiar with such a law.

This reporter contacted Austin and talked with the Director of Public Safety and the State Representative of this area, and such a law "does exist," fortunately.

"I'll bet that Matlock is looking for a hole to crawl into," remarked Marissa.

\*\*\*\*\*

When Jinkx walked through the door of the Sheriff's Department on Wednesday he saw Sheriff Waverly coming towards him. Jinkx raised his hand as to greet the Sheriff, but he stared at Jinkx, black eye and all, then he turned and walked behind the counter and to Captain Hummer's office. "Well, he can kiss it, then," thought Jinkx. Jinkx continued on to the briefing room. He joined the others standing around the desk.

Lt. Rutherford was sitting at the desk. He looked up at Jinkx. "Would you consider taking the sergeants test next week? We have so many new deputies that we need one more sergeant."

"It would be like the last test. The stripes would be given to the Sheriff's and Captain's favorite person, not the one who would make the best grade or do the best job. Same old bull shit. Not interested, but thanks for asking. Oh yeah, by the way. Did you read in the paper where everyone's ace crime fighter, City Marshal Matlock, has his ass in a sling about a speed trap in Larkmount?"

"Sure did. I told him many months ago that he was pushing his luck. He's a dumb ass."

"My, my. I thought you agreed with everything these ass holes did in Grabe County."



"I am beginning to see the light, thanks to you, and some others. After I helped demote Ashley, and I have already apologized to him, and all the crap that surrounded you, I'm about ready to get out of here."

"I heard you had an application in at the college. What's the status on that?"

The Lt. sat up straight. "Who told you about that?"

"There is very little that goes on in Grabe County that I don't know about. Does the Sheriff know?"

"I have no idea. I should know about the job in a few months. I'm thinking about going to the Witt Olney Police Department. I have a job there if I want it."

"You should take it. I'm going to be a straight shooter with you. Whether you like it, or whether you know it, you are part of the program set up by Waverly and Hummer. Bad."

The deputies started filtering into the briefing room. Jinkx walked to the back and sat down by Chick Colley. "I hear that you have been asking questions about me at the Klimore PD, Colley."

...."I just wanted to know what, or who, you had talked about concerning drugs. I asked about the names in your report, that's all."

"That's not all. Everything and everyone is contained in the report I gave to Captain Hummer. In the future, if you want to know anything about my activities, you better ask me, not anyone else." Jinkx looked into his eyes with a tight jaw. "You do understand me, don't you?" Jinkx got up and walked to the other side of the room.

The Captain entered the room with Sgt. Denny. "Listen up. The DEA is conducting an investigation in an area north of Klimore around FM125 and Champ Lane. Do not cruise that area. Stay out of there. Go there only if the dispatcher sends you there. This is the last warning about giving information to the news media. The Sheriff is really pissed off about information being relayed to writers from the Linview newspaper. This has to stop. Last warning. Any questions or comments? No? Hit the road. Your assignments are on the board."

\*\*\*\*\*

Friday's newspaper was selling fast, as the speed trap articles captured the headlines. Jinkx seated himself at the Whistle Stop. He



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

would like to have the company of Marissa, but her hours had been extended, and Jinkx knew that she needed the sleep. He saw Billy Wayne Ashley in a corner booth. "Mind if I join you?" asked Jinkx.

"Sure, sit down. What are you doing up so early?"

"I knew that there was a meeting in Larkmount last night, and I wanted to see what transpired. You might get in trouble if you are seen sitting with me. You know that don't you?"

"I don't think so. As of today I am going to be the Public Relations Officer for the Sheriffs Department. First day on the job."

"Yeah, and when the Sheriff gets blasted and runs his car up a tree or crashes into another car, but kills someone instead of injures them, what are you going to tell the public about that? The truth?"

"I'll know what to say when the time comes. Don't be so bitter. Someday I'll get even. I'm just coasting now."

"Maybe you're right. Did you read the paper yet?"

The waitress came to the table.

"Just coffee for me, thanks," said Jinkx.

"I just opened the paper," answered Ashley.

Jinkx looked at the headlines. "Looks like Buffalo Ass might be in a jam." He grabbed a paper that had been left on another table.

### MOTORISTS DEBATE LARKMOUNT PROBLEM MEETING ON LARKMOUNT POLICE

By Kerrie Wintz

Staff Writer

About 200 people—both pro and con—attended a Thursday night meeting to discuss what some call a speed trap in Larkmount.

The crowd became upset when Linview attorney Henry Haskell said the purpose of the meeting was to gather signatures for a petition to be presented to the Larkmount City Council, and also the Grabe County Commissioners Court. Haskell said that if anyone in the crowd had a complaint with Larkmount police, they should put in writing so it could be presented when the petition is presented.

When those present went to the microphone to air their grievances, the topic seemed to be that they are unjustly ticketed, as they stated that



the officers claimed the speed was in excess of what showed on the speedometer. Another complaint was that the officers were out of their jurisdiction when they ticketed those at or near the bars at Booze Alley. This section is strictly in the city of Linview, and not in Larkmount.

Neither Larkmount Mayor Vern Hays nor City Marshal Richard Matlock attended the meeting. Matlock said that the group, that calls themselves Citizens Against Traffic Stops, probably would not have let them get their point across. I talked with them by phone.

....The Linview Daily News has been bombarded with letters from people that claimed to have been treated badly, and harassed by the Larkmount officers. It is also rumored that citations written outside the jurisdiction of the Larkmount officers have been "dumped" in a Peace Justice Court in Grabe County. According to Texas law, tickets written within the confines of the city limits will be handled by the entity city court, in which they have a city judge. If a citation is written outside their jurisdiction, the citation is illegal.

This reporter will conduct an investigation into the legal aspects of the aforementioned problems and continue the articles.

"Well, Ashley. How about that? Think Matlock will need some help to get out of this mess? You've been in law enforcement a long time. What's your opinion on this matter?"

"If someone dug deep enough they might, just might, find out that the citations the reporter said was 'dumped' in a Peace Justice Court, might just be found on J.P. Jason Baldwin's docket in Klimore. Of course I don't know who would tell such a thing." Ashley stood up, wiped his mouth and threw a dollar tip on the table. "Good hunting." He walked to the register and paid his tab. He nodded at Jinkx when he started out the door.

He knew that Kerrie would love to have this info. He paid for the coffee and walked to the phone and thumbed through his address book for her number.

The phone broke the silence and startled Kerrie who was in a deep sleep. "Hello."

"A man of few words, Jinkx. Check Justice of the Peace Baldwin's docket. That's where the tickets are dumped."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Kerrie sat up in bed. "That's great news. One of our reporters is going to help me with this. He has done lots of research at the law library and will also write a few columns of interest for the public. He used to be with the Houston newspaper, and he cannot stand deception and corruption. The editor put him with me as I have the inside scoop on several events, thanks to you. The reporters name is Ellis Henderson, so if you have anything for us it is OK to notify him. I've already told him about you."

"I hope that he is on our side. I don't trust too many people in this county, but I am going to take your word that he is on the side of right instead of the side of wrong."

"We can trust him implicitly. I assure you of that."

"I can determine that by reading his first article. Anyway, that is the skinny on the missing traffic citations. You can add that to your articles about Grabe County's ace crime fighter. Bye for now."

\*\*\*\*\*

When Jinkx reported for duty Saturday the department was all a buzz over the discovery of five missing employees of the Kinney Fine Chicken place in Klimore. The details were sketchy and no one had information to add to the mystery. The rumors were abundant and speculation filled the air. He was assigned to the north zone and had no contact with those he knew in the Klimore PD and surrounding area. He stopped by the hospital and talked with Marissa about the current happenings. She could only add speculation to what he already knew.

He called Kerrie at the newspaper office, from the hospital. When she answered he could feel the sorrow in her voice. "Ellis is going to write some of the articles. He called me from Klimore and I can't repeat the gruesome scene that he described to me as it brings tears to my eyes. I've never covered a story like this, or heard about anything like this before. We will try to have a full story in the paper tomorrow. I am going to join Ellis shortly in Rashe County where they found the bodies. I don't want to cut you short. You understand, don't you?"

"I sure do, Kerrie. We'll be reading about it. Bye."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx opened the paper with Marissa at this side at the Whistle Stop. She had spent the night with Jinkx, as she needed consoling after hearing about the abduction and murder of the employees. They read together.



**Execution-style slayings  
FIVE KILLED IN KLIMORE HEIST**

**Bodies found in Rashe field**

**By Ellis Henderson and Kerri Wintz  
Staff Writers**

Klimore—Four Klimore fast-food restaurant employees and a friend were found shot to death in a Rashe County field Saturday morning in what one official described as a “gangland-style” killing. Saturday night Rashe County Sheriff’s Department officials and Klimore Police officers said they had no suspects or leads.

The victims, apparently abducted following a robbery of the Kinney Fine Chicken restaurant between 10:30PM and 11:00PM Friday, were found in a remote field 17 miles away.

All were lying face down and had been shot at close range in the heads and backs.

----They were immediately identified as Minnie Talley, assistant manager of the restaurant, Odella Howell of Oleta, and Klimore College students Jamie Jenson and Dale Masters and Morey Lane, all 20 years of age. Lane, who did not work at the restaurant, was visiting Jenson and Masters, police said.

An employee of a local brick manufacturing and oil-drilling firm discovered the bodies while conducting a routine check of an oil well near the field. “You couldn’t drive on past where they were without driving over them,” he said.

The pockets of the fully clothed victims had been emptied and the only jewelry left was a pair of earrings on Mrs. Howell, an investigator said. Her body was found 200 feet from the others, which were lying side by side near a dirt road. Authorities speculate that after the robbing of the restaurant of approximately \$2,000.00 Friday night, the killer or killers, drove the victims to the field which is surrounded by a locked gate and cattle guard.

The victims were then made to step over the gate and were forced to lie down in a grassy spot about 175 yards from the gate.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Authorities said the four were shot on the ground and because of the relaxed position of their hands, authorities speculate the victims might have been told they wouldn't be harmed.

....Mrs. Howell, who was also face down but whose hands were clutching the grass, may have tried to run away, they said.

Authorities say that the scene was not especially bloody. It did not appear the four grouped victims had struggled before they died because their arms were at their sides and their legs were together.

It was speculated by law enforcement that a large and small caliber handgun may have been used.

Authorities say that the bodies have been sent to Dallas for autopsies and the results should be back shortly.

Klimore police were notified that the restaurant had been robbed and that three people—Mrs. Talley, Mrs. Howell and Jenson—were missing at 11:00PM Friday by Karnie Meeks, Mrs. Talley's daughter.

Miss Meeks, also an employee of Kinney's Fine Chicken, had left work at 10:00PM when it closed and gone home, said Klimore police Captain Matt Alvin. When her mother hadn't arrived home by 10:30PM, she called the restaurant, got no answer, then drove there and found the back door open and no one inside.

She spotted blood in three places inside and drove to the hospital to see if they had been taken there.

When she didn't find them she called the police.

----A Grabe County District Attorney investigator did analyze the blood, however, and stated that it was not human blood. Alvin said it has been sent to Tyler for further analysis.

Klimore police realized two more people were missing—Masters, a Kinney Fine Chicken employee who was off work, and Lane, a friend—after talking with another employee who had left work shortly after Miss Meeks.

Authorities said that the leads are coming through and are being checked out. All theories are being looked into and that it would be "several days" before the results of tests on physical evidence was available.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

119

"This is terrible," remarked Jinkx. "I am stunned by an act like this. This was a calculated abduction and murder, not a haphazard, spur of the moment decision. This was thought out, and I don't think that robbery was the motive. There is more to this than meets the eye." He looked at Marissa. "What's the matter, kiddo?"

"I'm paralyzed and shocked. I pity the poor families of the victims. God, I can't imagine anything happening like that around here. These killings point to the need to make the laws a little more strict. They are too lax. We need stiffer penalties."

"Stiffer laws would cut the crime rate because they would think twice before they committed murder. If someone has the gall to violate the victim's rights, that person should be punished at least to the extent he violated the rights of the victims," he said.

\*\*\*\*\*

The Klimore Police Department was extremely busy on the Monday following the murders. Chief Hadley called all of the personnel together that was working the murder, especially the detectives. Texas Ranger, Gene Ellis, was also called to the briefing. .... "Gentlemen, we are faced with the most serious homicide that I have ever seen and been involved in. We have to start from the beginning and characterize every bit of information that we have at this point. We will start with the report of the first officer on the scene. This is his report that he filed. I'll read it to you.

"I, William Roberts, was advised at 11:33PM to be en route to Kinney's Fine Chicken, that someone (Karnie Meeks) had gone there to check on her mother and found the door open at the rear of the store, no one there, and blood on the floor. Upon arrival I was met by one white male who identified himself as Brad Talley. He stated there was an accident, or something happened. He stated that his wife was Assistant Manager and that he had come to check on her and his daughter had entered the store to find it as described above. At this time I asked Officer Foley Dills to secure the front door and not allow anyone to enter. Officer Rob Little and I went to the open door at the rear of the store.

At the rear door there were two large waste cans (empty) and several plastic garbage bags in the entrance to the door. As we entered the back of the store, I noticed flour spilled and what appeared to be footprints



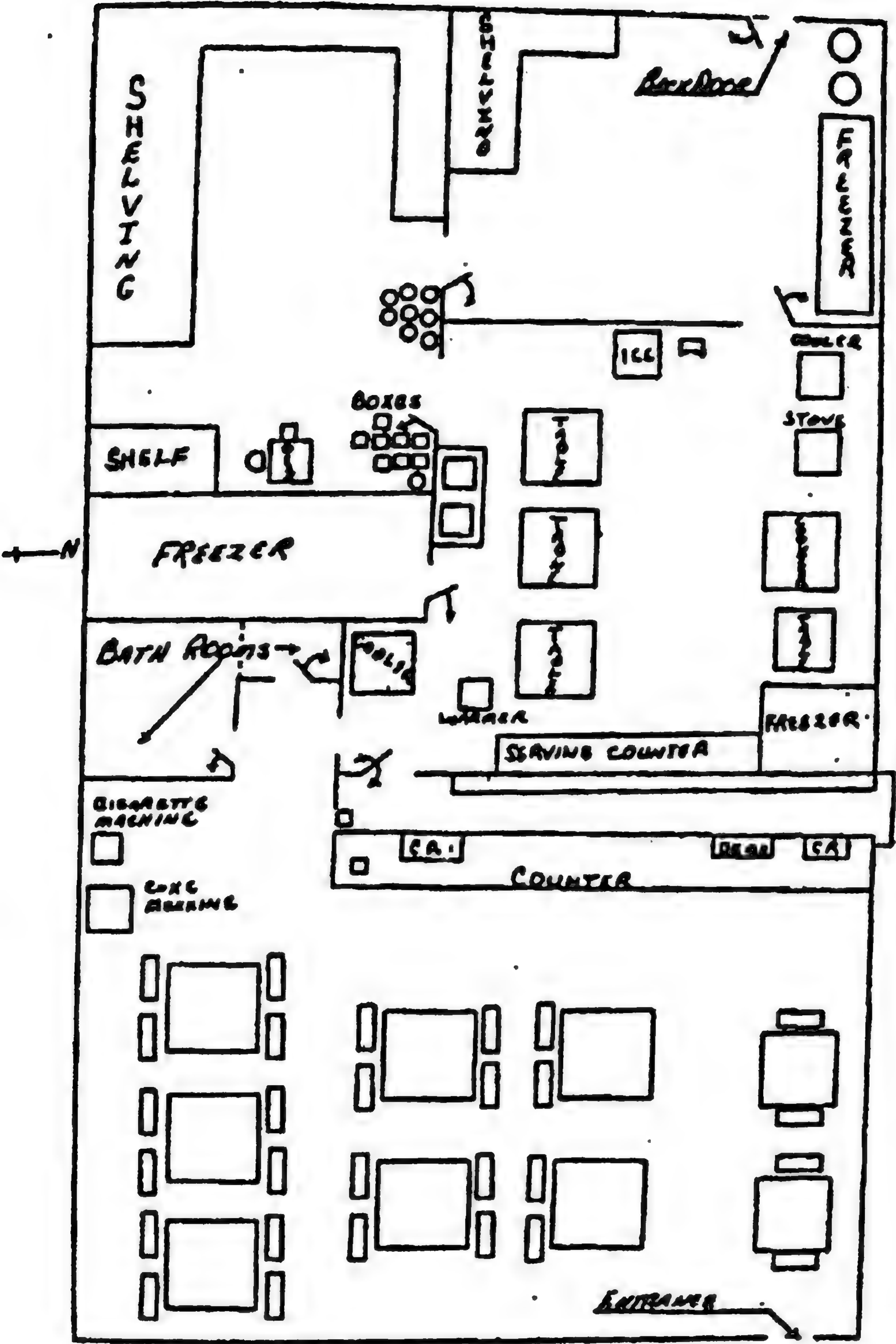
**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

where someone had walked through it. I pointed this out to officer Little so we would not destroy any evidence at the scene. This area directly into the back door is an opened topped room with a walk in cooler located on the left-hand side. (See Diagram) We then entered the kitchen area. At this time I noticed what appeared to be blood located on the kitchen floor. Also, one men's (white) cap and one woman's cap and a piece of paper located beside and in the general area of the blood.

**SEE ATTACHED DIAGRAM OF THE  
INTERIOR OF THE KINNEY FINE  
CHICKEN RESTAURANT.**



HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)





## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

As we continued to search the entire store for any victims, actors, evidence, etc., we entered into the Manager's Office, located parallel to the kitchen on the North side of the building. As then we entered the Manager's Office, I noticed the desk drawer (lower left) was open and what appeared to be blood on the files located in the drawer. We then searched back into the kitchen area toward the front. As we worked our way forward, we continued to search the walk-in coolers and bathrooms for evidence, victims, etc. As we entered the front area behind the counter. I noticed blood on the floor. I noticed that the cash register was open. When I walked to the front door I noticed that it was locked with the key, and the key was still in the lock on the inside. At this time we went back to the rear of the store and secured the back door and called for an investigator."

"OK. This was the report of the first officer, officers, that were on the scene. Now, we are going to take one step backwards, and determine what caused us to get involved. This document is the statement of Karnie Meeks, the daughter of Minnie Talley. This is what she says. Her words. I'll read it."

"My name is Karnie Meeks, I am 17 yrs. of age. I can read and write the English language. I've completed the 10<sup>th</sup> grade. I was working at Kinney's Fine Chicken, located on North Highway 25. I'm a cashier. On this date at 10:00pm I got off work and clocked out, still working Kinney's Fine Chicken was my mother, Minnie Talley. W/F, Assistant Manager, Jamie Jenson, and Odella Howell. Then approximately at 11:30pm I, who was now accompanied by Formby Pillars, returned to Kinney's Fine Chicken to get some money from my mother. At the time we drove up out front, and then my father drove up, Brad Talley. I then went to the front door and banged on the door, there was no answer or could see anyone inside the restaurant. Then my father and I went to the rear of the restaurant and the back door was standing open, and the other door was open in the rear that goes inside. Upon entering the restaurant I went up front and to the restroom, and cooler room. We could not find anybody. I saw Odella Howell's cap laying on the floor near the sink and flouring table. I picked it up and put it back on the flouring table. Then



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

123

my father and I went to my mother's office and found blood on the files where the desk drawer had been pulled out. I then went back up front and called the emergency room at the hospital. I got to the hospital and I asked for the Emergency Room, she transferred me and I asked if Minnie Talley, Odella Howell, Jamie Jenson was there and she said "No", and I was cut off. At this time Formby Pillars took me to the hospital Emergency Room and I asked if anyone had come in bleeding, they said "No". At this time I asked to use the phone and I called Kinney's Fine Chicken and my father answered and I told him "Daddy, they are not up here." I then advised my father I was going to call the police at which time it being about 11:40 to 11:45 p.m. At this time Formby Pillars took me back to Kinney's Fine Chicken. When I arrived the police was there. About 12:30am I was advised by Morgan Pearson, Det/Sgt Klimore Police Department, to come to the Police Station and give a statement. On Friday at approximately 7:30pm my mother called the Kinney's Fine Chicken and wanted to know how we were doing. I told her we had run \$1300.00. standing at the counter was a black male approximately 25 years of age, about 6' tall, 180 lbs, he had a clear plastic cap over his hair, he had a full beard and a mustache. On the right side of his face was deep pits in his skin, approximately 3 or 4. He had on a gray T-shirt and tennis shoes and faded blue jeans. This black male watched me when I opened the register. Approximately 10:00pm on Friday Dale Masters, a man that works here, and a man named Morey W/M who are friends of Jamie came to the front door of the restaurant when I was walking out and my mother let them inside and then she locked the door. I give this statement of my own free will and have been promised nothing In return."

"There you have it. Now, I would like Detective Donny Prince to give his report to you. I do want to tell you that we have set up a hot line to handle calls that are, and have been, pouring into this department, and other departments, concerning this horrendous homicide. Donny." He nodded to the detective.

...."Last Friday I was notified, at approximately 11:45PM, at my residence, in reference to a door found open at Kinney's Fine Chicken. I arrived at the scene at approximately 12:12AM and met Patrolman William Roberts at the rear door of the business. Captain of Detectives



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Matt Alvin, Detective Sgt. Morgan Pearson, Chief Hadley and officer Briarly were inside the business. Officer Roberts filled me in on what he had found and carries us up to this point. I advised Officer Roberts to go secure the crime scene and not let anyone else in. I took photographs of the crime scene, and of footprints on the floor in the flour. I took a sample of blood from the puddle behind the counter and it was placed in evidence. This was at 3:00AM. I talked with other detectives and found that three employees were at work at the time of the incident. Their identity, as was stated in previous reports, was made known to me. Outside there were two vehicles, a white Ford pickup, and a white Chevrolet. They were parked on the North side of the building. There was a motorcycle parked at the front door. I was advised by detective Pearson that there were possibly two other people missing from the scene. I then asked Captain Alvin to have Detective Pearson to take statements from the complainants, Karnie Meeks and her father, Brad Talley. Captain Alvin and I continued our investigation. I found on the wall behind the counter, what appeared to be damage from something striking it. There were two marks approximately 68 inches from the floor above where the puddle of blood was located. Blood, hats, photos and tapes from the cash register were taken for evidence. The amount of money missing from the restaurant was approximately \$2,000.00. When the manager was summoned to the scene, and she ran the register tapes, she said that the loss was approximately \$2,000.00. Also missing from the restaurant was the ladies' purses. At this time it was determined that there were five people missing from the restaurant, listed as follows: Minnie Talley, Odella Howell, Jamie Jenson, Dale Masters and Morey Lane. A teletype was sent out on the missing persons. The last two, Masters and Lane, had come to the restaurant to visit friends and both were missing also. Masters was an employee, but was off, and Lane was a friend. On Saturday at approximately 8:00AM I had the Grabe County Sheriff's Department public service Texas Ranger Gene Ellis at his residence, and advise him I needed him to call me. When he did I advised him of the crime. When Ranger Ellis and I were at the crime scene we were advised that the Rashe County Sheriffs Department needed us in their county on Waller Knapp Road. Detective Callis of the Klimore PD and a detective from Tyler went to the crime scene to lift latent prints. When Ranger Ellis and I arrived at



Waller Knapp Road, the bodies of five victims of the robbery and abduction from Kinney's Fine Chicken had been located, and were deceased. The first victim was located approximately 120 feet from the gate going into the oil lease. This victim was identified as Odella Howell and she appeared to have been shot in the head. Approximately 190 feet up the road were four more of the victims, identified as follows: Morey Lane, Dale Masters, Minnie Talley, and Jamie Jenson. The bodies were located on an oil lease. This location was approximately 14.2 miles south of Kinney's Fine Chicken. I took photographs of the crime scene. The bodies of the victims were transported to a funeral home and then to Dallas Medical Examiners Laboratory for autopsies. I traveled to Dallas with relatives of the victims where they identified the victims. That's it up to this point."

"Thanks Prince," said the Chief. "Our work is cut out for us. Our hot line is giving us results at this minute. We will have a meeting in two days and pool our findings at that time. Have a good day gentlemen."

## **CHAPTER 5**

Jinkx had enjoyed his two days off, although Marissa only had one day off this week. They were contacted by Kerrie and told to read the morning paper. The Sheriff had struck again, and she meant literally, and City Marshal Matlock was again in the news. The paper was also filled with the latest on the Kinney Fine Chicken murders.

### **LAWMEN THINK KILLERS KNEW THEIR VICTIMS**

**By Ellis Henderson**  
**Staff Writer**

Klimore—The abduction and execution of five persons Friday night was the work of at least two local people, possibly more, who probably knew their victims, law enforcement speculated.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

....They all were abducted from the Klimore Kinney's Fine Chicken restaurant where four of them worked, taken to the field and shot in the back of their heads.

The assumption that the victims knew their killers was the lack of evidence of a struggle at the local restaurant or at the execution site. The theory, which the authorities believe, is that the killers knew that the bodies would be found, and found quickly. To kill them and leave them that close to the road...I'd say they didn't want the elements or varmints getting to the bodies.

And, the most significant clue so far is the slugs recovered from the bodies. "Hopefully, they will tell us what type of weapon or weapons were used," they said. Preliminary results of the autopsies in Dallas showed the victims died of multiple gunshot wounds.

At an afternoon news conference. The Klimore Police Chief, Dirk Hadley, dispelled early rumors that a van stolen Friday in Linview was a suspected get-away vehicle.

"The timing just isn't logical," he said.

But he believes another van or large vehicle was used.

"Klimore police are concentrating on the robbery, and officials in Rashe County, where the murders occurred, are working the homicide angle," he said. The police agencies in both counties are now pooling their information.

"Blood found in the restaurant, including drops in the office and kitchen and a small amount near the cash register, still is a mystery," Hadley said.

First reports showed it was not human blood, and some speculate it came from chickens.

Most authorities have agreed one person could not have carried out the murders because his captors would have overpowered him.

But how many participated in the crime, and whether one man pulled the trigger while the others looked on in horror and surprise, is anyone's guess. he said.

They had breakfast then read more.



**SHERIFF WAVERLY INVOLVED  
IN ACCIDENT, AGAIN**

**By Kerri Wintz  
Staff Writer**

Sheriff Waverly had another 3:00AM accident in the 500 block of Spur 6, when traveling at approximately 35 miles per hour, his estimate. He ran over a curb, he says, causing \$4,800.00 damage. Since this was in the city limits, why was it investigated at 10:00AM, seven hours later.

The Sheriff said that he hit a piece of iron in the roadway. Which story is the truth?

Witnesses state that he ran off the curb while leaving a lounge in the shopping center.

The Sheriff had two previous accidents. One on Highway 4, and another at the intersection of Gallo and Finewood when he injured Jan Higgins. This accident caused him to receive a citation for failing to control speed, and cost the county in excess of \$11,000.00, not counting the out of court settlement, which, by the way, was handled by ex DA Olin Hall, for an undisclosed amount.

“Marissa, read this about the ace crime fighter down in Larkmount. I’m telling you now, there’s so much going on that the articles of the latest events are taking up the front page. Listen to this that Kerrie wrote.”

**LARKMOUNT PATROLMAN’S COMMENTS**

**By Kerri Wintz  
Staff Writer**

I have interviewed several citizens that have written to the paper about the treatment received by Larkmount City Marshal and his officers. Here is a few of those comments:

I was reared to respect the law and officers of the law. My respect for the law has hit its lowest ebb since I returned to Texas.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

I've driven in many states: New York, California, and overseas in Liverpool and London, England. In over fifty years of driving I've never had a moving violation until I drove through Larkmount.

I paid the fine under protest and, if possible, will never drive through Larkmount and am spreading the news to friends who know me and my driving habits.

G.C.

I got a ticket by the notorious Larkmount Police. I received the ticket a few days prior to Xmas and 2 weeks prior to my wedding and honeymoon out of the country. Upon returning, I had a notice reminding me that if I didn't pay, a warrant would be issued. **I paid immediately.** Three and a half weeks later I was phoned by a policeman, who stated that a warrant had been issued for not being in court on time and that I had to pay a \$135 dollar fine. **This warrant was issued after I paid the ticket.** Is there any justice?

I tried to schedule an appointment with the judge, and the clerk refused to schedule an appointment for me. Several calls later resulted in a warning to me that if I called again I would never see the judge.

I called once more and was told by City Marshal Matlock that if I called one more time he would arrest me for harassment. I then asked, "harassment of whom?" He said that since I don't pay Larkmount taxes I had no right to see the judge.

Highway robbery was to have gone out in the days of Robin Hood. I still see it very evident in Larkmount.

T.W.

It was about 10.30PM and the four lanes into Larkmount were almost bare of traffic. I set my cruise control on 65.

When I saw the Larkmount City limit sign, I then immediately reduced my speed to 55. Within ten seconds I saw flashing lights behind me. A Larkmount policeman stopped me and asked for my license. As he looked at it, I asked him what the problem was. He said that I was going 68 m.p.h. I told him that I was sure I was not going that fast after I reached the city limits.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

129

He said, "I don't care where you were. I can stop you anywhere in the State of Texas. I'm a Marshal."

I asked him if he was going to give me a ticket. He said, "You bet ya, and I don't give warnings."

I said, "I slowed down because I knew there was a speed trap here because I read about it in the paper."

He became very upset and loudly abusive and said, "The little petition you signed with 241 people wasn't enough, was it?"

I told him that I didn't sign any petition and that I most certainly did respect true law.

I find this so-called police officer offensive and a disgrace to the lawman's uniform.

I have been unable to sleep tonight, it's after 6am now. But Mister Officer, with God's continued grace, we will forgive you.

R.R.

Tomorrow's edition will carry the results of research into the "dumping" of Larkmount traffic citations that were written outside the officer's jurisdiction.

"Looks like the Sheriff has more troubles than he had bargained for," commented Jinkx. "And Matlock too."

"You will probably hear more about it when you go back to work tonight. Although those that cover up what really happened will be in their glory dispelling witness statements and adding what the Sheriff wants everyone to hear. "

"This guy Henderson writes a good article, Marissa. ....Of course, Kerrie does too. She is tearing Matlock up and I bet he hates to pick up the paper."

"Well, he wanted to be noticed," said Marissa.

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx tried to find out the latest on the Kinney's Fine Chicken murders when he got to the Sheriffs Department that afternoon. He saw Ashley, the PR officer, and quizzed him about it.

"Well," said Ashley. "They finally found the stolen van they were concerned about. That's all I know about it. I just heard about it a while ago. They are holding a press conference right about now at the Klimore



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Police Department. The newspaper finds out more than we do here. They are tight lipped at the KPD, or they don't know what they are doing."

He was assigned to the south zone and he went to the Klimore Police Department to see Sgt. Benfelder. He would know more than the rest of them, and he wasn't afraid to talk about it. Jinkx saw Sgt. Monroe. "Say Sarge, what's going on? All the cars out front."

"Big press conference going on. Reporters, police. Texas Rangers and relatives of the victims. I haven't seen you around for awhile. Where you been?"

"I was off for two days, and I have been working the north zone for quite a while."

"This murder thing has gotten everyone in a state of frenzy. Very little to work on, they say. Hadley is going about this ass backwards, I think. He hasn't included the patrol division in hardly any of the investigation. He relies strictly upon the detectives. What a joke."

"What did you say?" asked Jinkx with a surprised look on his face because of what the Sgt. said.

"I said, what a joke." The Sgt. walked into the dispatch office.

He drove past the Kinney Fine Chicken business and looked at the building. "How could this happen?" he said to himself. He looked across the street at the Klimore Comfort Inn. His mind began to tumble and he thought back over the past few weeks. He visualized the two hoodlums, Dick Glenn and Bubba Mission walking into the chicken place that night. "Could there be a connection with John Mallory and his crew and these killings?" he asked himself. "There is always that possibility," he answered. "Sure, they fit the profile. Who could I talk to that would listen?" He saw Sgt. Benfelder at the Klimore Comfort Inn. He pulled up beside him. Jinkx got out of his unit and walked to where the Sgt. was parked.

"Hello, Jinkx. I was just thinking about you."

"I need to talk to you. Let's go inside and have a coffee, OK?"

"Sure. Let me call in. I'll meet you inside."

The Sgt. joined Jinkx at a table in the corner. "I was just thinking about your surveillance of Mallory Jr., and these ass holes that hang around him."



"Let me interrupt you. I was thinking the same thing. I think they are tied in with what happened across the street. I don't know who to talk to. Who do you suggest?"

"Didn't you recently give a report to your supervisor that contained information on Mallory?"

"Yeah, I did. Right after I gave the Patrol Supervisor, Hummer, the report I was taken off the drug detail."

"The one that replaced you, Colley, I believe his name is?"

"That's right. Chick Colley."

"I drove around this place time after time and I never saw him once. He was at our PD many times, but I never saw him around here one time. I thought that was funny, as I knew you were on to something. I'll say one thing. These so-called detectives that Hadley has brought in here, with the exception of maybe one, has their head in the sand. I'm going to steal one of your phrases, 'They don't know their ass from a Japanese typewriter.' I thought this Hadley was a big time detective or something. He's lost too. The blind leading the blind."

"I still need someone to tell them about what and who I think is involved."

"Talk to the one you gave the report to, and see what happens. At least try it."

"I'm going to think this over before I approach him with my idea of who was involved. I don't want to rush into anything. Between you and me, I still have a copy of my report plus a few notes I made after Colley took over. He asked me if I had made a copy of my report. Of course I told him no." Jinkx stood up. "I'll pay for the coffee on my way out. I want to check on a few things. See you later."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx was up early the next morning. He had called Marissa and asked her if she wanted to have coffee with him, but she wanted to stay in bed a little longer. Jinkx ordered coffee and spread the paper out in a corner booth. He wanted to find out what the press conference covered.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

### **STOLEN VAN FOUND: LAWMEN SEEK CLUES**

**By Ellis Henderson**

**Staff Writer**

Klimore—A van reported stolen from a Linview restaurant early Saturday was found in a north Texas county Monday, but authorities aren't sure if it was used in the abduction and killing of five people this weekend.

Texas Rangers will take fingerprints from the van, a late model Ford, but law officials still have no suspects in the case.

We don't have anything, they say. It's the coldest (case) we've ever seen. We haven't got any suspects or leads. We've had a jillion calls, but nothing has amounted to anything.

Officials believe a van or other large vehicle was used to abduct four employees and a friend from the Klimore Kinney's Fine Chicken on U.S. 25 about 10:30pm Friday.

Fingerprints and blood samples found at the scene still are being analyzed, Hadley said. The blood found in a puddle behind the counter and in drops in the kitchen and office, was not splattered to indicate a struggle had taken place, he said. The preliminary analysis suggested the blood may have come from a chicken.

"One time something will look simple and you think you'll have an arrest before dark and ...you'll never find them," he said.

Jinkx sipped on his coffee as he read more.

### **LARKMOUNT TRAFFIC CITATIONS "DUMPED" IN PEACE JUSTICE BALDWIN'S COURT**

**By Kerri Wintz**

**Staff Writer**

The issue of a police officer's territorial jurisdiction goes back as far as 1932 in the case of Henson v. State, 49 SW 2<sup>nd</sup> 463(1932). The Court held that the state law was not deemed to have the effect to extend generally the jurisdiction of a sheriff beyond the borders of his county and a sheriff as such was not authorized to make an arrest outside his county. Later in 1949 the Court of Criminal Appeals held in Minor v. State, 291



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

133

SW 2<sup>nd</sup> 467(1949)that a city police officer “had the same power as the sheriff relative to his jurisdiction.” The concurring opinion attempted to clarify the use of pronoun “his” by stating that the Court meant that a city police officer had the same power as the sheriff relative to the peace officer’s jurisdiction and the power of the city officer was limited to the confines of the city boundary lines.

In context of statutory provisions that Sheriffs, City Marshals and City Police have like powers, authority and jurisdiction, within the confines of their boundary lines.

A peace officer who is outside his jurisdiction may arrest without warrant, a person who commits an offense within the officer’s presence or view, if the offense is a felony or a violation of Title 9, Chapter 42, Penal Code.

The Court holds that city police officers may not arrest without warrant or exceed past the confines of the city limits, or jurisdiction, unless in “hot pursuit” red lights and siren. (Christopher v. State, 639 SW 2<sup>nd</sup> at 937) (Milton v. State, 549 SW 2<sup>nd</sup> 190,192, Tex. Crim. App. 1947.) (Michigan v. Long, 436 US 1032, 103 S Ct. 3469, 3476, 77 L.Ed. 2d(1983).

There were 310 traffic citations “dumped” into J.P. Baldwin’s Peace Justice Court. Who received the revenue? The City of Larkmount or Grabe County?

....These traffic citations were written outside the jurisdiction of the Larkmount officers, as the place of occurrence is plainly written on the citation.

Jinkx saw attorney Henry Haskell enter the restaurant and motioned for him to come over. “Have a seat with me, Mr. Haskell. I didn’t think attorneys got up until 9:00AM.”

“Some of us do. I can see you have the paper turned to the article about Larkmount.”

“Good stuff in here about Grabe County’s ace crime fighter.”

“I am going to the city council meeting tonight and present them with a petition that was signed a while back. I don’t expect any results from that bunch of yahoos down there. I would swear that they are all involved in a money scheme to fleece the public, Oh, yeah. The secretary that



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

works, I mean did work there, just collected \$45,000.00 from the City of Larkmount in a lawsuit. Here's what happened. City Marshal Matlock arrested some guy that owns a house on Lake Chickaree, for DWI. He books him but later changes his mind and don't send the paperwork to the DA's office. He makes a deal with the guy to rent his house on the lake. You cannot rent a house, or rent out your house, on Lake Chickaree. It's part of the agreement when you buy there. Anyway, the secretary is contacted by the owner of the house as he tries to contact Matlock. She puts this little puzzle together and notifies the DA's office. They call her in and she gives a statement. They compare the paperwork and issue a warrant for this guy. DA investigator Max Markey arrests the one Matlock arrested. I pulled the record at the District Clerk's office. The attorneys for both sides filed a joint motion to dismiss. She settled out of court for the \$45,000.00. You didn't hear or read anything about it in the news. You know who she is. She used to work for the JP at the courthouse."

"I know her. Kandi Sims. I wondered where she went. How about that?"

"She owns a restaurant in town here somewhere. As the old saying goes. 'She took the money and run.' I would do the same. Now, they terminated her for making reports to various law enforcement agencies, but Matlock and the City of Larkmount said that they terminated her because they could not financially afford her position. After they fired her, they hired another individual in the same position as was held by Kandi Sims. Attorneys from both sides signed the Release, Discharge and Indemnity Agreement, and she walked away with the money."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx was at the Sheriffs Department early, as he wanted to have a talk with Captain Hummer. He wanted to talk to Lt. Rutherford first, to get his opinion. He saw the Lt. walk into the coffee room. He was alone.

"Hello, Jinkx," greeted the Lt.

"Lt., I need to talk to you about the report I turned in when I was working the drugs. You did read the report didn't you?"

"Yes, I did, when you left it for me to give to the Captain. Very interesting report."



"I think it goes beyond interesting. I think that bunch is mixed up in the murders of those at the Kinney Fine Chicken place."

"The ex senator's son? Are you serious?"

"Hell yes, I'm serious. There are some events that are not in that report, but in my mind. I saw two of Mallory's buddy's go to the chicken place a short time prior to the killings. That was Dick Glenn and Bubba Mission. They were involved in that drug ring that was busted in Rashe County, remember? .

"That's right. Sure is. That was the Sammy Hayes thing, wasn't it?"

"The Sammy Hayes and Wake Samuels thing. Bubba Mission was a cook for that operation. Some get caught, and some don't. Some go to jail, and some don't. And, Dick Glenn was the main operator in the distribution of the methamphetamine that was made in their Rashe County lab. They always said that Rashe County Sheriff Mel Strange protected them. Where were the bodies found? Rashe County. You know, two plus two."

"You might have stumbled on to something, old man."

He smiled. "Listen to us old men and you punk-ass kids might learn something. Do you think Hummer will present my report to Captain Sims of the CID? I talked to Benfelder and he said Hadley and his crew had their heads up their asses and was accomplishing nothing. Maybe Sims can evaluate my report and help in the solving of the killings. Just maybe."

"Let me talk to the Captain and we will look over the report and decide what to do about it. Will you buy that?"

"I guess so," he replied reluctantly. "When is it that you plan on seeing the Captain?"

"He won't be back until tomorrow. I'll probably see him the first thing in the morning, OK?"

He called Kerrie on the way to his patrol unit and told her what attorney Haskell had said about the lawsuit against Matlock and the City of Larkmount. She said that she would try to work it in with another article she was working on in relation to problems in Larkmount, and a petition.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Jinkx was in the south zone again as the roving unit. He stopped by the Klimore Comfort Inn and drove to the back of the motel and then to the front. He had a hunch he had to check on. He got out of his patrol unit and went to the front desk. "Excuse me." He got the attention of the desk clerk.

"What can I do for you, officer?" she asked.

"Do you have a John Mallory Jr. registered here?"

"I'll check for you, although I think he has checked out within the last few days." She thumbed through several cards. "Yes sir. He checked out Sunday. Anything else, officer?"

"No, thank you. That will be all."

"Terrible thing that happened across the street, isn't it?"

"Sure was. Terrible." Jinkx's mind was haywire. He knew that John Mallory Jr. was involved in the murders. He couldn't do anything about it. He saw Sgt. Benfelder walk in the front door. Jinkx motioned to him.

The Sgt. hastily walked toward Jinkx. "Let's have a seat where we won't be disturbed. I knew you would be here."

He knew that the Sgt. had some news about the murders. "You have something in that folder for me?"

"I sneaked a few copies of their paperwork on Chief Hadley's so-called investigation. You used to be a Private Investigator didn't you?"

"Sure did. for many years. Whatcha got?"

"I think they are going to need all the help they can get. They're running in circles. We got back the results of some evidence sent to the lab. Let me give you a run down on what I took from the detectives' folders and made copies of. Here is the way it unfolds, according to their paperwork I borrowed. These documents," he raised up a handful of papers, "are in relation to the work schedule of the employees starting at 0830 on the morning of the murders up to 2345 when the Klimore PD implemented a crime scene search of the Kinney Fine Chicken business. These papers are forward of the time, including finding of the bodies." He held up another stack of papers. "This is where it starts to get interesting." He spreads the papers on the table, picks them up one by one and hands them to Jinkx.



# HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

137

Possible Missing Items		
VICTIMS	DESCRIPTION	DISPOSITION
Minnie Talley	1-Brown purse with strap	.....
	2-Yellow gold wedding rings	.....
	3-Approximately \$750.00 cash	.....
Odella Howell	1-Gold Mother's ring-Aqua Green, Purple, 2 diamonds	.....
	2-Gold horseshoe necklace with small diamond on bottom of lower center-small gold chain	.....
	3-Set of gold heart shaped ear rings-pierced.	.....
	4-Set of car keys to Lincoln, will have plastic holder with either "Mom" or "Odella" on it.	.....
	5-Set of car keys to Ford pick up-plastic holder with either "Mom" or "Odella" on it.	.....
	6-Matching white gold wedding set. Picture available. Engagement ring has approximately a (10) point diamond	.....
		.....
		.....
		.....
Jamie Jenson	1-Tan with dark rim, silver digital watch	<u>Found at</u> <u>Kenny's</u> <u>Fine Chicken.</u>
Morey Lane	1-1983 silver Glidding High School ring	.....
	2-Velcro tan-fold type wallet	.....
	3-Drivers license and photos	.....
Dale Masters	1-Velcro army green wallet	.....
	2-Photos of wife	.....
	3-School I.D. cards	.....
	4-Gold wedding band with seven (7) diamond shape cuts on it	.....



# HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

He looked at the Sgt. "It's probably a little too early for any of these items to show up. I'll bet you that some of these items will be traded for dope. For anything that has any value. What's in those other papers?" Jinkx pointed to another folder.

"This is the evidence up to this point. Most of the evidence sent to the forensic lab in Dallas is still there, with no results forwarded to us at this time. Here's what you have." He handed Jinkx one document at a time.

## EVIDENCE

Oil Field Lease -1	Fired lead bullet	Found by Rashe County
	removed from ground	officer-given to
	near body of Odella	Ranger then sent to
	Howell	DPS lab Tyler
Ganes Valli residence	1-Fired lead bullet	DPS lab Tyler by
	removed from woods	Ranger
	where S&W was fired	--ELIMINATED--
Bill Flower's residence	1-Fired lead bullet	To DPS lab Tyler by
	removed from ground	KPD Det. Stearman
	behind Flower's house	--ELIMINATED--
	2-Fired lead bullet	To DPS lab Tyler by
	recovered from	KPD Det. Stearman
	ground behind	--ELIMINATED--
	Flower's house	
	3-Fired lead bullet	To DPS lab Tyler by
	recovered from	KPD Det. Stearman
	ground behind	
	Flower's house	--ELIMINATED--
Informant	1-Ruger security six	To DPS lab Tyler
	Revolver-Test fired	--ELIMINATED-Returned
Finger Nail	Found in waistband	At Forensic science
	of Jamie Jenson	Laboratory-Dallas
	by Forensic Lab in	
	Dallas	
John Mallory Jr.	Cast taken of left	Released to Forensic
	index finger by	Lab Dallas

# HUSH LITTLE BUBBA (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

D. Masters	Ranger	
Blood type "B"	In the body	On the
	1-Two copper fragments	Clothing
	2-Six pieces of lead-two	DPS lab
DPS Lab		Tyler
Tyler - - - -	copper jacketed fragments.	
	3-Lead core	
	4-Hair from	
	head of victim.	
M. Lane	In the body	On the
Blood type "O"	1-Jacket and	clothing
	core. Two	DPS
	small lead	Tyler
Tyler - - - -	2-Victim's	
	head hair	
	3-Fired lead	
	bullets	
O. Howell	In the body	On the
Blood type "O"	1-Lead frag-	Clothing
	ment	DPS
	2-Head hair	Tyler
	3-Dried blood	
	& hair.	
	4-Hairs from	
	right hand	
	5-fired lead	
	bullet	
J. Jenson	In the body	On the
Blood type "O"	1-Lead Med.	Clothing
	cal. bullet	DPS
	3-Head hair	Tyler
	from victim	
	4-fired lead	
	jacket	
	5-Broken	
	thumbnail	



HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

139

	Ranger		--ELIMINATED--	
D. Masters Blood type "B"	<u>In the body</u>	<u>On the Body</u>	<u>Results</u>	<u>Shot:</u>
	<u>1-Two copper</u>	<u>Clothing of-</u>	<u>R.H. Twist</u>	<u>Twice</u>
	<u>fragments</u>	<u>DPS lab i</u>	<u>6 lands &amp;</u>	<u>R-6 in</u>
	<u>2-Six pieces</u>	<u>Tyler</u>	<u>grooves</u>	<u>HEAD</u>
DPS Lab Tyler - - - -	<u>of lead-two</u>			
	<u>copper jacketed</u>			
	<u>fragments.</u>			
	<u>3-Lead core</u>			
M. Lane Blood type "O"	<u>4-Hair from</u>			
	<u>head of victim.</u>			
	<u>In the body</u>	<u>On the Body</u>	<u>Results</u>	<u>Shot:</u>
	<u>1-Jacket and</u>	<u>clothing of-</u>	<u>R.H. Twist</u>	<u>Twice</u>
Tyler - - - -	<u>core. Two</u>	<u>DPS lab in</u>	<u>6 lands &amp;</u>	<u>R6 in</u>
	<u>small lead</u>	<u>Tyler</u>	<u>grooves</u>	<u>HEAD</u>
	<u>2-Victim's</u>			
	<u>head hair</u>			
O. Howell Blood type "O"	<u>3-Fired lead</u>			
	<u>bullets</u>			
	<u>In the body</u>	<u>On the body</u>	<u>Results</u>	<u>Shot:</u>
	<u>1-Lead frag-</u>	<u>Clothing of-</u>	<u>R.H. Twist</u>	<u>Twice</u>
	<u>ment</u>	<u>DPS lab in</u>	<u>6 lands &amp;</u>	<u>R6 in</u>
	<u>2-Head hair</u>	<u>Tyler</u>	<u>grooves</u>	<u>HEAD</u>
	<u>3-Dried blood</u>			
	<u>&amp; hair.</u>			
J. Jenson Blood type "O"	<u>4-Hairs from</u>			
	<u>right hand</u>			
	<u>5-fired lead</u>			
	<u>bullet</u>			
	<u>In the body</u>	<u>On the body</u>	<u>Results</u>	<u>Shot:</u>
	<u>1-Lead Med.</u>	<u>Clothing of-</u>	<u>R.H. Twist</u>	<u>3</u>
	<u>cal. bullet</u>	<u>DPS lab in</u>	<u>6 lands &amp;</u>	<u>times</u>
	<u>3-Head hair</u>	<u>Tyler</u>	<u>grooves</u>	<u>Right</u>
	<u>from victim</u>		<u>R.H. Twist</u>	<u>Side</u>
	<u>4-fired lead</u>		<u>5 lands &amp;</u>	<u>NECK &amp;</u>
	<u>jacket</u>		<u>grooves</u>	<u>HEAD</u>
	<u>5-Broken</u>			
	<u>thumbnail</u>			



# HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

M. Talley Blood type "O"	<u>In the body</u>	<u>On the body</u>	<u>Results</u>	<u>Shot:</u>
	1-One bullet	Clothing of-	R.H. Twist	Twice
	2-Nail clip-	DPS lab in	6 lands &	1 R6
	pings	Tyler	grooves	1 R5
	3-Head hair		R.H. Twist	Lower
	from victim		5 lands &	SPINE
	4-Fired lead		grooves	& HEAD
<u>bullet</u>				
Kinney's Fine Chicken Bldg.	<u>At the scene</u>		<u>Results</u>	
	1-Dried blood sample on floor		M. Talley	
	2-Dried blood sample-middle		DPS Tyler	
	of floor, by sink		Type "O"	
	3-Dried blood sample-back		DPS Tyler	
	room floor by sink		Type "O"	
	4-Dried blood sample-floor		DPS Tyler	
	under desk by office		Type "O"	
	5-Bloodstaines on 2 blank		DPS Tyler	
	company record pads and		DPS Tyler	
	desk drawer in office		-----	
	6-One brown brush-kit-		DPS Tyler	
	chen area			
	7-Green canister containing		Belonged to	
	blood-on floor		M. Talley	
8-Dried blood-floor		DPS Tyler		
kitchen area		M. T. "O"		
10-Six paper items and		DPS Tyler		
11-9x6 wood panel		DPS Tyler		
12-Letter to Jenson		Tyler PD		
from girlfriend		lab		
13-S&W MDL 13 nickel		DPS Tyler		
<u>From ford van</u>				
1-S&W MDL 13 nickel plated		DPS Tyler		
2-Steering wheel pad		DPS Tyler		
3-Part of dash		DPS Tyler		
4-Blanket		DPS Tyler		
5-Carpet		DPS Tyler		
6-Letent prints		Tyler PD		
		Compared to		
Ford van-Processed latent		victims. No		



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

141

prints found in vehicle returned match.  
to owner

**VEHICLES**

**WHERE AND WHEN**

- |                                   |   |
|-----------------------------------|---|
| 1. Orange or gold carry all.....  | 8:30 PM or 11:00 PM parked<br>at rear of side parking   |
| 2. Yellow Camaro.....             | Comfort Inn lot-Flashing lights   |
| 3. Ford van-Bronze/Silver .....   | Pulling out of vicinity of Kinney's<br>Fine Chicken 10:15 - 10:20 PM                          |
| 4 Blue van.....                   | First stop-Saturday morning   |
| 2 White males                     |   |
| #1 White male-tall, slender       |   |
| #2 White male-tall, Dk. com.      |   |
| 1 White female-Blond, 30's        |   |
| 5. White van.....                 | Kinney's Fine Chicken at 9:00 P.M.  |
| 6. Light green 4 Dr. car .....    | 25 South 10:30 - 10:35 P.M.   |
| (Square tail lights)              |   |
| 7. White van-Driver-W/M .....     | City parking lot 8:00-9:00 PM   |
| 8. Dark brown van .....           | Kinney's Fine Chicken<br>10:00 -11:00 PM  |
| 9. White van (2 white males)..... | Kinney's Fine Chicken 9:00 PM   |
| 10. ....                          | White Ford van -Kinney Fine Chicken<br>like hand painted or faded-Parked in<br>front at 10:00 |
| 11.                               | Beige van, stock tires-north side of  |
| 12.                               | Kinney's Fine Chicken parking lot<br>10:30—11:30  |

“I couldn’t get everything they had in their folders. There is more that I will get as soon as possible,” said the Sgt..

Jinkx pointed to another folder. “What’s in that folder?”

The Sgt. handed the folder to him. “This is your copy. I could get in lots of trouble for doing this, but help is needed in this situation. I know that you are limited on what you can do, as you are not assigned to this case. However, we do need to pull out all the stops. Just don’t tell anyone where you get, or got, your information. OK?”

“Sounds real good to me. There are a few significant points to bring out in reference to what I observed in these reports. Number one. The



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

sighting of the white van several times in and around the Kinney Fine Chicken business. Possibly the same white van that was at the rear of the motel, that I observed, and the occupants did go inside John Mallory's room. The van was driven by, and registered to, Doris Kirkland. She was in the company of Bubba Mission and Dick Glenn. I saw Mission and Glenn go to the chicken place. Now, number two. The fingernail that was found in the side of Jamie Jenson, and we come to number three that is in conjunction with number two. A cast that was taken of John Mallory Jr.'s finger. Do we, or do we not, have a connection here? Is this all the information we have on this finger nail and cast made of a finger?"

"That is all that shows in the report. I'm wondering about this, now. I'll check into it. I have to get this paperwork back to the station before it is missed. I'll be in touch, so see what you can do, OK?"

He picked up the folder and went to his unit. As he patrolled the western section of the south zone a long time friend flagged him down. Ramey Broom, a farmer.

"Hello, Jinkx. What do you think about the killings?"

He shook his outreached hand. "A terrible thing, Ramey. You know everyone in this area. Who would be your best suspect? Let me re-phrase that. Who have you heard about that possibly committed or is involved in this atrocity?"

"Well, you did know that I bonded out Walt and Lana Yanskia in the Sammy Hayes and Wake Samuels drug bust. Well, I went in with Weldon Severnson. We bailed them out because Weldon thought they might have some information about the killing of his nephew, Roy Higgins. Those two might be good suspects. If they are on drugs, like they have been most of their lives, I would count them in. Along with others."

"I remember that. I was with the Klimore PD, and was dispatching that night. I had a hard time directing the fire department to the scene, as I didn't know exactly where it was. Yeah, I sure do remember when Roy Higgins was killed"

"I went along with Weldon. They never did pay me for the bond I posted. You know Lana was called the 'Tiger Woman?' They have this tiger. I told them a few weeks ago that I was going to take possession of the tiger, and I've already built a cage on my farm. I'm going to pick it up



as they are probably going to do some jail time. They didn't give me any trouble when I said I was going to take it. Now, getting back to your question. I have heard that John Mallory's boy was involved. Everyone in Klimore thinks the same thing. I heard that there was drugs involved. I heard that one of the employees was involved in drugs, some way. That's the rumor that is floating around. ....The police seem to be lost. What have you heard?"

"About the same thing you heard. Do you know Bubba Mission and Dick Glenn?"

"Sure do."

"How about Doris Kirkland and Allie Sams?"

"Them too. All dope heads. Would do anything. They run around with Dick Glenn. Doris has a white van, and I heard the van was at the Klimore Comfort Inn and the chicken place the day of the killings."

"Have you talked with the police about this?"

"You are out of you mind, Finner. They have their own little group and would not, I repeat, would not, listen to anything anyone said about this."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx knocked on Marissa's door, with paper in hand. The door opened and Marissa had a cup of coffee for him.

"Get in here, stranger." She hugged and kissed him. "I'm sorry I haven't been very good company lately. I can meet myself coming and going, working so many hours."

"I waited until 11:00AM to call. I didn't think you would mind."

"Of course I don't mind. Anything in the paper that is interesting?"

"I didn't even open it. Let's sit down and look through it."

"Want some breakfast? Eggs, oatmeal, cereal. Anything?"

"I'll have some coffee only. I had a donut at the donut shop. Thanks anyway."

He opened up the paper. "Looks like the murders have the front page again. Also a little article about Matlock."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Van searched

### LAWMEN SEEK SLAYING CLUES

By Ellis Henderson  
Staff Writer

Klimore—Officials dusted for fingerprints in a stolen van found in a North Texas county, but a Texas Ranger said he “doubts very seriously” the vehicle was used in the abduction and killing of five people last Friday. He based his “opinion” on the fact that the van was seen at a Linview restaurant where it was stolen at 10:15pm.

....“We feel that since the place (Kinney’s Chicken) closed at 10pm and the people normally left by 10:20, it would have been impossible for the van to have been involved,” he said.

Earlier, another Texas Ranger said fingerprints and contents of the van would be analyzed in the next few days

“We are not encouraged or discouraged,” said the Rangers.

Besides the fingerprints, officials also recovered a bag of items from the van. Each will take several days to analyze.

Also, in yesterday’s briefing, Klimore Police Chief Hadley said tests had shown that blood that was found at the restaurant was human blood. Previously it was thought to be chicken blood.

The blood may have come from a cut or nose bleed before the abductors arrived or during an assault afterwards, he said. A cap was found on the floor, but a serious struggle didn’t seem to take place, Hadley said.

Hadley said police still had no major suspects or leads.

“There’s very little that’s new,” he said. ....“We’re still gathering information. We’re not at the point to be discouraged. We have a lot to run down. In my own mind I feel that we’re going to catch these people.”

....“There’s a bunch of rumors going around,” he said. “To my knowledge they’re not true.” He dispelled rumors that a suspect had been arrested.

Investigators with the Rashe County Sheriffs Department agreed that the investigation was going slowly. “We keep hoping something is going to turn up, and the pickings are slim. We’ve got a bunch of calls, but still nothing is developing.”



At least two weapons fired 11 shots into the five bodies, which were found fully clothed, officials said.

All law enforcement involved in the investigation met to exchange information, with the assistance of a fingerprint specialist from another county agency.

Klimore police continued to take fingerprints from employees of the Kinney Fine Chicken place who were not working last Friday. By identifying them, they hope to be able to single out the abductors' prints.

They are also talking to anyone who might have been a witness.

Marissa poured each another cup of coffee. "Yvonne has found, what she calls, a perfect mate. His name is Simon, er, something-or-other. A new doctor in town. She is on days now, and she can spend more time with her beau. She is the happiest I've ever seen her."

"Before we read what was written by Kerrie, I have been talking with some of the officers of the Klimore Police Department, and they don't have very much confidence in their new leader, Chief Dirk Hadley. After you read his remarks in the paper, it's plain to see that he is skimming the surface on his investigation. Or, the investigation that he is in charge of. His officer's say that he is running the show, and I might say, with very little results."

"It's hardly been a week, Jinkx. ....Maybe he is just being careful to get everything in proper perspective."

"I hope so." Jinkx didn't dare tell her what he thought and what inside information and documents that he did have.

"Looks like the meeting of the citizens of Larkmount and the petition they signed, didn't get off the ground. Look at this." He pointed to the article written by Kerrie.

### **LARKMOUNT PETITION**

Council won't consider list of names  
complaining about alleged speed trap.

**By Kerri Wintz**  
**Staff Writer**

When is a petition not really a petition?



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

When it is a copy, and not the original, says the Larkmount Mayor.

Therefore, a petition containing 248 signatures complaining about traffic enforcement policies of the Larkmount police won't be considered by the City Council, the Mayor said.

Henry Haskell, the pro bono attorney representing the petitioners, was incredulous when told of the Mayor's decision.

...."Does he have any law on that," Haskell asked when told of the Mayor's decision.

The Mayor said he didn't know whether there was anything in the law about the matter—but the council won't consider a copy.

"We will take the Mayor the original," Haskell said.

City Marshal Matlock's critics contend the department is harassing people and is intimidating young people and women.

...."When the council receives the 'original petition,' Haskell says that they would give the council time to act on the complaints, and would wait and see what the council does.

"If the council rejects the petition again, it will be presented to the Grabe County Commissioners Court."

"If neither the city nor county takes any action, the filing of a suit in Federal court is a possibility."

### LAWSUIT AGAINST LARKMOUNT ADDS WOES TO PROBLEMS

By Kerri Wintz  
Staff Writer

Former secretary files suit against City of Larkmount. Kandi Sims settles out of court for \$45,000.00. Mrs. Sims alleges in her suit that she was wrongfully terminated from her position as City Secretary after she notified the Grabe County District Attorney's Office that City Marshal Richard Matlock had made an arrest for DWI, changed his mind on the final paperwork to the DA's Office. He contacted the one he had arrested, traded the DWI for rental of his Lake Chickaree lake house. Mrs. Sims after discovering what was taking place, reported it to the DA. She was terminated because the Defendant could not financially afford her. After

## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

termination, the Defendant hired another in  
The out of court settlement resulted in the \$

"I didn't mean to ignore you on what  
glad she met someone for companionship  
lately. You're on my mind, you know"

"Oh, really?"

...."Really. I believe that I will  
invitation still stand?"

"Bacon and eggs OK? Is that all?"

"For now," answered Jinkx.

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx went to the courthouse early  
he had talked to Captain Hummer ab  
Sgt.'s door.

"Come in," he answered.

He entered the room and saw th

"Lt., Captain," he nodded.

The Captain stood up. "I'll see y  
He left the room.

Jinkx watched him as he left, th

"What goes on here, Rutherford

He answered reluctantly. "The  
Deputy Colley lost the report. It c  
what he still remembers, from the  
value contained in the report, in  
any possible suspects, as named :

He stared at the Lt. He kn  
"OK." He turned and walked to  
Sgt., then opened the door and  
and gritted his teeth. He knew tl  
There was something in it that  
some here at the courthouse  
individuals and their activities  
he thought. "For a little while."



termination, the Defendant hired another individual in the same position. The out of court settlement resulted in the \$45,000 payoff.

"I didn't mean to ignore you on what you told me about Yvonne. I'm glad she met someone for companionship. I have so much on my mind lately. You're on my mind, you know"

"Oh, really?"

...."Really. I believe that I will have some breakfast. Does the invitation still stand?"

"Bacon and eggs OK? Is that all?"

"For now," answered Jinkx.

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx went to the courthouse early to see Lt. Rutherford to find out if he had talked to Captain Hummer about the report. He knocked on the Sgt.'s door.

"Come in," he answered.

He entered the room and saw that Captain Hummer was there also.

"Lt., Captain," he nodded.

The Captain stood up. "I'll see you later, Barron."

He left the room.

Jinkx watched him as he left, then turned to the Sgt.

"What goes on here, Rutherford?"

He answered reluctantly. "The Captain says that he lost the report, or Deputy Colley lost the report. It cannot be found. He also says that from what he still remembers, from the report, there was nothing of significant value contained in the report, in reference to the murders in Klimore and any possible suspects, as named and described in the report."

He stared at the Lt. He knew he had to maintain his composure. "OK." He turned and walked to the door, turned around and looked at the Sgt., then opened the door and left. Outside, he leaned against the wall and gritted his teeth. He knew that he had to review his copy of the report. There was something in it that was being covered up, and he figured that some here at the courthouse didn't want his information on certain individuals and their activities to be made public. "I'll play their game," he thought. "For a little while."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

He went into the briefing room and seated himself in the front row, for a change.

Chick Colley came into the room, saw Jinkx, and started to the back. He looked behind him and saw that Jinkx was following him. When he sat down, Jinkx sat beside him. He glanced at Jinkx and then looked to the front as Sgt. Denny came into the room.

"Here's what we have on the murders in Klimore. Captain Sims of CID has ran off copies of all the information on hand." He handed the papers to the first row. "Take one and pass the others to the back."

Jinkx took a copy, turned to Colley and looked at him. "Do you have anything to add to this, Colley?"

"What makes you think I have something to add?"

"Didn't you take up where I left off? You know, working the drugs in the Klimore area."

"I don't have anything to add. I turned in my report to the Captain."

"Yeah, sure I heard how you begged him to let you work the drugs instead of me. You fuckin' suck ass, you. I will give you misery you won't believe."

Colley gulped, then looked straight ahead.

"The test for sergeant will be given tomorrow at 1:00PM. Those that are interested need to sign up right now, here's the sheet to sign." The Sgt. placed the paper on the desk. "Does anyone have anything to add?" He looked at Colley. "How about you, Colley? You are supposed to be working drugs in the Klimore area. Anything going on that we should know about?"

Jinkx looked at him and whispered. "Looks like they caught up with your ass, don't it?"

"I don't have anything to add, Sgt.." Colley looked down.

As he passed the desk he looked over the sheet that contained the names of those that had signed up for the test. He signed the paper and checked the assignments on the board. "South zone again. Good," he said to himself.



Deputy Ashley met Jinkx as he waited for the elevator. "I wanted to tell you that you would have been wasting your time on the test. Finnegan is the one. You know it, I know it."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx drove around the Klimore Comfort Inn, hoping to see Sgt. Benfelder. He then drove to the Klimore PD, and saw him in conference with Dwight Waskom, a detective.

The Sgt. motioned for Jinkx to join them. "You remember Waskom, don't you?"

Jinkx shook his outstretched hand. "I Sure do. How are you doing, Dwight?"

"Good. Let's go in my office." He led the way to his office. "Sit down. The Sgt. has told me that you had the Klimore Comfort Inn under surveillance when you were in that drug detail."

"That's right." Jinkx looked at the Sgt.

"He's OK. He's one of the good guys," he assured Jinkx.

"I turned in a report of my activities to Captain Hummer, the Patrol Captain, as he was the ramrod of this operation. I was told today that the report has been lost. I think that it was shit-canned by the Captain or someone in the courthouse. Benfelder did tell you who I suspect is involved in the killings, didn't he?"

"I have the same suspicions. Every time I bring it up, all I hear is, 'not the Senator's son. No way.' I think yes, he was definitely involved. I think he was one of the shooters." He looked at Jinkx. "You're pretty smart. Do you have a copy of that report you mentioned?"

"I do. I'll make you a copy and get it to you."

"Just a minute." Waskom dug to the bottom of a desk drawer, and brought out a folder. He took out some papers and handed them to Jinkx. "Unbutton your shirt and hide these papers when you leave here. Benfelder has told me that you already have some of the stuff. This is the very latest. You will communicate only with me, not these other detectives, not Chief Hadley, not the news media, and not the Rangers. Keep those, it's your copy. See what you can dig up."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Jinkx parked out by Highway 3 and Old Glidding Highway to look over the papers. The first document was a report of Det. Pearson.

I, Detective Sgt. Morgan Pearson, accompanied by Captain Matt Alvin of the Klimore Police Dept., went to the Pinwheel Motel located on Hwy. 25 North, and contacted Donna Yantis, room #116, at which time, we obtained a Consent to Search on a 2-door Ford, license number DC-2898, with Virginia Tags, we found and seized one (1) Revolver Cylinder, 6 shot (found in the trunk of this car) and received a Release from Donna Yantis. Released to Gene Ellis, Ranger.

Morgan Pearson  
Detective Sergeant  
Klimore Police Dept.

The next document was a witness statement:

My name is Toni McDowell, I am 23 years of age. I can read and write the English language. I completed the 11<sup>th</sup> grade.

At approximately 10:10pm last Friday, I was accompanied by my boyfriend at the Kinney Fine Chicken restaurant on Highway 25 to get some chicken. Upon arriving we parked in front of the restaurant, and there was a black girl working the front area. There was a white male sitting on the curb in front of the drive in sign. He looked like he was doped up and his head hanging down. He appeared to be approximately mid 20's, he was tall, slim, his hair was light brown in color. Standing inside was a white male standing in front of the counter. He appeared to be about 30 years of age, about 6'3" tall, 240 pounds, black hair, full beard and mustache, wearing a tan or brown western hat. He had on blue jeans with a western vest. We sat there approximately five minutes.

Some of the other documents pertained to call-ins on the hot line. He looked through them and read some that would be informative.

Police Department. Callis  
May I speak to Det. Stearman please?



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

151

Uh, he's not here, he didn't leave until about 4:00 this morning.

Okay. Uh, I'm a teacher and I have a student in my class the other day that had—

Penny?

I have her right here and she would like to talk to ya' ll.

All right. I'll be more than glad to talk to her.

Thank you. Just a minute.

Hello.

Penny, this is Det. Callis. How are you?

Fine. Thanks.

I understand you were at Kinney's Fine Chicken the other night.

Yes, I was.

All right. Uh, you were there with the football players from the College?

Is that right? Ya'll were there at the same time? What did you see there?

Okay, when I got there, there was this man standing inside. He was just standing by the door, with his hands in his pockets. When I walked in I looked at him...I thought it was really strange that he was standing there all by himself. But, really, at first, I didn't pay any attention to him so I just went ahead and talked to the football players that were there. And we stayed there and talked and laughed about 5 or 10 minutes at the most and then we all headed outside. And by this time the guy had gone outside. I guess the look I had gave him, you know, he got really nervous by it, so he just went outside right after I came in. He was standing outside by the sign.

The sign was off you know and so, when we went out I was noticing this even more. He was standing out there by the sign and the closer we got to the cars, he went further and further behind the sign. He was still watching us and by this time I was really watching him because I thought, you know, I was thinking this was really weird. What's he doing standing out there? This time of night. And so, I-ah-don't think anybody else, they noticed it. I was standing there and I was watching him and listening to what they were telling me and he saw me watching him. We made eye contact but I looked away real quick cause there was something about it, I don't know, it gave me a cold chill. And so, I just went ahead and got in the car and he was watching us till we drove off.

Do you remember what kind of clothes he had on?



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

He had on a pair of jeans. He had on a blue jacket that had some red and white on it.

Okay. Could it have been a blue vest with maybe a red and white shirt underneath it?

It could have been.

That's what one of our victims was wearing. That's why I was asking that. I have heard previously that this one victim had used narcotics and that's what I'm thinking. I talked to the football players and they couldn't give as good a description as you just gave. And he acted like-he was watching everybody. He was real jittery. I didn't think of him as being nervous or anything. I just thought that he was.....

High or something?

Uh-huh.

Did you see how—was he there when you got there?

He was there when I got there.

You didn't see how he came?

And, you know, the insurance place that's right on the same side of the street?

There was a van down there, but that van is parked there almost all the time.

Oh. okay.

I really didn't pay any attention to the cars that were parked around the place. There could have been something on the other side of the liquor store when I drove up. I really wasn't paying much attention to it.

Okay. Penny, is there some way we can get back in touch with you? At home?

Today. Today I'm going to be at the College most of the day then I'll be at work tonight.

Okay.

I talked to one of the Detectives from Chicago. I talked to him Monday night. And, I saw...for some reason, I guess it was the shock of what I heard the day after the killing. I saw this guy. I looked right into his face. I know exactly what he looks like. Is there some possible way hypnosis could help me remember?

You bet and we have a hypnotist here at the Police Department.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

153

Well, right now I'm just so scared. I was thinking about this morning. I was scared to drive myself down there.

Uh, well, now if he was high, he's not gonna remember you.

But, my car...

I wouldn't worry about anything like that. I really wouldn't.

Okay, well, when do you want me to come down there?

Uh, let our hypnotist call you. What days do you work?

Every day but Tuesday, Saturday and Sunday.

I have about an hour and a half break every day... Now, this session will probably take longer than that. When ever it's convenient for you I can take off to do this.

Sure. Let me get with our hypnotist, and I'll have him get in touch with you. Thank you very much Penny.

All right.

Police Department. Alvin.

Uh, I heard something today about what's going on a-round here.

Uh-huh

That y'all might want to know.

Okay.

Okay. All this is anonymous. Okay. I don't know where to begin. I heard that two boys came in and gave y'all a description of like they come in Kinney's Fine Chicken at closing time and saw a guy in there hanging a-round. Is that true.

Some of it is, yes ma'am.

Yeah, well, this guy. you know, that supposedly saw it-they say he's scared to come up and say anything, you know, he don't want to get into it. But, uh, you know, if you want to talk to him or something I might could tell you where he hangs out.

Okay.

Okay, you know the Daylight Club?

Right, yes ma'am.

Okay, he hangs out at the Daylight Club regularly from what I gather.

That's where you can really find him.

Right. Every little bit helps. You know, we need something real bad, you know.

Yeah, I know what you mean. We're all behind y'all.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Great. We appreciate it a whole lot. Goodbye  
Bye bye.

Jinkx looked over twenty or thirty of the transcribed tape documents but discounted the majority of them as they contained information that was not relevant to the murders, that he could determine at first reading. He put the remainder of the documents in his brief case, and would study them carefully on his own time. He patrolled his assigned area the rest of the night without incident. He said to himself: "Every hoodlum in Grabe County is afraid to get out on the road because of the murders. Dope dealers and possible suspects might get pulled over for questioning."

\*\*\*\*\*

He had slept late as he stayed up for a while after he came in from his shift. He studied his notebook that he had in the Police Academy preparing for the sergeant's test to be given in the afternoon. He knew that Ashley was right when he said that Finnegan would be the next sergeant. It burned his ass to know that all the idiots, including himself, would waste their time on a wasted effort. He finally got up enough energy to get dressed, and then stop by the Whistle Stop to read the paper and get something to eat before he went to the courthouse to take the test.

As he entered the Whistle Stop he took a seat in the area where Tom Pell was seated with some of his cohorts. They stared at him, and were on the end of their finger pointing. Jinkx stared back until they turned their attention to their own business. He ordered coffee and a BLT. He opened the paper and read the latest on the murders.

### PSYCHIC OFFERS NO LEADS AFTER VISITING SCENE

By Ellis Henderson  
Staff Writer

Klimore----A psychic was taken to the field where five people abducted were found dead, but she provided no new information, a Rashe County Sheriffs investigator said.



The woman, who lives 100 miles from the area, and was not identified told authorities the number of victims and the number of killers.—information they already had or were reasonably sure of. She was to call Rashe County authorities today and possibly go to the field again with another psychic.

“You never know what might develop out of it,” he said. “It’s worth a try. I’ve seen cases where they didn’t turn up anything.”

He said Sheriff Mel Strange suggested they contact the woman who has helped provide leads for the department in the past. Several hours were spent in the field.

Authorities haven’t recovered any jewelry from the victims, which may hurt her efforts to describe the killers. She likes to hold jewelry while giving information about them.

Texas Rangers, who are also investigating the case, couldn’t be reached for comment, and previously, Texas Ranger Ellis stated that “he wasn’t in favor of using psychics.”

....Klimore Police Chief Hadley has stated that “the status of the investigation is about the same. I’m sounding like a broken record, I realize. I understand there are a lot of rumors going around... that there are supposed to be people in custody. To my knowledge they’re not true, and we don’t have anybody in custody.”

“There’s no way of really knowing how long it’s going to take (to clear the case). We’re working around the clock. Everything is being done that is humanly possible.”

He emphasized that the \$50,000.00 reward for information leading to the conviction of the person or persons responsible for the murder of five people would not increase and that anyone with information should come forward now instead of waiting for the amount to grow.

He said he was pleased with the number of calls received at the police station on the special hot line number, and that authorities are checking every lead.



**CHAPTER 6**

There was seven deputies taking the sergeant's test. They spread out in the briefing room, taking the test questions and settling in to do their best.

Paul Finnegan was sitting up close to the front talking to Captain Hummer who handed out the questions. Both laughed aloud, getting the attention of all in the room.

Lt. Rutherford was at the desk. "OK. It's time to start. You have an hour and a half."

Jinkx skimmed over the questions and was going to answer the easiest first. None of them seemed what you would call easy. He decided to answer them in order.

1. What is the definition of Probable Cause?

A reasonable grounds for suspicion, which is supported by circumstances sufficiently strong in themselves to lean a cautious man (Peace Officer) to believe that the party is guilty of the offense or that a crime is about to be committed.

2. What are the 5 W's in the solving of a crime?

Who?

What?

Where

When ?

Why?

3. To be tried 'de novo' means:

Afresh or anew

4. The place where an action at law is brought is called:

Venue

5. Latent prints are characterized by the fact they are:

Invisible



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

157

6. Necrophilia most nearly means:  
Intercourse with the dead

He answered the rest of the questions on the test. Such questions as:

List the ten objectives of the Texas Penal Code.

List the seven defenses found in chapter 8 of the TPC.

Define "elements of offense" set forth in Ch. 1. TPC.

List the types of criminal homicides.

Give the elements of sexual assault.

Give the five elements of aggravated sexual assault.

Describe and list the elements of terroristic threat.

What is meant by solicitation of a child?

List the elements of Robbery and Aggravated Robbery.

What acts constitute a violation of 37.12 TPC

Define escape.

Under what conditions does giving a false alarm or report become a third degree felony?

What grade of offense has been committed by one who violates 42.11?

What are the three areas wherein weapons are expressly prohibited?

Is the taking of a child into custody considered an arrest?

Jinkx answered the rest of the questions within the required time. In fact, he was the first one who finished the test. He handed the papers to the Captain, but he motioned for him to put them on the desk. He winked at Lt. Rutherford as he started to leave the room.

He still had about an hour to kill before he had to report back to be interviewed for the position he took the test for. On his way past the front desk his name was called by Sgt. Cramer. He motioned for Jinkx to join him in one of the offices.

"What's up, Lowell?"

"Did you hear about what Finnegan done last night?"

"No, I didn't. What happened?"



"He made another one of those arrests that required the prisoner to have to go to the hospital. He laid him out, I hear. The guy is still there, and since he is under arrest, so Finnegan says, there is a guard there with him now and we will have to furnish a guard tonight."

"That is no surprise to me. How many does this make now, two, three? I lost count. What are the circumstances surrounding this one? Flashlight, slapper, pistol, what? I doubt if the prisoner, or shall we say, 'victim', offered as much resistance as always contained in the reports that he makes after he makes this kind of arrest. I saw him take an axe handle and beat a poor black man, who was handcuffed, on the head and shoulders. He had to go to the hospital too."

"I thought that I would tell you this. It won't be in the papers or broadcast around here."

"Thanks, I appreciate the information."

It was his turn to be interviewed for the sergeant's position. He was finally called into the Captain's office. The ones who were going to interview the applicants were the Captain, Lt. Rutherford, Sgt. Akers, Sgt. Denny and Sgt. Cramer.

"Deputy Finner," said the Captain. "You're in the elevator taking a prisoner to the jail. The Sheriff calls you on the elevator phone and says that he wants to see you right now, immediately. No ifs, no ands, no buts. What do you do?"

"I tell the Sheriff—."

"You don't tell the Sheriff. He tells you," interrupted the Captain. "The Sheriff wants to see you now. What do you do?"

"I continue on to the jail with the prisoner," replied Jinkx.

"But the Sheriff says he wants to see you now," repeats Sgt. Akers.

"He has to wait," said Jinkx.

"You're saying that the Sheriff has to wait on you?" asked Lt. Rutherford.

"He has to wait. If he can't get any of you supervisors off your ass to help him, or to kiss his ass, or whatever it is you do when you're with him, he has to wait."

"Look, Deputy Finner. This is just hypothetical. We are trying to see how you would react to pressure," explained the Captain.

"Pressure? You ta yellow. You don't kn You guys have never going on in the real bullshit. Kindergarten sergeant is going to b  
"The interview is

He filed into the were seated the Ca evaluation of the se interview of the app Deputy Finnegan be

Jinkx stood up. test.?"

The Captain lo had a perfect score factored in to help was selected."

Lt. Rutherford this topic. "We ha murders. Nothing already have, let's

Jinkx stood up or misplaced, the around the Klimo The information v van. I observed th detail when it wa might have some

"I really, ah, Department won anything to add. ago."

Everyone lo about the same



“Pressure? You talk to me about pressure. You kids are still shittin’ yellow. You don’t know what pressure is. I’m ex military, remember? You guys have never been outside Grabe County. You don’t know what’s going on in the real world out there. This is not an interview. This is bullshit. Kindergarten stuff. Anyway, everybody knows who the next sergeant is going to be. You don’t have to put on a show.”

“The interview is over,” stated the Captain.

He filed into the briefing room with the other deputies, and after they were seated the Captain entered the room. “Listen up. After careful evaluation of the sergeants test, and,” he looked straight at Jinkx, “the interview of the applicants, it is decided by the Sheriff, and myself, that Deputy Finnegan be selected as the next sergeant. Any questions?”

Jinkx stood up. “Captain, who had the highest score on the written test.?”

The Captain looked through the test questions. “Only one applicant had a perfect score, and that was Deputy Finner. Some other things were factored in to help determine who was to be selected. Deputy Finnegan was selected.”

Lt. Rutherford stood up, as he decided it was time to get away from this topic. “We have no further information on the Kinney Fine Chicken murders. Nothing to pass on. If you have any thing to add to what we already have, let’s hear it.”

Jinkx stood up again “In the report that I gave the Captain, that he lost or misplaced, there was mention of a white van that I observed in and around the Klimore Comfort Inn and the Kinney Fine Chicken business. The information we got from CID Captain Sims did not include the white van. I observed this, and other information, while I was working the drug detail when it was first implemented. Since Deputy Colley took over, he might have something to add.” Jinkx sat down and grinned at Colley.

“I really, ah, have nothing to add. The officers of the Klimore Police Department won’t tell me anything. and, I have not, ah, haven’t—got anything to add. It’s all in my report I gave to the Captain a few days ago.”

Everyone looked at the Captain. “Deputy Colley’s report contained about the same thing he said. Nothing. Your assignments are on the



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

board. Oh, before I forget. I want to remind you that the DEA and other agencies are still conducting a drug investigation on FM125 around Champ Lane. Stay away from there unless you are sent there. Oh yeah, one more thing. We have a prisoner at the Grand Samaritan Medical Center. We need to furnish a guard for this shift. Lt. Rutherford will fill this requirement." The captain left the room.

Lt. Rutherford looked around.

Jinkx stood up and pointed to his chest.

Lt. Rutherford pointed to Jinkx. "Deputy Finner will take the first watch. Two hours. Sgt. Denny." he turned to the Sgt. "You can fill in the other hours of the shift to guard the prisoner."

He went to the hospital and saw Marissa first, before he went to room 121 to guard the prisoner.

"Are you here to guard the prisoner?" she asked.

"I want to see you first. Would you drive to Klimore with me in the morning? I hate to ask, as I know you need the rest. It's important."

"Sure I will. What time do you want to go?"

"About 10:00AM. That too early?"

"That's fine. I'll see you when you finish guarding the prisoner. We'll have a cup of coffee, OK? You might not like the condition the prisoner is in. I think the deputy who made the arrest went a little too far. I'll see you later." She nodded. "I'll be in this section." She pointed to a row of rooms.

Jinkx relieved one of the day shift deputies, Rick Martin. "How's the prisoner, Rick?"

"Lumps and bruises. ....I'm beginning to wonder about the arrests Finnegan makes. His prisoners seem to wind up in the hospital. I've talked to this guy, Fred Lane Stamper, and he does state that he was handcuffed when Finnegan hit him. And, I believe him." Deputy Martin nodded to Jinkx and walked away.

He entered the room and looked at the prisoner. He pulled up a chair. "Can I get you anything, Mr. Stamper?"



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

161

When the prisoner turned his face to Jinkx you could see the wrapping around his head. The blood seeped through the bandage. "No thanks. I think the Sheriffs Department has done enough for me."

"Can we talk man to man, and forget that I am a Deputy Sheriff?"

"Do I have a choice? Look at me. I can't run away." He raised his hand and Jinkx could see the handcuff on his hand that was cuffed to the bed. "The only time I get this off," he rattled the cuff, "is when you take it off when I go to the bathroom."

"I'm going to say what I have to say, then I'll be quiet. You are not the first one that has been hospitalized by Deputy Paul Finnegan. I think, no, I know, Finnegan is very brutal to his prisoners. Could I get you to tell me what happened?"

"Sure. I'll tell anyone that will listen to me. I had been stopped by another deputy a little bit before this deputy, what's his name, ah, Finnegan, came to my house. As I said, the other deputy let me go. I was pretty drunk. He let me go since I was only a block from my house. I was sort of pissed off because he had stopped me. I took my rifle, a 22, and fired a few shots up into the air. I see this sheriff's car coming down the road and he stops at my house. This deputy, Finnegan, says that I was shooting at him. I shot up into the air. He got in my face and pushed me around and kept saying I shot at him. He said he wanted to search me, and told me to put my hands on the hood of his car. I laid the rifle on the porch and put my hands on his car. All of a sudden he handcuffed me and turned me around. I struggled a little, naturally. He took out his gun and hit me on the head and face several times. I was in the twilight zone and didn't know what was going on. I remember him hitting me many times more. I had been drinking, so this didn't help me at all. I came to this morning in this bed. I still am groggy, and I don't know if it's from the beating or the drugs they gave me for the pain when they sewed up my head. That's the story."

"I believe every word that you are saying. You should get a good civil rights attorney and take someone's ass to the cleaners."

"In this damn county? No one would take a case against these fuckers in this county."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"Go outside the county. Try another city, a very big city with big time lawyers. Someone who has no connections to these ass holes around here."

"I can't think at the moment. What did you say your name was?"

"Jinkx Finner," he replied.

"I don't think I can remember that. Would you write it down?"

"Sure." He wrote his name in his notebook. He tore out the page and looked around the room. "Where do you want me to put it?"

"Open up the closet door and stuff it in my pants pocket."

"I know that when something happens like this it makes all Peace Officers look bad. We're not all that way."

"Right now, I couldn't agree with you. Just maybe."

Jinkx caught up with Marissa when he had finished his two hours guarding the prisoner. "Say, lady. Do we have time for a cup of coffee?"

"I'm due for a ten minute break. Lets do that."

As they relaxed Jinkx asked about Yvonne.

"I think she dumped the man of her dreams. She found out that he was still married, just separated. He kept talking about his wife when they were together. She told him that his wife, him and her couldn't fit in the same bed."

He laughed with Marissa. "That's not funny," he said.

They both snickered then burst into laughter.

\*\*\*\*\*

They walked from her apartment toward their cars. "Let's take your car," said Jinkx. "We just might drive by a place that I don't want to be seen near."

Marissa stopped. "Are we playing detective, deputy?"

"Could be. I want to check on something on the way to Klimore. Want me to drive?"

Jinkx turned off Highway 4 onto FM125 and drove slow. As he neared Champ Lane he turned to Marissa. The DEA is supposed to be conducting a drug investigation in this area. I'm just looking."

"I see a couple of cars on the left up there."

"Don't point," said Jinkx. "And, don't stare either. We don't want to be noticed." As he drove past the two parked cars he cut his eyes, but



didn't turn his head. "Just as I thought. Agents Lyle Farmer and Gene Perry. Sheriffs Department and KPD."

"Is that what they call an investigation?" asked Marissa. "Sitting in plain sight with their feet out the window?"

"I guess it's their way. Something strange going on here. Oh, well. Let's go to the Klimore PD. I have something for a detective. I might leave you alone for a few minutes, OK?"

"OK, but not too long."

They entered the police department, and Jinkx asked for Detective Waskom. Waskom was paged by the dispatcher.

Detective Waskom came from his office and greeted Jinkx. Jinkx introduced Marissa.

"I think I'll have some coffee," said Marissa. "I saw a coffee room as we came in. OK?"

"Sure. I'll be right with you," he replied. Jinkx and the detective sat down and Jinkx took some papers from inside his shirt and handed them to the detective. "A copy of the report when I was working drugs."

The detective handed him some papers. "Not very much to go on. Maybe I can tie your investigation into what we have. We are getting lots of calls from all over. There is a list of suspects in those papers I gave you. Our suspect is number four. There's plenty more suspects that need to be looked at. We have six people answering the phones. Maybe something will develop soon."

Jinkx stood up, and put the papers inside his shirt. "I'll see you later, Dwight."

Marissa was driving when they drove back past FM125 and Champ Lane. ....Farmer and Perry were still sitting in a greenish Mustang with their feet hanging out the window. "Do we go back to Linview now?" she asked.

"Let's go back to your place." He changed his mind. "No. Let's go to the Chalon and eat Chinese food. It is Friday, isn't it?"

"Yes, it is. We haven't eaten there in quite a long time. Are we still playing detective?"

"We're just going to be nosey. Let's go see if the 'Fortune Cookie Boys' still meet there."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Jinkx and Marissa were seated, and had ordered, when the "gang" started filing in. Tom Pell, Constable Kiley French, Lou Klinger, a Commissioner, Cal Jones, J.P. Jenkins, Lance Lincoln, Andy Callahan, a District Judge and some that Jinkx did not recognize. When their food was being served, the Sheriff came through the door. He didn't look around, and went directly to the side room.

"Looks like the gang's all here. Eat, drink, be merry."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx studied the documents given him by the detective. The suspect list was interesting. At least some of those involved in the investigation had done a little leg work. "Probably Detective Waskom," he thought. He studied the list, trying to see if anyone was left out.

Activities of suspects on date of murders.

1. G.V.—Borrowed Ford from Tiny's—returned 0930—got drunk.
2. S.V.
3. J.M.—Was at girlfriend's house at N.L.
4. John Mallory, Jr.—At Pinwheel Motel, Rm. 16 with Donna Yantis. Witnesses-D.T. & M.B.
5. S.W.—At 13 club 1700-2400—then W. W. club until 0200.
6. J.W.—Statement of W. concurs with 16, 17 & 18.
7. G.R.—R. & L.L. in Linview D. Club 2015 till 0200.
8. B.S.—Was home all night with wife D.
9. G.S.—Was with J.T. at C.T.'s trailer house in N.L.
10. J.J.—Was home watching Blazing Saddles on TV.
11. A.W.—Went to L.C. football game. Game over 2200.
12. J.W.—Was home watching Blazing Saddles on TV.
13. J.D.W.—Was at J.J.'s home—watching Blazing Saddles till 2130—went home continued to watch movie.
14. C.R.—Was suited out for L.C. football team and game.
15. D.R.M.—Was at C.T. in N.L.—left app. 2300 & went home.
16. D.R.W.—Was at 13 Club—then with J.W., S. & M.K. went to Tyler
17. W.F.V. Jr.—Was at Kinney Fine Chicken till 2100 then to 13 Club with #18, #17 M.K., #6 & 16—went to Tyler.
18. R.B.—Statement of B.'s concurs with statement of #17.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

165

19. J W. T.—Was at B.P. Club, Hwy. 27 then to S. Lounge till 0200.
20. M.W.W.—Was with J.T. on the night in question.
21. L.C.—Was with J.T. on the night in question.
22. G.G.—Was with J.T. on the night in question.
23. R.J.—Was with wife, L. & D.C. and J.J.
24. B.L.—On the night in question-worked 23 hours on a rig then stayed in the L-of-L motel.
25. D.W.S.—
26. D.H.—Contacted Ranger in San Angelo and will get back Suspect was working on job 22<sup>nd</sup>, 23<sup>rd</sup>, , 24<sup>th</sup>
27. J.W. McD.— overnight campout off Hwy. 4. Checked by Ranger R.W.
28. J.B.—Overnight campout-off Hwy. 4. Checked by Ranger R.W.
29. R.P.—Interviewed in Grabe County jail by Ranger E. was in Linview date in question-alibi sounds fair.
30. E. W.—Reports he was home with wife and kids S. City. Has talked with Sheriff Strange.
31. S.H.—
32. D.W. T.—J.'s Supper Club on 25 with manager G.D. and others.
33. J.M.—Was home in Klimore with girlfriend.
34. F.G.—Disabled at apartment in Linview.
35. B . L . D.—
36. B . S .—
37. G.D.—Associated with #26, #29, #30.
38. R.L.W.—Was T.E W. at 25 & 91. Works at 0'Flex. Worked day in question. Has no vehicle.
39. L.B.—He was en route to Klimore from Sioux City N.M., Jamie Jensen's brother lives in his trailer house.
40. B.A.H.—Friend of H., was in Shreveport, La. with girlfriend, B.F.
41. J.F.S.—Was arrested near Houston. No weapons or vehicle.
42. M.L.—Was arrested near Houston. No weapons or vehicle.
43. B.L.—Fugitive.
44. D.G.Jr.—Fugitive.
45. S . H —
46. J . C . S .—



# HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

47. M.E.S.—Purchased some 357 shells. Questioned. Pistol test fired and eliminated. Alibi checked out.
48. B.L.G. Was camping in P. County with wife and friends.
49. D.W.—Reported to be in Oak Haven ward in M. Texas.
50. G. B. \_\_\_\_\_
51. J. D. R. \_\_\_\_\_
52. S. M. H. \_\_\_\_\_
53. K. T. S. \_\_\_\_\_
54. A. R. \_\_\_\_\_
55. A. B. \_\_\_\_\_
56. A. B. D. Jr. \_\_\_\_\_
- Jinks studied the subject list and added some names.
57. Allie Sims \_\_\_\_\_
58. Dick Glenn \_\_\_\_\_
59. Kline Willie Parks \_\_\_\_\_
60. Donna Yantis \_\_\_\_\_
61. Bubba Mission \_\_\_\_\_
62. Doris Kirkland \_\_\_\_\_

No. 63. \*John Mallory Sr.?? No. 64 \*”Big “E”?? No. 65 \*Barton??

He looked at the suspect list again. “That about makes it complete,” he said. The psychics’ input caught his attention, but it had to be proven to him that they actually had the power that they claimed to have. He studied their reports. One report looked like it was teletyped to the police station.

VDL CORRECTIONS TEXT

10 0 UNKNOWN

J30C5

CA.M. T.F. AD

ORDERED LINES 018: ACTUAL LINES

000; # COLUMNS 01

0 03505,rutn.cn

1 QL

2 QL

3 QL

4 UF117,309 GL



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

167

5 GL  
6 EP  
7 EP  
8 EP  
9 LP  
10 UF12O EP  
11 A Florida psychic says the Klimore murders were  
12 committed by three men in a brown van and the crime  
13 stemmed from a grudge—not a robbery. FP  
14 "It was between two people, one on the inside  
15 and one on the outside," she said. "It was a grudge thing  
16 One of the men, a former employee, was known by  
17 four of the five victims. His accomplices were unfa-  
18 miliar to the victims. EP  
19 According to the psychic, Minnie Talley's daughter,  
20 Karnie Necks, has information about the crime, but  
21 may not be aware of it.  
22 "Something happened that made (Karnie) suspicious  
23 early in the day," the psychic said. EP  
24 She also believes one of the killers "cares a great  
25 deal' about Karnie and made sure she would not be  
26 at the restaurant. EP  
27 "Karnie was not to be killed," she said. EP  
28 The psychic believes the murderers were circling  
29 the restaurant "Like sharks" 5 p.m. Friday. (P  
30 They pulled up in a brown van and entered the res-  
31 taurant through the back door where Mrs. Howell had  
32 taken something (perhaps garbage) outside. The engine  
33 was not turned off during the crime., and the psychic  
34 says she wondered why the people who lived in back of  
35 the restaurant did notice something unless they  
36 thought it was a delivery. EH  
37 After abducting the victims, the killers "knew  
38 exactly where they were going to take them," she  
39 said. EP  
40 The field is not too far from where they have taken



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

41 other people, she said. Other bodies were beneath  
42 the ground (buried), she said. (vague on this) EP  
43 The victims were placed on the ground after they  
44 were killed rather than lined up and shot, she said  
45 One victim died of other causes, possibly a cerebral  
46 hemorrhage or heart attack, she said EF

47 EP

48 EP

49 EP

50 RT Van Description: NR Brown, possibly a Dodge  
51 Front end slopes toward windshield, may be air  
52 conditioned. Seems to have a rubber guard, not  
53 sure if this is around inside or outside. Has two  
54 back doors, possibly side doors.  
55 Also has dents on right front. A metal rack is on  
56 top or used to be on top. Van often is seen near  
57 where baseball is played. EP

58 LP

59 EP

60 EP

61 PT Killer description: EF

62 NR EF

63 RT former employee: NR was rude to people. Would  
64 say: "Now look here, Buddy." He did not address  
65 individuals by their first names. Also he often  
66 bumped into things, perhaps drinking or on drugs.  
67 bumped his right shoulder or something when he en-  
68tered restaurant Friday night.

69 LP

70 other comments that may apply to any of the three:  
71 RT L\* NR one chews on a pencil constantly. EP  
72 RTL\* NR Important: one works or used to work with  
73 carpeting. TR one is "easily broken," might talk. EP  
74 RTC\* NR one was bleeding from the hand or arm  
75 when he entered Friday night. EP  
76 RT L\* MR important: one of the three lives near or



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

169

77 knows about a funeral home and a hearse. this is  
78 not a reference to going to funeral of victims. EP  
89 RTL\* NR "Chet" may be the name of one. EP  
80 RTL\* NR not more than three years difference in age  
81 of killers.  
82 EP  
83 other EP  
84 \* NR one victim had broken arm. forearm. Did not  
85 happen the night of the murder, but she'd like to  
86 know if the autopsy shows a broken bone. EP  
87 RTL\* NR "DeSoto" is somehow important—could  
88 be street, surname, location. EP  
89 RTL\* ER name "Martin" may figure in. EP  
90 RTC\* NR a name ending in "La" and possibly begin—  
91 ing with an "S" is important, Sounds something  
92 like "Spago La" LP  
93 RTL\* NR Livery Stable also figures in somewhere. EP  
94 RTL\* MR "vestibule" may be important, perhaps  
95 someone wearing a vest, or a word sounds alike.  
96 RTL\* Morey Lane important in this. EP  
97 RTL\* NR Sammie or Sammy is involved. EF  
98 RTL\* Mra big stick or baseball bat was in Kinney  
99 Fine building. EP  
100 EP  
101 EP

Jinkx pondered over this teletype looking message. It demanded more study. He had another psychic's message on hand. She had been in touch with the Klimore Police Department several times, and the transcribed tape message was of her psychic findings.

Ruth Fisher, from Hialeah, Florida, a psychic, phoned again Sat. afternoon, concerning her recent readings on the Kinney Fine Chicken murders and her conversation with me, the notes from the conversation are as follows:



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

1. Me: Will the killer be caught soon?

Mrs. Fisher: He's going to do it again. Not the same type...I'd like them to get him before he gets to the gas station and shoots the man in the face.

This statement came at the end of conversation.

I think it surprised her as much as it did me.

Said the station will be near a dip in the highway on the left as you travel East. Orange or yellow station, well-lighted and maintained.

The rest of this is in the order she told me

2. Names Erasmus and "Jackie" in quotes comes to mind.
3. Killer "wears a western-type hat of light weight." He has broad, Negroid nose. Swarthy complexion. Short. 5'7" or 5'8".
4. Lippincott and Seena two more names that come to mind.
5. "I need to know...who has the M-16.
6. The killer is a "psychopath that fools everyone. Nobody knows he's "whacked out." His two accomplices were obedient that night "because they admire his commanding self confidence."
7. Killer's father is in a penal institute, and has worked at one or somehow worked in the fringes of law enforcement. "His mother is deranged and or dead. I don't often use that term."
8. Described killer as "short, Napoleonic, Hitler-like."
9. He uses the vernacular of Flip Wilson.
10. He works or lives in this area. Has been in an institution or somehow connected to one. Military or penal.
11. He is where there's a small amount of corn growing." "It's not that difficult to find."

12. The following is what she said that Jamie Jenson told her. I get the impression she looked at his photo and this is what came up: She took down exact quotes.

"One of them used a car I had in my possession. He used it once some time ago." ... "He was going to burn down the place. (She assumes he meant Kinney's Fine Chicken.) He has set fires before. Nothing too big. But it is known. "One has leg significantly and noticeably shorter



than the other. Karnie should be hypnotized by a competent therapist and it should be recorded.”

13. Where is there a dip in the highway and Spanish moss? That's significant.

14. Blood “was not chicken blood.” She said it is blood from one of the killers who hurt his hand or arm when he was “obtaining vehicle.” (At this point she had all the early clips that did not say blood was determined to be human.)

15. Said the killers are not feeling fear. Said the ring leader has had the murders in the works for 4 years, but she didn't elaborate. You must go back into Lane's background.

17. “Karnie is our key..

(Sunday night I had left a message for the Texas Rangers at Rashe County Sheriffs about her vision that gas station attendant would be killed.)

“I can't go along with this psychic bull shit,” thought Jinkx. “They didn't add up anything positive. Mere guesswork. Speculation. These psychics are as confused as the police.”

He studied the psychics' reports over and over but at this time could make no connection at all with what they visualized and what actually happened. He didn't discount all that the reports said.

He thumbed through the rest of the documents given to him by the detective. He found more of the transcribed tape conversations between the police and calls from citizens that supplied the police with leads on the murders.

Police Department. Callis.

Yes. I want to give you a tip.

All right, sir.

Have you had the tip already about the late model Chevrolet Pickup?

No Sir. I don't believe I've heard it.

Okay, well, it's white and it's got brown, sort of tan sides, striped on the side of it. It's a late model.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

It's a white pickup and it's a Chevrolet. It's between an 80-82 model. And, uh, this pickup was noticed at the Kinney Fine Chicken at the same time where it happened. I'm not going to say it's nothing important and what, but I, thought I'd let you know about it.

Okay, we appreciate it.

Cause I wanna help you all I can. That's all I know.

Police Department. Callis.

Yes Sir.

Will you be interested in information? (Caller stuttered)

Yes Sir.

Okay, I don't know if it means anything or not, but I've got two friends that was up there night that between 10-10:30 P.M. and they didn't realize what was going on until the other day when they read the paper and said they seen them. You know when it said a white Van?

Uhh-huh.

Okay. There was a white Van up there that night between 10-10:30 P.M. Because they was going inside the Kinney Fine Chicken place and they noticed the front lights were out, but, they went in there to get a bucket of chicken and when they got there they realized that the front lights of the building was out and when, he said they went through the carryout way. O-kay. When they went around the back side, they noticed the back door was open. And they drove by, they looked in there but they didn't see nobody. But there was a white Van parked there right beside the chicken place. It wasn't in the parking lot, but it was-you know, when you go around the side of it. There's a little driveway right there on the street? Okay. That Van was parked on the corner right there beside the same curb the building was on. And they didn't realize what was going on at the time so they was either there at the time it was going on or



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

173

either they just-they couldn't have missed them if they used a Van they were in you see. And they don't want their name to be known because they don't want to get involved in this. well, what we really need to do is talk to these people and find out what kind of Van that was. It was a white Van.

I know, but we need to talk in depth to them because those people may have been inside that vehicle at the time he saw it.

Well, the Van was sitting there. I tried to get em' to tell me if they seen anybody in the Van at the time, but they don't remember see? I mean they're serious-they're not pulling no prank or nothing.

That was on the street right there beside it?

Uh-huh. Right there beside it. Yeah. You know, say you're going from 25 toward Mc Dees. I mean, I'm talking about from say from the College like you're going North, when you turn right beside it. Okay, the Van was on the left just below the entrance that went into the back side of it.

Was it facing the Klimore Comfort Inn?

Yeah. I'm sure it was.

Okay. See we really need to talk to these people and see what we can find out. Get em' to call.

They said the only way they would talk to ya'll would be to talk to ya'll in person.

That's fine. They can come down here anytime 24 hours a day.

Where at? At the Police Station? Klimore?

Well, I hope we've got some leads for you. I finally talked them into letting me come up here and call you.

Okay. Yeah, tell them to come on up.

See they don't want ya'll to think they're suspects.

Right. Right.

They're scared.

No. We don't think they're suspects. We need their in-



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

formation .

As long as their names doesn't get in the paper...

Right. None of this is gonna get in the paper.

Sir, I'll tell them.

Police Department. Callis.

Uh, could you take some information to this? It's strictly a rumor, but I do know that as a rumor, Jake Howell was found in bed with somebody a few months ago. Dolly Hinds was her name. I mean that's who he was supposed to have been with.

Okay.

And, uh, I'm pretty certain that Dolly was involved with Marijuana too. And, uh, Jake was evidently having financial problems. Now, of course, there might not be anything involved in this.

Who found them in bed together? Jake and Dolly. Do you know offhand?

I think her husband did.

Dolly's husband? Do you know who he is?

Danny Hinds. And he found them in bed, now, I'm not certain. I was told that they were found in bed together and ya know, he was having an affair evidently.

All right Sir. I appreciate the information.

Okay.

Police Department. Callis.

Uh, Mr. Callis. This is Bull Brandon here. And on those five slayings at the Kinney Fine Chicken. Uh, have you folks checked the back record on the people that worked since Minnie Talley has been manager?

Yes sir, we have.

Did all of them check out good?

Well, that's what we're checking on now.

The reason I'm bringing this up-Minnie Talley had a pretty bad temper, and she had a pretty bad attitude.

Uh, I used to clean the grease trap down there, and, uh, they had grease in the line one day and I spent



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

175

two hours down there trying to get it unstopped and I did-which they poured more grease down it that night and it stopped it back up. But she called my wife, I was out on another job the next day, and which I just charged her \$10.00 for the two hours and then I turned around and bought \$9.50 worth of chicken. But, she called my wife the next day cussing and calling me a thief and everything else, so I called her and told her to get somebody else to take care of her service, but she had a pretty bad attitude. Uh, don't get me wrong. I hated to see this happen to her. But I thought it might help ya'll on a lead. That if maybe it was somebody that worked there.

That she had made mad?

That she had mouthed off to.

Yeah. Yeah, I see what you're talking about Mr. Brandon .

Doggone it. Ya know I didn't get mad at her or give her any words or anything, I just....

Wasn't going back. Yeah.

She cussed my wife and cussed over the telephone and called me a thief and...But anyway, if you want to check on them runs, that's fine. I thought I'd holler at you. I appreciate you calling.

You bet.

Thank you sir.

Police Department. Callis.

Uh, Mr. Callis, do I have to give you my name?

No ma'am. If you don't want to.

I wondered if the police considered looking a little closer into Minnie Talley's family. What I mean by now... I'm talking about Karnie and Timmy. Now Karnie and Timmy did not get along with their mother at all. And they had some of the toughest looking buddies you have ever met and they lived In here last year or year before last. Timmy and Karnie lived in a



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

little house down here on Meeker Street on the corner of Meeker and Galen Street with a bunch of hippies that were tough, tough, tough. And they would have had easy access to get men to that Kinney Fine Chicken place.

Okay. All right. Well, I appreciate it.

But you see. I lived by them. I lived by them when they lived with their mother and I lived by—I still live here and I know about them all living down here with other men, boys, and everything else. They were a tough, tough bunch. So, if you haven't considered just looking a little closer at their home, then maybe it might surprise you what you might find.

Police Department.

I need to speak with Captain Alvin.

This is Captain Alvin. Go ahead.

Okay. This is Foley Tanner. I work for Kinney's Fine-Aah, Aah, speak up, I can't hear you.

Chicken. Okay I'm in Big Spring. There was a girl that called named Buchannon at Kinney's Fine Chicken and said that, she asked if there was still a reward out for the people that shot the people and we told her we didn't know. Anyway, she told us that she couldn't talk right then, but she was gonna call back. She said she knew who the people were and that she knew where they were, etc. and so forth. She wouldn't leave a phone number and she acted real nervous, like she couldn't talk right then and she told us she couldn't talk right then and she left her name though, and said he'd call back. We haven't heard from her since.

Would that be Belinda Simka?

Yes .

Well, somebody called us last night from Kinney's Fine Chicken somewhere, Dallas somewhere. I think it probably was Buchannon and gave us that information and we can't, so far, nobody knows and hasn't been



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

177

able come up with that name. Of course it's probably the right name but nobody knows her here yet. But she has not called back. Is that right?

No. Not that I know of, but there's no way you could look up Belinda Simka.?

Yes, we've been checking her since we got the name, but so far we hadn't come up with anybody that knows her or anything.

I would think that she's over here in this area somewhere .

Over in your area?

I would assume that she called from this area. I would think that she's around in here somewhere.

We'll check Buchannon. Oh, it's on Buchannon in Dallas.

Yeah, it's Pleasant Road. Okay?

We appreciate it. If anything else comes up, feel free to call us.

Thank you.

Police Department. Callis.

Is it true the murderers have been apprehended?

We haven't heard that. We wish they had.

Oh, well, I got some wrong information.

Thanks for calling.

Police Hot Line.

Who should I talk to if I have a hunch or theory about the Kinney Fine Chicken? Ya'll may have thought of it. It's just a theory, I don't know, it may help you.

You can go ahead and talk to me. I'm Detective Stearman.

Okay. Have you thought of it? It's my thinking. I

don't know if it would work or not, okay? Just

all those papers and all those articles, I suddenly started in my mind and maybe this is the way it hap-

pened. In my mind, that the strange is that the girl

first left the restaurant early to do it all right? O-

kay. Now, in one paper it says the husband, which is the stepfather, the Dallas paper says, went with the



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

daughter to the restaurant at 10:30. Then, and now here's what it is. He works in the oil field doesn't he?

I don't really know.

Well, the paper says he does. It sounds to me it's an inside job. The feeling, the gutty feeling. You know what I'm talking about? I don't know. What do you think? Have you speculated?

Well, I think probably, with all the Officers involved, that we probably have speculated about everything you could come up with.

Maybe a little bit investigation on the daughter's side? Maybe on the stepfather's side. Maybe something is fishy there, whatever it is.

Like I said, we've pretty well looked at everything.

You haven't picked up anything or heard anything on the street, have you?

No Sir, I just thought....I know it's funny that I called, but I just thought of this idea. It makes me cry reading the paper.

I wish, you know, we'd find something.

Yeah. We feel the same way. Listen, I appreciate you calling.

Thank you Sir.

You bet.

Police Department. Callis.

Collect call from Johnny Helms.

I've been following that Klimore murder deal that was in the paper. I noticed that these people were just about all of them were shot in the back of the head.

There's been an incident that occurred in Austin where a lady was abducted and she was shot twice in the head and according....

Yes sir, we talked to them yesterday.

We, it sounds like the same mode of operation to me.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

179

We didn't think so. We had a long discussion with them and don't think it's gonna be related at all.

Is that right?

Yes sir.

Okay then.

I do appreciate you calling.

Police Department. Alvin.

Sir, this Mrs. Dan Granger. I heard a conversation today that I feel like ya'll need to be told about.

All right.

This lady said that there was a boy here in town. His first name was Robert. She said she didn't know his last name. But he's referred to up here at this place across from Jon Begley's as "Rip." And she said that they is a gang that was referred to as "Perkies Gang". Said their residence was at the old Klimore Dump. And she said that this boy they called "Rip" was talking and he said that one of them said he wouldn't doubt if that gang maybe done that, because they made him a proposition a while back and asked him, "Do you wanna help us knock off the Kinney Fine Chicken?" Said, "We think we can get some money," and he told them "No way."

Okay, then that's the Perkies Gang at the old Klimore Dump? Okay.

And she said that he said that that's where they hung out was that old dump. And after she told me this thought. well, it might ought to be checked out.

Sure do, cause we don't have anything right now, Mrs. Granger. We're checking everything. We sure can check this out.

Okay. Well, I sure do appreciate it. Thank you a lot.

Okay

Caller advised that on the day of the murders some guys came into the grocery part of the C & S that were siked up on drugs. She was scared of them. Advised



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

they were driving a Van. Caller did not get L.P. number. Van has been reported as being seen at the Pinwheel they live there. Group consisted of one woman and three men. Van was light blue. Caller advised somebody told her that one of the men in the group was John Mallory's son.

11:00

Jimmy Pickens called.

He is a gun dealer and sold Dolly Victory a .357 Charter arms 5 Shot Revolver. Dolly's married name was Hinds and she and her ex husband Danny used to live across from the Howell family and Dolly and Jake Howell had an affair. Dolly and Danny was always talking about how they could always hire some-one to kill someone and the name Paul Williams was mentioned. Dolly is supposed to be in another state. Danny may be in Klimore.

11:00

Lady that works a service station in Larkmount was at Kinney Fine Chicken at 10:00P.M. Saw white van with 3 males. Tandy Lem Moler

Carthage, Texas

8:15P.M. Saw white window van, 2 white males, Klimore Comfort Inn Parking Lot. Later saw it at Kinney Fine Chicken.

7:03

"Shady" Haynes

Saw van at Kinney Fine Chicken. White van parked near dumpster. Utility type van.

8:36

Caller states that Peggy Sifford walked in on conversation of Wisenhut and Venable talking about doing away with the guns.

Dana Sims, Klimore, was with Wisenhut and Venable and her boyfriend, Rickey Tolbert, and one other boy. Peggy (Ms. Bobby) Sifford is hiding out. Bobby and



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

181

one other robbed people and left them naked in the woods.

11:25P.M.

Caller states that Wylie Gult talked about hitting chicken place that Friday night. Some of the gang's here.

2:50A.M.

Dave Minter was with a guy made statement he and this other guy were going to rob Kinney Fine Chicken.

8:53A.M.

Mrs. Talley's daughter Friday P.M. with some dopers.

Saturday was seen with lots of money.

One of the girls had scratches on her face.

9:41A.M.

Malina and Sonny had stolen guns last night.

Malina had scratches/was with Karnie Friday.

Jinkx knew that he had to study these documents and then try to correlate the time element in with the movement of each suspect and/or witness. Lots of work to be done. It was getting close to the time he was to report to work. He was going to study the documents thoroughly for the next few weeks.

\*\*\*\*\*

Weeks turned into months, and it was nearing Christmas. There were no breaks in the Kinney Fine Chicken murders. The Larkmount situation was still going strong. Articles appeared almost daily in the newspaper and Marshal Richard Matlock and the City Council was beginning to feel the heat. The words "Speed Trap" was used frequently in the articles. Matlock was to go full time at Larkmount after the first of the year. The fines collected for the citations would provide the salaries for permanent officers, and there was a reserve police officer force now in operation.

Jinkx and Marissa had a big Christmas, although Jinkx had to go to work in the afternoon. There was a small shift on duty that day. There was a feeling of uneasiness that swept over Jinkx. A feeling that he could not shake.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

There was a report at the briefing that the DEA and other agencies had made a big drug bust around FM125 and Champ Lane, but deputies were cautioned to still stay away from that area.

### CHAPTER 7

Everything was going smoothly when Jinkx observed a vehicle southbound on Old Glidding Highway just before you get to Interstate. The vehicle crossed the centerline then jerked back to the right side of the highway. The driver put on the brakes unnecessarily several times, and this was a sure sign that the driver was drunk, and couldn't judge the roadway and his speed. Jinkx then decided to stop the vehicle as they approached a convenience store, the Community Store, as there was plenty of room for an intoxicated driver to get control of his vehicle. Jinkx activated his overheads but the driver didn't stop. ....As he approached the driveway to the convenience store he turned on the siren. He stopped.

He cautiously approached the vehicle. The driver opened the door and looked at Jinkx. "Sheriffs Department, Finner. Would you step out of your car, please?"

The driver tried to get out of his car, but had trouble.

"What did I do, officer?" asked the driver.

"I need you to get out of the vehicle, sir. Let me help you." Jinkx looked around and saw that a crowd was gathering. He reached down and helped the driver to his feet. When he turned loose of the driver, the driver started to slide down the side of his car.

He helped him straighten up. The driver smelled heavily of an alcoholic beverage. "Need you to put your hands on the hood of the car." Jinkx guided him to the hood and helped him place his hands on the hood.

"What did I do?" asked the driver.

"You failed to maintain a single lane, and you were weaving on the roadway." He started to give him an on the scene pat search. He also noticed that several had gathered around him. Several black citizens. They didn't say anything, just stared. The prisoner was also black. Jinkx



started patting him down, and his legs kept buckling, and Jinkx found it difficult to search and hold up the prisoner at the same time. After the driver almost fell to the ground, and he had to gather enough strength to get him standing up again, he handcuffed the prisoner and advised him that he was under arrest for suspicion of driving while intoxicated. Jinkx hadn't finished his search, but decided to buckle the prisoner in the back seat. The handcuffs were on good and he was buckled in when Jinkx called for a wrecker. Jinkx thought it best to separate the prisoner from the crowd as they still stared at him, and talked among themselves. He remembered the training in the Police Academy when he was told to get the prisoner off the scene if there was a possibility that the crowd could interfere in the arrest of another.

The prisoner passed out, or slept most of the way to the courthouse.

Jinkx opened the door, unbuckled the seat belt, and helped the prisoner to his feet. He was unsteady in walking and Jinkx had to practically carry him to the elevator. He put his weapon in the lock box, used his key to activate the elevator and rode to the sixth floor. When the elevator opened at the 6th floor, he noticed jailer Gladys Boren sitting behind the glass in the console room. He was behind the prisoner so he guided him to a table in front of the console room.

He took the handcuff off the prisoner's left hand first. The prisoner rotated slightly to the left, partially off balance. Jinkx had to pull him back around to take the handcuff off the other hand. "Put your hands on the table." He helped him put his hands on the table, and Jinkx put his right hand into the prisoner's right front pocket and pulled out a handkerchief. He felt something solid in the handkerchief and discovered a small automatic wrapped up in the handkerchief and then turned the prisoner around. "Raise your hands. Put your hands in the air." Jinkx stuck the small pistol in his waistband, in the back.

The prisoner backed up to the glass enclosure and took a stance as a boxer would, fists clinched and hands raised.

Gladys started to enter the booking area from the console room, but stopped when she saw Jinkx having trouble with the prisoner.

Jinkx reacted by slapping the prisoner, open handed, across the face.

Gladys stepped back into the console room.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

He forced the prisoner's arms up into the air, he pulled him close, and searched him. He also found a small knife.

The prisoner was pacified, and offered no more resistance. ....Jinkx conducted a thorough search of the prisoner, and was finally satisfied that the prisoner had no more weapons.

"Take off you coat sir," he told the prisoner. He walked to the entrance to the console room and put the weapon on the end of the table.

Gladys came out of the console room.

Jinkx walked to where the prisoner was standing. "Take off your coat." The prisoner didn't move. He then approached the prisoner and forcibly removed the coat. Jinkx pointed to a chair at the table. "Sit down," he instructed.

The prisoner looked at Jinkx, but did not sit down.

Jinkx gently pushed him into the chair, but he stood up. He pushed him back into the chair, but he stood up again. Jinkx forcibly pushed him into the chair for the third time. He did not stand up this time.

He walked to where the gun had been placed and picked it up.

At this time the jail Captain, Robert Wainger, and jailer, Richard Matlock, came out of the room in back of the console room.

"Need any help?" asked Captain Wainger.

"Not now," replied Jinkx. "Is Matlock available to run an intoxilizer test?" asked Jinkx

The Captain nodded.

Jinkx took the booking sheet from Gladys. "I'll book him. He might get rowdy."

He sat down by the prisoner. Jinkx had taken everything out of his pockets during the search and he picked up his wallet and took out his driver's license.

"Will you take an intoxilizer test, Mr.—" Jinkx looked at the license. "Mr. Roswell Powers?"

"I'll take one to show you that I ain't drunk," he said.

"That sounds fair, Mr. Powers."



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

185

Matlock came out of the back room and motioned for Jinkx to bring the prisoner. After the preliminary test process had been completed, the test was given to the prisoner.

Matlock looked at the results. "It sure doesn't look very good for your prisoner, Finner."

Jinkx looked at the slip. "Wow. 0.029%. Three times what the law allows. He looked at the prisoner. I didn't give you your rights when I arrested you, sir. You were out of it, so I'll give them to you now." He gave the prisoner his Miranda warning, then led him back to the book-in table.

He started filling out the case report as he asked the prisoner questions. "Full name? No middle name or initial? Race is Black. Address?" Jinkx looked at his driver's license and wrote down the number. He entered the offenses. DWI (Driving While Intoxicated) and UCW (Unlawful Carrying a Weapon). County of offense. Grabe. Location was Community Store at Interstate and Old Glidding Highway. Day of week is Sunday, the 25<sup>th</sup> and 9:48PM. Chemical test offered was breath. The test given was breath and the results were 0.029%. Officer/operator of Intoxilizer was Richard Matlock, number is on the results slip. Jinkx filled out the Observations section. Leather jacket, green shirt, blues slacks and black  $\frac{3}{4}$  boots. Odor of alcohol is beer or wine or both. Attitude is poor. Unusual actions-couldn't remember. Speech is slurred. Balance is unstable. Walking is unsure. As he turns he tilts. In the officer/violator interview he asked the questions. "Were you operating a vehicle, sir?" Answer: "Right." "Destination?" Answer: "Couldn't go home." "Started from?" Answer: "Going home." "What time?" Answer: "No watch." "Pay attention," Jinkx said loudly. Jinkx signaled to Gladys that it was OK, and then continued his questioning. "Where are you?" Answer: "Police station." "When did you last eat?" Answer: "Around 11:00AM." "What did you eat?" Answer: "Chicken." "Have you been drinking?" Answer: "A beer." "What?" Answer: "Beer." "How many?" Answer: "One." "Last drink?" Answer: "Two hours ago." "Are you ill?" Answer: "Half way." "What's wrong?" Answer: "Stomach trouble." "Have you been injured lately?" Answer: "Messed around." "What's wrong?" Answer: "Sick." "Last doctor's visit?" Answer: "two months." "Who?" Answer "Dr. Ebbman." "Why?" Answer: "Stomach."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"Do you have epilepsy?" Answer: "I don't know." "Diabetes?" Answer: "Don't know." "Have you had any injections or pills lately?" Answer: Did not answer- "What?" Answer: Did not answer- "When did you last sleep?" Answer: "Hardly sleep." "Number of hours you sleep?" Answer: "Two to three." "Do you have any physical handicaps?" Answer: "Not handicapped." Jinkx recorded the time, date and interviewer.

The prisoner was put in a cell and Jinkx started writing a summary of the incident.

Matlock and Gladys were standing close by, and Gladys asked Jinkx a question. "Did you know he had a gun?"

He looked at her questionably. An off the wall question demands an off the wall answer he decided. "Yeah, sure. Like I was waiting for him to pull it so I could blow his shit away." Jinkx continued to write the summary, and was shaking his head.

On the 25<sup>th</sup>, at approximately 9:20PM, I, Deputy Jinkx Finner, while on routine patrol for the Grabe County Sheriffs Department, observed a black over green Ford 2 Dr. southbound on Old Glidding Hwy. moving slowly, approximately fifteen (15) to twenty (20) MPH, and weaving on the roadway, driving to the centerline and then to the shoulder. When I activated my over-heads and siren, the vehicle turned right, a wide right turn into the parking lot of the Community Store at Interstate and Old Glidding Road, parking crossways slightly and not far enough into the parking lot so as not to block other vehicles. As I approached the vehicle the driver saw me. I was in a distinctive uniform, and I also identified myself as "Grabe County Sheriffs Department." ----The driver, later identified as Roswell Powers, smelled strongly of an alcoholic beverage. As I led him to the front of the vehicle he had difficulty in walking. A crowd was gathering at this time so I did a hasty pat search. He was handcuffed and transported to the Grabe County jail. A thorough search revealed a 25 Caliber auto and a knife, rolled up in a handkerchief in his right front pocket. A percentage of 0.029% registered on the intoxilizer. Jinkx charged the prisoner with driving while intoxicated and unlawful carrying a weapon.

He finished his report and went to the fifth floor to complete his report by completing other DWI documents.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

187

He was finishing his report when Lt. Rutherford came into the room.

"Hello, Lt."

"Jinkx, did you have a problem with the prisoner you just brought in?"

"A little bit. I missed a gun on the initial pat search when I stopped him. I found the gun when I did an extensive search in the jail. Is he complaining about something?"

"Not your prisoner. The jail Captain and Matlock. They said you bounced him around, cussed him and also said that you said you knew he had a gun and was waiting for him to pull it so you could blow his shit away. Are you sure you didn't bounce him around?"

Jinkx stared at him. "You're not fucking serious, are you? Do you actually think that any peace officer would drive a prisoner to the jail, with the prisoner sitting behind him, knowing that the prisoner had a gun, and was waiting for the prisoner to pull his gun so the peace officer could shoot him? Do you actually believe that?"

"No, I don't. You need to write a report concerning what happened with the prisoner when you entered the jail."

"Did you talk to the prisoner?"

"No, I didn't. He is passed out they say."

"They say? They say a lot of things that is not the truth. I'll make out a report, as you wanted. Anyone who would believe those two idiots needs their head worked on."

"Does that include me?" asked the Lt.

"It includes anyone that would listen to them and believe bull shit like you just told me. I'll do a report and give it to you tonight."

The Lt. left the room and Jinkx made a more detailed report. He gave it to the Lt. when he finished his shift.

\*\*\*\*\*

When Jinkx reported for duty the next day he was told to see Captain Hummer.

"Come in," said the Captain when Jinkx knocked on his office door. "What kind of problem did you have with a prisoner, Roswell Powers, last night?"

He related the incident to the Captain. "I'm not denying I missed the gun on the initial pat search, but found it when I searched him thoroughly



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

in the booking area. I don't deny that I slapped him when he bowed up to me and I thought he might have another weapon. After I slapped him he was calm and that was the end of it. I also found a knife."

"Well, not exactly. You see, Captain Wainger, jailer Matlock and jailer Boren filed a written complaint against you, and stated that you abused your prisoner."

"I didn't abuse anybody. Let me see those complaints."

"You'll get them. In the meantime you need to read this and report to Chief Deputy Donner tomorrow. He handed Jinkx the document to read. "You allowed a gun into the jail, also."

On December 26<sup>th</sup>, this year, at approximately 10:20am, I received a report that Deputy Jinkx Finner had entered into the jail book-in area with a prisoner who still had on his person one lock-blade knife and one .25 automatic which was loaded. After discovery of the weapons on the subject's person, it was reported that Deputy Jinkx Finner then cursed the prisoner and physically manhandled him.

The following policy and procedure violations were committed by Deputy Finner and are listed in detail:

1) Chapter IX, number 5: to wit: Deputy Finner failed to search his prisoner properly before entering the book-in area of the jail and the prisoner had in his possession one lock blade knife (folding hunter type) and one .25 automatic which was loaded. 2) Amended policy Chapter IV: Protection of Prisoners, their rights and their property, Section 6:02 which states:

All employees shall protect the rights of any person held in custody and no employee shall verbally abuse or use any unnecessary violence against any person, to wit: Deputy Finner physically manhandled and cursed a prisoner in his custody and the prisoner had not provoked a confrontation, had not offered any resistance and was not attempting escape.

It is my determination, after reviewing all facts, that Deputy Jinkx Finner violated Grabe County Sheriff's Department policy and procedure as cited above and that by his negligence he placed others in imminent danger and compromised jail security. It is further



determined that Deputy Finner, and without provocation, used unnecessary violence towards a prisoner in his custody and that his conduct was unprofessional.

It is therefore my recommendation that due to the severity of the violations, Sheriff's Deputy Jinkx Finner should be terminated from employment with the Grabe County Sheriff's Department.

On December 26<sup>th</sup>, this year at approximately 3:30 p.m., I Captain Daniel Hummer, advised Sheriff's Deputy Finner he was on suspension until further notice pending conclusion of the internal investigation.

D. Hummer,  
Captain  
Patrol Division

- Chapter IX, Number 5-Gross Negligence or incompetence.

Jinkx looked at the Captain, then back at the document. "You know, this is bull shit. In the report that I made for Lt. Rutherford, that is the way it happened. These are nothing but lies. I never cussed the prisoner. I didn't manhandle him. I missed the gun and also the knife on the initial pat search when I first stopped him. I was in control at all times. I want to see these reports that supposedly contained this information. Show me the reports."

"You will get them in time. You have been suspended."

"I have one important question for you, Captain. Did you interview the supposed victim, Roswell Powell?"

"He had already been bailed out when I received my report about what you did. He wasn't available."

"Until proven otherwise, you should have said what I had 'allegedly' done. You already have your mind made up, don't you? Very convenient that Powell had already bailed out."

"See Chief Deputy Donner tomorrow morning. And, I definitely do stand by my recommendation. You're suspended. That's all."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"No, that's not all, mister. What goes around comes around. I've dealt with pissy assed kids like you, before. That's not all."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx went to his apartment and changed clothes. He had not told Marissa about his problem when had he called her during the day, but wanted to drop by the hospital later and tell her in person.

He walked into the waiting room of the Emergency Room entrance and saw Marissa with a patient. She saw him and came to meet him. "Are you working plain clothes again?" she asked.

"No, I have a slight problem with the Sheriffs Department. Can you take a break? I need to talk to you."

"Is it serious?"

"Very serious, I think."

"Stay here. I'll be right back."

He waited about ten minutes and finally Marissa came back. She had her coat on, and had her purse with her. "I'm taking off tonight. It's slow and the supervisor let me go."

They walked to his car, each saying very little. "I had a problem last night with a prisoner. I didn't tell you about it earlier, but when I went to work today I was suspended. Let me tell you the story. Let's just drive around."

...."That's sickening, Jinkx," she remarked when he told her what happened.

"I'll know more about it when I see the Chief tomorrow. I think I'm going to get canned. I really think so."

"Let's go get my car. I want you to stay with me tonight. Is that OK with you?"

"I sure need someone. Boy, what a mess."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx and Marissa were up early and went to the Whistle Stop to have some breakfast before he faced the Chief. Jinkx started to read the paper, and was now finding out about the drug bust that took place on FM125 and Champ Lane. He scanned the headlines.



**DRUG BUST BRINGS IN BIG FISH**

**By Jeb Grantham  
Staff Writer**

Fourteen people remained jailed after the officers from 10 police agencies searched several places in Grabe and Rashe counties.

According to Sheriff's Sgt. Billy Wayne Ashley, officers confiscated drugs, stolen property, guns and several thousands of dollars. Stolen property recovered included a large television set, a video cassette recorder, a portable welder, silverware and jewelry.

Agencies involved in the search were the ET Drug Task Force, Drug Enforcement Agency, ATF, Sheriffs Department in Sims and Grabe Counties; police departments that were from Linview, Klimore, Tyler and others; and the Larkmount City Marshal's Office.

"The purpose of the warrants was to locate evidence in connection with an ongoing Drug Task Force investigation.

....Arrested was Weldon Severnson Sr., Weldon Severnson Jr., Wylie Severnson. Glade Severnson, Kiley Tim Severnson, Mackey Lane Severnson, Leona Gerry Severnson, Homer Sims, Sr. Homer Sims, Jr., Bubba Mission, Douglas Wolen, Jimmy Golen and Sammy Earnest.

....Bond hearings will be held in Tyler Federal Court.

Jinkx sipped on his coffee and tried to eat the waffle but he found that he did not have an appetite.

"Hey," said Marissa as she tried to console him. "It's going to be all right. I don't want you to worry. I'm behind you what ever you decide to do. Remember that."

"If it wasn't for you I would really be down in the dumps. We might plan a little trip, as I might be unemployed after today, and I know you need to get away."

"I can take my vacation at any time. I'm ready to go." She looked at the paper and pointed to an article. "Look what has showed up on our judge."



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

### **JUDGE KRILEY REPRIMANDED BY COMMISSION**

**By Jeb Grantham**  
**Staff Writer**

Austin—District Court Judge Adam Kriley has been reprimanded by the state commission on judicial conduct for preparing a jury list “to assist or influence” prosecutors to help their case.

Kriley appeared before the commission to present testimony as a supplement on the charge, the Executive Director said.

The commission found that Kriley gave an assistant district attorney of Grabe County a jury list marked with check marks next to some names and the word “no” next to others.

The list was intended to assist or influence prosecutors to secure a jury that was favorable to the prosecution according to a reprimand released by the commission.

“Judge Kriley admitted that he had marked the jury list which he defended as an honest attempt to help the state secure a fair trial,” the reprimand stated. “The list was not solicited by the prosecution nor was it seen or used by the prosecutor who tried and won the case.”

The commission noted that a judge should observe high standards of conduct so that the integrity and independence of the judiciary may be preserved.”

“I wonder how much water has gone under the bridge before he was told on. There’s a lot of assistant DA’s. It would be hard to believe that this was the first assistant DA that was approached with this idea, from the judge. I wonder how many defendants got the shaft?” Jink: stared into space. “I hate to leave you, but I think it’s about time I headed to the courthouse.”

“How about I drive you there?”

“Good idea. In all my life, in all the jobs that I have ever had, including the Army, I have never been treated this way. If I did what they said I did, it wouldn’t bother me. Twenty six-year-old punk ass kids do not make good supervisors. Home boys.”



Jinkx entered the Sheriffs Department and went directly to the Chief Deputy's office and knocked on the door.

"Come in," he answered.

Jinkx entered and sat down. "Mornin' Chief."

"Do you have the paper that Captain Hummer gave you?"

He handed him the paper.

"What happened with that prisoner, Finner?"

Jinkx told him the story exactly like it happened, and the same as he told Captain Hummer.

Chief Donner wrote on the paper that Captain Hummer had given Jinkx. "This is the way I see it, Finner. This is what I wrote on Captain Hummer's recommendations. 'After I have reviewed all the facts and circumstances contained in the memos concerning Sheriff's Deputy, Jinkx Finner, I definitely support Captain Hummer's recommendation of termination.'" He handed the paper back to Jinkx.

Jinkx was stunned. His faced flushed and he could feel the anger, but he forced himself to control his emotions.

"In other words you're saying I abused my prisoner, which I didn't. Your two ass holes, Wainger and Matlock lied, and you and Hummer believe the lies, isn't that right? Hummer said that he had written complaints from the three that was in the jail that night. I want to see those complaints. Do you have them?"

"I am upholding the Captain's recommendations. The Sheriff has to be the one that terminates you. Let me make one thing clear. You will resign from this Sheriffs Department if, in the future, you want a favorable recommendation on your next job. I can bust your bubble when you go to get another job, in law enforcement, or anywhere. I don't have to give a good recommendation. You got that?"

"How about we take this before the Review Board and let others make a decision on whether I did wrong or not? I want to go before a Review Board."

There was no answer. The Chief just stared at Jinkx.

"I want to go before a Review Board."

"We don't have a Review Board."

...."Yes, we do have a Review Board. Others have gone before a Review Board."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"Not you. This meeting is over. Make an appointment to see the Sheriff. Maybe he has other ideas. But, I will tell you this. If I recommend it, he will terminate you, and I do recommend that you be terminated. Get out of my office."

He saw Marissa sitting in the car and was ghost white when he got in. "It didn't go too good. Donner upheld the suggested termination of Hummer. I have to see the Sheriff. And, I have to 'make an appointment' to get terminated. Ain't that a kick in the ass? I have some thinking to do. God, I don't know what to do." He looked Marissa in the eyes. "He told me that if I wanted a good recommendation on my next job, I would have to resign to get it. Can you beat that? I would never resign. That's not the way I do things. I'm going to fight them tooth and nail." He suddenly felt full of vim. "They got the wrong guy. I wouldn't resign for Jesus Christ, because He wouldn't want me to resign. Am I crazy?"

"No, you're not crazy. You're a man that fights for what he knows is right. Lets do it." She gently kissed him.

"The Sheriff will undoubtedly go along with those two, so I might as well set down and makes plans to fight this thing. "

"You mean 'we' might as well set down and make plans, remember?"

"'We'. You betcha."

\*\*\*\*\*

Several days had passed before he had the chance to go before the Sheriff. Jinkx knocked on the Sheriff's door and entered when told to come in.

"You need to tell me what went on the 25<sup>th</sup> with that black prisoner you arrested."

"OK, Sheriff. This is what happened." Jinkx told the same story to the Sheriff.

"That's the way it was?" asked the Sheriff.

"That's the way it was. I missed the gun, and the knife. It was not intentional like everyone thinks. I would never, never allow a prisoner to have possession of a weapon of any kind while sitting behind me. No one would. Maybe I could have handled the entire situation differently. I don't know. I reacted accordingly. The entire thing didn't last a minute. Now, Hummer and the Chief say that the jail personnel filed, or signed, a



complaint. There was no one in the booking area or console room but me and the civilian jailer, Gladys. The jail Captain and Matlock came from the back, after it was all over. Captain Wainger asked me if I needed any help, after it was all over. If there was anything signed against me, I want to see it. Do you have a complaint signed by the jail personnel?"

"Yes, I do have the complaints. You can see them later. I'm going to evaluate what the complaints say, and what you have told me. I will notify you of my decision."

"I would like to go before a Review Board like others have. I feel that's fair, don't you?"

"I make the decisions here. Let me think about the Review Board. I'll notify you. I want to think this over. Good day, sir."

Jinkx and Marissa were at his apartment waiting for word from the Sheriff. "This is driving me crazy," said Jinkx.

"The only thing you can do is wait and see what his decision is going to be. I want you to be prepared for the worst. I don't want to be optimistic or pessimistic, but you know how he is."

There was a knock on the door.

Jinkx swallowed and felt jumpy. He opened the door and it was Deputy Damon.

"I have a letter for you from the Sheriff, Jinkx." He handed it to him. He opened the envelope and read it aloud.

Mr. Jinkx Finner

Dear Sir:

After careful evaluation, it is my opinion that your termination with this department be effective immediately.

The reasons as stated in Capt. Hummer's letter (see Enclosure) and violation of Policy Manual P. 4, Section 8, P. 9, Section 15 & 21, Amended Policy Manual P. 11, Section 8:03.

You have the right to appeal this decision to the Commissioner's Court of Grabe County within ten (10) days.

Sincerely,

Billy Waverly

Sheriff, Grabe County, Texas



# HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"I need to pick up your badge, and I.D. card. Turn in all county equipment as soon as possible," said Damon.

Jinkx handed him his badge and I.D. card. No smile.

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx walked into the Sheriffs Department with all county owned equipment checked out to him. Deputies looked at him and just nodded. He saw Barron Rutherford coming towards him,

"I talked to Hummer about his recommendation. I told him that he should not have recommended that you be terminated. He's an ass hole, and wouldn't change his mind. I let him know that I was not in favor if it. I told you they were out to get you."

"I know. I was quite aware of that." He threw the equipment on the counter. "It's all here."

"I'm quitting in three days, Jinkx. I've had enough of this bull shit. I'm going to the Witt Olney Police Department until I hear from the application I have at the college."

He looked around, then back at Rutherford. "I was hoping that I would see you. I made a list of several documents that I need. I'm going to appeal Waverly's decision to the Commissioners Court. If you can, will you see if you can locate what is on this list, and maybe get it for me? Some of the information is hearsay, rumors and gossip. Just maybe I can put something together and get re-instated"

"You want to come back here?"

"Only just to say that they are not the winner, that's all."

"Wait right here. I think I have something you will need to study."

Jinkx wanted to shoot Chief Deputy Donner the finger as he passed into view, but changed his mind. Donner immediately looked the other way when he saw Jinkx.

Rutherford returned with a stack of pamphlets and loose papers. He set them on the counter. "I'm going to lean on these, but when you leave, gently scoop them up and haul ass and get out of here. I'll call you when and if I get what you have on this list. Good luck." He looked around and saw that no one was looking. You can leave my office now, it's clear."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx called Attorney Olin Hall. "Mr. Hall, Jinkx Finner here. Do you have a minute?"

# HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, D (REWIND, FAST

"Sure. What can I do for you?"

"Well, in case you haven't heard, Department, and I need some advice from friends with the Sheriff, and I thought him, and maybe he will change his mind."

"What was the reason that you were terminated?"

Jinkx told his story again. Covering all the bases.

"I'll talk to him. I'll be glad to. I'll see you this afternoon. I have to go to the Sheriff, OK?"

"OK. Great. Thanks, Mr. Hall."

Marissa looked at Jinkx. "I thought you were going to quit. Do you think he will help you?"

"This is the way I figure it. A Sheriff's Department, whereas maybe he won't talk to me, but I'll get an answer."

"Good idea. I don't want to handle these situations better than a Sheriff's Department negative answer?"

"Yeah. I think I am. With your help. Rutherford gave me." Jinkx explained the County Sheriff's Department County Personnel Policy Manual. Perfect. Now I can handle Donner or Waverly never going to file against me. There has to be a way. I have a feeling I'm going to quit being dumb and be a professional. I'm looking for someone other than a Sheriff's Department. I looked at Marissa. "Are you going to help me?"

"As you would say, 'you're the boss'."

It was about 5:15PM when Jinkx called the Sheriff and he stands by his side.



"Sure. What can I do for you?"

"Well, in case you haven't heard, I was terminated from the Sheriffs Department, and I need some advice, or help. I know that you are good friends with the Sheriff, and I thought you might have a little talk with him, and maybe he will change his mind. I'll pay you for your time."

"What was the reason that you were terminated, Jinkx?"

Jinkx told his story again. Covering every detail carefully.

"I'll talk to him. I'll be glad to. What is your phone number? I'll call you this afternoon. I have to go to the courthouse for a trial, and I'll see the Sheriff, OK?"

"OK. Great. Thanks, Mr. Hall."

Marissa looked at Jinkx. "I thought you said they were big buddies. Do you think he will help you?"

"This is the way I figure it. At least he will be able to see the Sheriff, whereas maybe he won't talk to another attorney. Hall can spring it on him and get an answer."

"Good idea. I don't want you to get your hopes up, though. You handle these situations better than I could. Are you prepared to deal with a negative answer?"

"Yeah. I think I am. With your support, of course. I want to see what Rutherford gave me." Jinkx emptied the bag onto the table. "The Grabe County Sheriff's Department Policy Manual. Very good. The Grabe County Personnel Policy Manual and supplements to the department manual. Perfect. Now I can find out what rules I violated. Hummer, Donner or Waverly never gave me a copy of the supposed complaints filed against me. There has to be some kind of law or rule concerning this. I have a feeling I'm going to spend a lot of time in the law library. I have to quit being dumb and be a little smarter to beat this thing. I better start looking for someone other than Hall to give me 'good advice.'" He looked at Marissa. "Are you with me, kiddo?"

"As you would say, 'you bet your ass.'"

It was about 5:15PM when attorney Hall called. "I had a talk with the Sheriff and he stands by his decision. I tried."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"All you can do is try. It says on the bottom of his termination letter that I have ten days to appeal his decision to the Commissioners Court. I checked, and the next meeting is next Monday. Can you appear with me to appeal this? I'll pay for your services."

"Sure, I'll appear with you. Let me see, now. Next Monday. The meeting is at 10:00AM. I'll meet you there."

"Great. See you Monday morning." He hung up.

"I know that I am going to be on pins and needles until Monday. You know, I'm going to call Commissioner J.M. Graham and get a little input from him." He looked up the number and called him. Jinkx winked at Marissa.

"Commissioner Graham's office," said his secretary.

"Jinkx Finner here. Can I talk to Commissioner Graham, please?"

"Graham."

"Jinkx Finner here, Commissioner. How are you?"

"Finner. What's going on?"

"Sad news, Graham. Your high and mighty Sheriff canned me. I don't want to get into details now, as I'm going to appeal his decision to the Commissioners Court and I don't want any kick back on information I would give you. I want to present it in a package to the entire court. I just want to know the procedure, as I asked Attorney Olin Hall to appear with me."

"Olin Hall? You do know that him and Waverly are good, good buddies. You might have made a mistake with him."

Jinkx told him why he talked to Hall.

"Well, I don't know. Anyway, here's what happens. It is probably too late to get it on the agenda. But, at the end of our session, you or Hall will stand up, address the Commissioners Court, and ask that they go into executive session concerning a personal matter with an employee. You're still on the payroll until the next payday, so you are still an employee. If you want to present witnesses or documents, you will have to ask that your appeal be put on the next agenda, which would be two weeks from next Monday. Therefore, you will have a little time to get everything together. That's the way it works. I am sorry about what happened with the Sheriff."

"Me too. Thanks for the information, Graham."



"Do you think Kerrie would do an article on this?" asked Marissa.

"I don't want a lot of exposure on something like this. Some of the readers might take a different slant on the story and think that I actually did abuse a prisoner that was in my custody."

Sunday had arrived and Jinkx had tried to gather his thoughts. It was the afternoon and he was worried as to whether or not attorney Hall was going to represent him at the meeting tomorrow. He talked to Marissa about it.

"Call him at home. Re-affirm his commitment to you."

"I think that I will call him." He looked up Olin Hall's home phone number.

A woman answered. "Hello."

"Mrs. Hall?"

"Yes, it is."

"Ma'am, this is Jinkx Finner. Is Mr. Hall there? I wanted to confirm that he would appear with me tomorrow at the Commissioners Court meeting on an appeal. Can I speak to him, please?"

"I'm sorry, but Olin is in Austin with our daughter, and will be attending a twirling contest with her tomorrow."

"In other words, he will not be in town tomorrow. Is that right?" asked Jinkx

"That's right. I'm sure he tried to get in touch with you and tell you his change in plans. He has been planning this for several weeks."

"Yeah. I'm sure he tried to get in touch. Thank you."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx was waiting in the parking lot when attorney Ron Faber pulled in to park. Jinkx approached him as he got out of his car. "Mr. Faber?"

"Why, hello Deputy Finner. Can I help you?"

"Can we talk in your office. ....I need an attorney. I need one this morning at 10:00AM."

"Let's go inside and talk about it. It can't be that bad."

After he had explained everything in detail he looked at the attorney. "I really got the shaft from Hall. That bothers me more than getting fired. He knew what he was doing. Him and Waverly worked it out. Good timing."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"You know, Jinkx, you can inform the Commissioners Court that you want to appeal the Sheriff's decision. You don't need me to do that. You should know about court procedure, and this is really not a court, just a group of elected citizens listening to facts that you would present. After what you have told me you were denied due process of law plus several of the Grabe County policies were ignored."

"Yes, I understand that. I might dig a deeper hole than what I'm already in."

"Here's the way it works. You have to present to the Commissioners Court the reasons that you think you were discriminated against and the presumed violations committed by the Sheriff and those that were in the capacity of acting as his agent. Such as the Patrol Captain and the Chief Deputy. If the Commissioners Court agree that you have a valid appeal, the appeal will then be transferred to the County Court at Law, Judge Lonnie Stamp's court. Then, you have to present your case to him. He will be the Examiner regarding your grievance. He will render the decision. Do you understand that?"

"I do now," answered Jinkx.

"Tell you what I'll do. I observed your demeanor when I was the District Attorney, and you were the witness in some of the criminal cases that I prosecuted. I would love to tear Grabe County a new ass, but I think you would get more pleasure out of it by doing it yourself. So, what I have in mind is, I will go to the Commissioners Court with you this morning. I will go through the procedure of getting your appeal on the agenda in the County Court at Law, providing the Commissioners Court grants the appeal. If, and when your appeal is granted, we need to gather some evidence which will be beneficial to the appeal. Now, I want you to come back to my office this afternoon and pick up a list of what you have to do to present your appeal. You will have to do the research, as I don't have the time to do the research myself. I will give you a stack of books and literature that will guide you in your research at the law library. Will you agree to this? If you think what a lawyer does is easy, you have a big surprise."

"Hell yes. I can do this research. I agree to this. I'll see you at the courthouse at 10:00AM today."

"At 10:00AM," agreed Faber.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

201

Jinkx sat on one side of the Commissioner's courtroom and Ron Faber sat on the other.

As they completed their agenda, County Judge Manny Slocum asked if there was any other business.

Attorney Faber rose and went to the microphone "I would like to request that this morning, this Commissioners Court go into executive session on a matter concerning a county employee." Attorney Faber observed the facial expressions of the commissioners.

The members of the court looked at each other.

"Why wasn't this put on the agenda earlier, Mr. Faber?"

"This was supposed to have been handled by another attorney, but he failed to make the court aware of the fact that an appeal was to be requested. I was only notified of it this morning. According to the Grabe County Personnel Policy Manual, it has to be brought before the Commissioners Court before the ten-day deadline. It could not be put on today's agenda in time. I'm asking that the court go into executive session to resolve this matter."

The judge asked all in attendance to leave except those directly involved in the appeal.

Sheriff Waverly started to leave but Attorney Faber called his name. "Sheriff Waverly."

The Sheriff turned around.

"You're involved in this. Do you want to stay or go?"

The Sheriff looked at Jinkx, who was still seated. The Sheriff set back down.

After the courtroom was cleared, Attorney Faber addressed the court. "Gentlemen, I would like to read you a letter from the Sheriff, to, I guess you would say ex Deputy Finner." The letter was read to the court. "It's easy to say, or allege, that an employee has violated departmental policy. This letter gives the page number and section number of the alleged violation, but doesn't contain the text of the violation. The Sheriff says that certain jail employees signed complaints against Mr. Finner, but the complaints were never given to Mr. Finner. Mr. Finner asked the Patrol Captain, Chief Deputy and the Sheriff for the complaints, but they were never produced. The Sheriff has taken away Mr. Finner's departmental policy manual and supplemental section to the manual, so he doesn't



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

know what the alleged violations consist of. This is a violation of Federal Law, State law and the Grabe County Personnel Policy Manual. I request that this appeal be transferred to the County Court at Law and an Examiner rule on this matter. Mr. Finner's lively hood depends upon this request. Thank you."

Commissioner Graham spoke up. "I make a motion that the appeal of Mr. Finner be transferred to the County Court at Law, and to be ruled on by an Examiner."

"Do I hear a second?" asked the County Judge.

No one spoke.

"This could go into legal litigation, gentlemen. You must remember, we just went through this on a similar situation concerning the County Clerk catastrophe. Remember?" reminded Commissioner Graham.

All members voted in favor of the motion.

Attorney Faber stood up. "One more thing. Sheriff Waverly needs to be instructed by this court, or the District Attorney Danny Bonham, to produce all that is specified in all documents, pertaining to Mr. Finner's termination."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx called Marissa and told her the decision of the Commissioners Court on his appeal. "Also, Marissa, do you think we could go to the hospital and see Yvonne? I want to see if she can run me off a copy of some medical reports. I have a list of names and dates that I need to help me in my appeal."

"Come on over and pick me up and we'll go to the hospital and see her. I don't know the procedure that is used to get medical records. You might need a subpoena or something."

"Could be. I'll be there shortly."

He and Marissa saw Yvonne seated in the records room. She waved to them when they came in. "How did it go at the court thing this morning?"

...."They granted the appeal. I only have a few weeks to get my paperwork together and present it. I hate to ask you, but I need some medical reports of those that were hospitalized by a certain deputy. I hope you don't need a subpoena."



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

203

"We need a document of some kind that looks official. Let me type you up a document that is used by attorneys when they request records."

"I do appreciate it, kiddo. You don't know how much."

"Marissa told me how they were jerking you around and what they did. Let's do it this way. Leave your list of names here. I'll prepare the document you need, and you need to give me until tomorrow to get them for you. When you come to pick up the records you can sign the document, OK?"

"That sounds great. Here you are. The names and date of occurrence are there. See you tomorrow."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx called Kerrie from the Whistle Stop. "Kerrie, Jinkx Finner here. Would you like to join us for some lunch at the Whistle Stop?"

"I was just going to lunch. See you in a few minutes."

"Is she coming?" asked Marissa.

"She said that she would be here in a few minutes. What's in the paper?"

"About the same as yesterday. Nothing new."

"Maybe Kerrie has some news on the Klimore murders."

As they sat and talked he told her about the decision of the Sheriff to terminate him. "I am appealing it to the County Court at Law in a few weeks. I might get reinstated."

"I'll do a story on it if you want me to," said Kerrie.

He replied, "I don't think that would be a good idea. The publicity could make the citizens think that I did abuse my prisoner. They think differently about what is explained to them, you know."

"That's very true. I'm really going to bear down on his butt if I get anything good. You know, I was just thinking. Us being seen together and me writing the article about him helped get you fired. You know that, don't you?"

"I don't even think about things like that. It's been a good ride, and I wouldn't change a thing. Would you two change anything?"

"No way," replied Kerrie.

"I wouldn't change anything with you, Jinkx," replied Marissa.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Jinkx saw Barron Rutherford enter the restaurant and went to meet him at the door.

Barron saw him and motioned for him to come outside. "I had the run of the department yesterday, Sunday. I think I have everything you wanted, and then some. There is some extra stuff in there that you will find very interesting."

"I really do thank you, Baron. This might do the trick."

"Oh, yeah. Before I forget. The Sheriff is getting rid of the civilian jailer, Gladys Boren. I understand that he wasn't satisfied with the complaint she wrote against you. It didn't contain enough damaging wordage. If she is fired, she might be willing to be a witness on your appeal. I put her phone number in the paperwork I gave you. I better get out of here. Good luck. If I go to the Witt Olney PD within the next two weeks, I'll go to the County Court at Law with you when you appeal."

"Thanks, Barron. I'll be in touch." Jinkx went back to the table.

"Good news?" asked Marissa. She looked at the thick folder he was carrying.

"I'll know when I read what's in here." He looked at Kerrie. "What is happening in the Kinney Fine Chicken murders? There was nothing in the paper about it."

"There is a press meeting this afternoon. I'm going to attend with a new reporter, Jeb Grantham. There should be an article in tomorrow's paper."

"I have to go to Attorney Faber's office this afternoon. He is going to give me information on what I need and have to do to present my appeal." Jinkx thumbed through the folder. "Very interesting," he remarked as he closed the folder.

"Well, time to get back to work," said Kerrie.

"Well, time to go to work," said Jinkx.

"Time for me to get a little rest before I go to work," said Marissa.

He walked into Faber's office. His secretary said that he was not there, but he left a package for him. Jinkx took the package and went to the law library before he opened it. "Boy, what have I got here?" He read the ten pages of instructions first, and looked around the library. He had to enlist the services of the one in charge of the library to guide him to the



right sections that he needed. "Now I know why attorney's charge so much."

\*\*\*\*\*

He was going to start the day by reading the newspaper and then go to the law library. He had studied most of the information that Rutherford had given him, and within his mind he started to put together his plan. "I need to put everything in sequence, chronologically."

Barron Rutherford came into the Whistle Stop and joined Jinkx "Some one in Klimore tried to get in touch with you, as I was told. A Ramey Broom. You know him? He was told you no longer worked here."

"I know where he lives. I'll get down there to see him tonight. Anything new at the courthouse?"

"The Sheriff is highly pissed off because you didn't go along with his bull shit. I understand he is walking on pins and needles."

"Now he knows how I feel."

"I turned in my resignation this morning. He wasn't there, so I left it with Donner. And, before I forget. Our great Captain Hummer is going to the DPS. Can you believe that? Looks like he completed his mission, to get rid of you, and have Ashley demoted, then move on. I guess you know who will be the new Patrol Captain."

"I need one guess. Paul Finnegan. His nose is not quite as brown as Hummers, but it will soon be."

"I have to go. See you later. My phone number is in that package."

"I need everything you gave me. I've got so many papers in my folder it's about as thick as the Los Angeles yellow page phone book."

"Do it right, Jinkx. Do it right. I'll see you later. Keep in touch."

Jinkx read the Klimore murder article.

## **SLAYINGS**

**Officials study bracelet  
for clues**

**By Ellis Henderson  
Staff Writer**

Klimore—Investigators' are now checking to see whether a woman's bracelet turned in to police two days ago belonged to one of the persons



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

abducted from Kinney's Fine Chicken and killed nearly two weeks ago, Klimore Police Chief Dirk Hadley said.

Hadley would not say where it was found, and could not say if it had anything to do with the murder case. "We don't know whether it is related or not," he said.

"Investigators will have to check with family members before they can determine if it belonged to Odella Howell or Minnie Talley," Hadley said.

No jewelry, wallets or purses belonging to the victims have been found.

Hadley reiterated his plea for anyone connected with the killings to come forward now. No one responded to the first plea.

"I honestly feel someone is...wrestling with this," he said. "I know they're scared. I know they're concerned. Until they actually face it, it's not going to get any better, it's going to get worse. If they have any first hand knowledge or think they may have first hand knowledge they should contact us."

"They don't even have to come down here, just simply call us. They don't even have to tell us who they are."

A \$50,000.00 reward is offered for information.

"Maybe someone will come forward," thought Jinkx. "It's been known to happen. But, not this time. I don't think so."

He drove to Klimore and went to Ramey Broom's farm. He knocked on the door.

Ramey came to the door. "Come on in. Say, they said you no longer was with the Sheriffs Department. What happened?"

Jinkx told Ramey what happened. "I've told this so many times I can tell it without thinking. What's up?"

"Well, I have some information that might be used to solve the Klimore killings. You know, the chicken place."

"Really? Have you told the police about it?"

"Shit. Do you think they would listen to me? Here's what I have. I went down on Bealle Road and took that tiger I was telling you about. I took the tiger and put him in the cage out back here, and then I went back to get the house he sleeps in. When I raised the house up to move it, I find



a pair of blood soaked coveralls under the house. I was told by one of the girls at the trailer house that John Mallory Jr. took them off and stuffed them under the tiger house the night of the Kinney Fine Chicken murders. I have them and don't know exactly what to do with them. What do you suggest?"

"They have to be given to the police. Here's who you give them to at the Klimore Police Department. Get in touch with Detective Dwight Waskom. He will treat you right. He'll meet you anywhere, and he is the only one that I would give any evidence to."

"I'll do that tomorrow. One more thing I wanted to tell you. I know you heard about Weldon Severnson getting busted. Well, he called me from the jail in Tyler. He said that there was going to be a bond nearing shortly, and that he had some information that he wanted to get to the newspaper. He didn't say very much about it, except that it was very important that he give the newspaper some good information about some of the officers that made the bust."

"If he calls back, have him get in touch with Kerrie Wintz at the Linview News. Let me write that down for you."

## **CHAPTER 8**

Jinkx had familiarized himself with the books at the law library, and he could look up the information that Faber had instructed him to incorporate into his appeal presentation. He mumbled a lot to himself, as he had to refer from book to book to complete paragraphs on each subject. "Damn. Faber had the right idea in having me research this. This is nerve racking. Let me see. Now, I have to separate the Fifth and Fourteenth Amendment rights categorically. That's the way it has to be done" He read from the instructions of Faber. "I have to separate that contained in the State rights from what is contained in the Sheriffs Department Policy Manual from the Grabe County Personnel Policy Manual, from this, from that." He found an important paragraph in Vernon's Texas Civil Statutes. Let me see, now. Complaints Against Law Enforcement Officers." He read it several times. "Good stuff. I sure as hell wasn't afforded this when



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

I was canned. Well, I have about fifty articles to run through the copy machine. By the time I finish copying it, it will be time to get out of here."

He and Marissa went to the Hot Biscuit for breakfast and were to meet Kerrie there, at her request. Jinkx picked a booth and saw a newspaper on the table. He looked at the headlines, and called them to Marissa's attention. "Looks like a big time bust went down. This is the results of the drug bust last week."

### KLIMOREITES ARE INDICTED IN DRUG CASE

By Kerri Wintz  
Staff Writer

Linview—A Klimore man and his six sons, and his daughter-in-law were among 14 persons indicted by a federal grand jury in Tyler capping a lengthy investigation by the E.T. Drug Task Force.

A broad 35-count indictment was returned, charging 14 suspects with various violations of the controlled substance act.

It is also rumored that some of the individuals arrested have been complaining to newspapers and others about law enforcement officers "planting" drugs on relatives when they were arrested. It is also rumored that some of the officers that conducted the investigation had coerced, threatened and used other means to persuade witnesses to "lie" and give false testimony to the grand jury to gain an indictment.

....A detention hearing for the defendants was slated for Friday afternoon in the Federal Court Building in Tyler.

Federal law requires trial to begin within 70 days of arrest.

It is also rumored that some witnesses that went before the grand jury were given drugs by officers of the drug task force, and were under the influence of drugs when they gave testimony.

"Well, well," said Jinkx. "Looks like someone finally got caught up with. Three guesses on who furnished the drugs to the witnesses."

Marissa saw Kerrie as she entered the restaurant and waved to her.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

"What do you think about the article I wrote on those that were indicted on the drug bust?" asked Kerrie as she sat down.

"Where did you get this information about the officers giving drugs to some of the witnesses?"

"I got a call from a Weldon Severnson, one of the defendants. He told me that he had some worthwhile information about some of the officers involved in the drug bust. He talked for quite a while and said that if he got out on bail he would have more to tell me. He mentioned a few names, and guess whose name came up?"

"A wild guess. Lyle Farmer?"

"Right. One of Sheriff Waverley's best," remarked Kerrie.

"Yeah, right," he said.

"I am going to go to the bond hearing and try to meet this Severnson in person. He told me that he had a court appointed attorney, Bick Flores, and that he had tried to get Severnson to plead guilty, as he could swing a deal with the federal prosecutors and get a short sentence for him. He said that he was thinking on this deal. He told me he wasn't guilty, although that's what they all say."

"Stick with it. If it's true it will eventually show up."

"He also said that he didn't trust his court appointed attorney as he has heard that he always tried to get his clients, especially those that had no money to hire their own attorney, a plea bargain, as he got paid a minimal fee."

"That's true. If a defense attorney stands to make a small amount of money, say \$3000.00 on a case as a court appointed attorney, in relation to \$12,000.00 that he would be paid by a client that has money, naturally he looks for the easy way and fast way out of his commitment. There are very few attorneys that will go all out in a defense as a court appointed attorney. Don't let anyone tell you different."

"I can see your point," said Kerrie. .... "The Kinney Fine Chicken murders have cooled down. I called the Klimore Police Department and the Rashe County Sheriffs Department and they said that there has been nothing new to help in their investigation. The District Attorney of Grabe County, Danny Bonham, told me that he wasn't going to pursue the robbery and abduction part of it, as that's all the charges he could file as that's all that happened in his jurisdiction, Grabe County. He said that if



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

he got involved in these aspects, he could screw up the murder end of it for Rashe county, where all the murders actually occurred."

"Let me remind you," remarked Jinkx. "That this is Grabe County. There is always an out in this county. Mark my word, neither the robbery, abduction, which is kidnapping, will never, and I repeat, never, be solved."

"Do you think someone will get paid off?" asked Kerrie.

"I just said, this is Grabe County. Don't be surprised if you hear that there was the possibility that several took a payoff to cover this one up. They might arrest one of their suspects but he will get out of it. They might even arrest one of the prime suspects and send him, or her, to prison for a period of time to, shall we say, get him out of the way for a while, and escape the indictment and conviction of the Kinney Fine Chicken murders."

"I'll change the subject, Jinkx. How are you coming along with your appeal?" asked Kerrie.

"I'm headed to the law library today. Boy, there is a lot to this law stuff."

"That's why lawyers charge so much," remarked Kerrie.

\*\*\*\*\*

Two weeks had passed and Jinkx had looked at enough law books to last him a life time. He had went to Attorney Faber's office after spending day after day at the law library, as he was called by Faber and asked to come to his office.

"Good news, " said Faber. "We go to court on the 16<sup>th</sup>, which is two weeks away. You have done a remarkable job on your research of the information that we will need to present the appeal. It's in proper order, and, I might say, I couldn't have done better myself."

"I take that as a compliment coming from you, Mr. Faber. I have a few more things to look up and I also have some notes that I want to incorporate into the appeal."

"Remember this, Jinkx. Push aside your personal feelings toward all that are involved in this appeal. No bull shit is allowed, only issues that are relevant. Only issues that are relevant."

"I understand that. I have really gained respect for lawyers and law books. Damn, I didn't know there was this much involved in the defense



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

211

of one's dignity. If I was a young man I would probably have given up by now."

"I thought I would spring this on you. I am going to ask the court to allow you to help present the appeal."

"I-I don't, I don't know if I could do that. I'm not trained for law work, only the enforcement of it."

"Remember I said that you would get more out of it if you did this yourself? You can do it. You have to do it. I can't spend all the time in the courtroom with you. I have other clients and other cases that cannot be postponed. We do not want to postpone this appeal. We got a go, and we're going to go. I have several books in my law library that you have to study, along with what you haven't finished at the law library. The books you will study here are rules that govern court procedure and evidence. Court demeanor is important also. So, while you're at the courthouse, in between your research, sit in on some of the court proceedings in the courtrooms. Pick a civil trial, not a criminal trial. I want you to finish everything five days before the hearing, as we will prepare our presentation."

\*\*\*\*\*

The time had passed fast and the next day was the day for Jinkx and Attorney Faber to approach the County Court at Law with the appeal. Between the two of them, with Faber's guidance, they had drafted a decent appeal, so said Faber. He had received several documents from the Sheriff's Department, reluctantly of course. Jinkx had received the requested medical records from Yvonne at the hospital, with a few extra documents thrown in that would bolster the appeal.

Rutherford met him at the entrance to the courthouse and gave him a folder. "This is the latest that happened several days ago. I got this copy of Patrol Captain Finnegan's latest caper from someone in the jail that is pulling for you."

Jinkx looked at the offense report. "Yeah, I have this medical report from the hospital but I didn't know anything about it. This will do the trick. You said Patrol Captain Finnegan?"

"That's right. After he was made the Patrol Captain he made one of his famous arrests and thundered on this guy's head when he was handcuffed in the patrol unit. You know, same old bull shit."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"No surprise. I'm glad you're going to testify on my behalf. All I want is the truth. I would like for you to wait in the law library with another witness, and I'll send word to you when to come to the courtroom, OK?"

"Who is the other witness?"

"Go see. Even you will be surprised at this witness appearing here to face Waverly."

"You won't even give me a hint?"

"Surprise."

"I forgot to tell you. Hummer won't be here to testify against you. Neither will Finnegan, Wainger or Matlock."

The court hearing was called to order. "Does any one wish to give an opening statement?" asked Judge Stamp.

Attorney Faber stood up. "I do, your Honor. I intend to show the court that pursuant to the Fifth and Fourteenth Amendments of the United States Constitution, under the provisions of U.S.C. 1331, and 42 U.S.C. 1983 and 42 U.S.C. 1985 (3), Mr. Finner's rights were violated by Patrol Captain Daniel Hummer, Chief Deputy Jamie Boy Donner and Sheriff Billy Shane Waverly, violating Mr. Finner's constitutional right to due process of law. This caused Sheriff Waverly to summarily terminate Mr. Finner's employment as Deputy Sheriff of Grabe County, Texas, without just cause.

"Patrol Captain Daniel Hummer, Chief Deputy Donner and Sheriff Waverly refused to convene a Review Board, as per departmental policy and procedure, so that Mr. Finner could fairly rebut presumed evidence against him.

"Patrol Captain Daniel Hummer, Chief Deputy Donner and Sheriff Waverly refused to present to Mr. Finner, upon his request several times, to present presumed written and signed complaints, so therefore presumed complaints were not appropriately set forth so that Mr. Finner could not challenge and present opposing evidence.

"Sheriff Waverly failed to follow legal and proper employment separation procedures for a regular Grabe County employee, as set forth, and as required, in the Grabe County Personnel Policy Manual, as



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

213

contained in Chapter XIV, Sub-Chapter III, 2A (1) through (5), 3D, and 3F (1) through (3).

“Sheriff Waverly had refused to present to Mr. Finner, a Law Enforcement Officer of the State of Texas, a copy of the presumed complaints within a reasonable amount of time, and before any disciplinary action should have been taken against Mr. Finner, as set forth, and required, in Vernon’s Texas Civil Statutes, Article 6252-20.

“Sheriff Waverly violated 42 U.S.C. 1985 (3) by denying Mr. Finner Equal Protection of the Laws and Equal Immunities. Mr. Finner’s right to Equal Protection and Due Process was violated, in that disciplinary action meted out was not consistent within the Gregg County Sheriffs Department Manual. Mr. Finner was not given disciplinary action consistent with other deputies and/or Grabe County Sheriffs Department employees.

“Sheriff Waverly has violated the Grabe County Personnel Policy Manual Chapter XIII, 2 C (1).(2) and (3), Like Penalties For Like Offenses, which reads: (1) In taking disciplinary actions like penalties should be imposed for like offenses. Departments should be as consistent as possible when deciding on disciplinary actions. Adherence to this principle will help to insure equitable and uniform treatment to those employees against whom such adverse action is proposed.(Alleged) (2) ....Nevertheless, surface consistency should be avoided. Departments should give consideration to all factors involved when deciding what penalty is appropriate, not only the gravity of the offense, but other matters as the existence of mitigating circumstances, the frequency of the offense and whether the action accords with justice in the particular situation. (3) Department codes of penalties can be of considerable value in securing equitable treatment of employees provided they are not so flexible as to impair due consideration of the factors referred to in (2) above.

“These violations are evidenced by documentation to be presented to this court that: 1. On or about March 21, two years ago, a Grabe County Sheriff’s Deputy did cause to be taken to the Good Samaritan Medical Center, for treatment and later hospitalized with severe head injuries, a prisoner that was in his custody. 2. On or about March 31, two years ago, the same Grabe County Sheriff’s Deputy, did cause to be taken to the



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Grand Samaratin Medical Center, for treatment and hospitalization with severe head injuries, a prisoner that was in his custody. 3. On or about May 2, two years ago, the same Grabe County Sheriff's Deputy, did cause to be taken to the Grand Samaratin Medical Center, for treatment of head injuries, a prisoner that was in his custody. As witnessed by three other deputies, this deputy took an axe handle from the trunk of his patrol unit and struck the black handcuffed prisoner on and about the head while he was laying in the middle of the road. 4. On or about September 10, two years ago, a Grabe County Sheriff's Deputy did cause to be taken to the Grand Samaratin Medical Center, for treatment of head injuries, a prisoner that was in his custody. While this prisoner was being booked into the jail, and due to the prisoner's intoxicated condition, the prisoner had failed to answer the Deputy's questions to his satisfaction, so therefore was struck several times on and about the head. Sheriff Waverly covered up this beating by drafting a release stating that: 'The prisoner would hold harmless the County of Grabe, and any of its officials or employees thereof for any harm, injury, damage or other result stemming from actions of the Grabe County Sheriffs Department.' The prisoner, fearing that something else, could, or would, happen to him while in custody of the Sheriffs Department, reluctantly signed the release, giving up all rights for recourse of action. 5. On or about February 2, this year, a Grabe County Sheriffs Deputy, the same one in items 1, 2 and 3, and who was now promoted to Patrol Captain, did cause to be taken to the Grand Samaratin Medical Center, with injuries to his jaw, both eyes blackened, neck, upper rib cage and upper lip, a prisoner that was in his custody. To sum this up, Sheriff Waverly and several supervisors were aware that these prisoners had been manhandled and beaten, but the only disciplinary action taken was that after the last prisoner was beaten, item 5, and the only punishment was that this Deputy's Grabe County furnished unit was taken away for two (2) days.

"Sheriff Waverly and Chief Deputy Donner refused to reprimand, or recommend a reprimand, for a Grabe County Deputy, who on or about March 17, two years ago, failed to search his prisoner properly, and a handgun, a concealed handgun, was taken from this prisoner in the book-in or jail area. Sheriff Waverly, Chief Deputy Donner and Jail Captain



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

215

Wainger were aware of this incident, but refused to recommend, or take, any disciplinary action.

....“Chief Deputy Donner, the representative of Sheriff Waverly, violated Chapter XIII Sub-Chapter 1, 2A, Choosing Among Disciplinary Actions, which reads: There are many situations which may call for disciplinary action and a wide range of disciplinary actions are available, ranging from a warning or reprimand to suspension, reduction in rank or pay, or removal from the service. This next one pertains to the actions of Chief Deputy Donner. ‘There is no substitute for judgement in selecting among them, and in selecting an appropriate disciplinary action the department should not make the mistake of demanding that the employee resign or retire to keep from being removed. The reason is that a resignation or optional retirement obtained by such means may result in litigation.

“Chapter XIV, Sub-Chapter III, 2, Adverse Action Procedures, A, Notice Of Proposed Adverse Action Procedures. (1) An employee should be given at least ten full days (excluding Saturday, Sunday and legal holidays) advance written notice of the proposed action. The notice must state the reasons supporting the proposed action specifically and in detail, including names, times and place. (2) The notice should be self contained so that a person unacquainted with the facts and circumstance involved can obtain from the notice a clear understanding of the reasons for the proposed action. (3) The notice must make it clear that it concerns only a proposed action and not a matter already decided upon. (4) The notice must tell the employee that he has a right to reply both personally and in writing, and to submit affidavits. (5) The notice should tell him that his reply, if any, will be considered. And, it should identify the person to receive a reply and assure him that he will be informed of the department’s final decision in the matter.

“And, in reference to Chapter XIV, Sub-Chapter III, 2B, Employee Reply. The employee reply, either written or oral, must be made within five days to the designated official.

“Additional time may be granted if the Department Official believes the circumstances warrant. Since Mr. Finner was not afforded the complaints that were allegedly signed against him, and that he asked for so many times, he could not formulate a correct answer to the allegations.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

This was a hurry up, get rid of quickly, don't go by the policies and procedures, make up our own rules, termination. Other matters will be dealt with during the hearing. I have briefs to submit to the court in support of reinstating Mr. Finner to his prior status of Deputy Sheriff. Thank you, Your Honor."

"Does counsel for the Sheriff's Department have an opening statement?" asked Judge Stamp.

Attorney Gary Isner stood up. ...."Your Honor, we do not have an opening statement, but reserve the right to make an opening statement later, during the hearing."

"So noted," said the Judge. "Is that all, counselor?"

"Yes, it is," replied the attorney.

"Proceed, Mr. Faber."

"I'd like to call Mr. Finner as my first witness."

Jinkx took the stand and was sworn in.

Attorney Faber: "State your name please, and spell your last name."

Jinkx: "Jinkx Finner. That's J-i-n-k-x, F-i-n-n-e-r."

Attorney Faber: "Were you previously employed by the Grabe County Sheriffs Department?"

Jinkx: "Yes, I was, for almost three years."

Attorney Faber: "Did you perform your duties as best you could?"

Jinkx: "Yes, I did."

Attorney Faber: "Were you, in the past, ever reprimanded by the Sheriffs Department? Other than being terminated, I mean."

Jinkx: "No. I wasn't."

Attorney Faber: "Did you get along with the supervisors at the Sheriffs Department?"

Jinkx: "Yes, I did."

Attorney Faber: "Did you get along with Sheriff Waverly?"

Jinkx: "I very seldom saw the Sheriff. I reported for duty at a certain time, got off at a certain time, and saw very few of the day shift supervisors, including the Sheriff. I had a meeting with Chief Deputy Donner the second day I worked for the Sheriffs Department."

Attorney Faber: "What was the nature of that meeting, Mr. Finner?"

Jinkx: "Another deputy, Deputy Robert Wainger, was my training officer, and he was the driver of our patrol unit when it was time to check



out. He filled the gas tank, filled out the gas slip, and got behind the wheel to drive to the courthouse to check out. He forgot to take the gas nozzle out of the gas tank and drove away from the pumps. He pulled the nozzle off the end of the gas hose. He told me he would take care of it, but I was called by Sgt. Rutherford early the next morning and told to report for duty a little early, as the Chief Deputy wanted to talk to me. When I went in his office he practically accused me of pulling the nozzle off the hose, as he saw on the log that I was checked out with that particular unit. He didn't ask me if I had done it. He insinuated that I had done it, and that Deputy Wainger didn't know anything about it. I told him that Deputy Wainger had drove off with the nozzle in the gas tank and that's why it was pulled off."

Attorney Faber: "Did you report this to Sgt. Rutherford, that Deputy Wainger had been drinking that night?"

Jinkx: "Yes, I did. I told him that I knew, not that I suspected, but that I knew that Deputy Wainger was drunk that night."

Attorney Faber: "Did you tell Chief Deputy Donner that Deputy Wainger was drunk that night?"

Jinkx: "No, I didn't."

Attorney Faber: "Why not?"

Jinkx: "I don't, ah,--I guess you would call it, fink, on my fellow officers, especially to the higher echelon of supervision. It doesn't set too well with your fellow officers. Although I don't lie to protect them."

Attorney Faber: "Would you have told the Chief Deputy that he was drunk if he would have asked you?"

Jinkx: "Yes, I would have told him."

Attorney Faber: "Why did you tell the Sgt. about him being drunk, but not the Chief Deputy?"

Jinkx: "Sgts. are a little more understanding than Chief Deputies. Sgt. Rutherford told me that he would handle it, and that was good enough for me."

Attorney Faber: "How did he get drunk when you were with him, as a partner?"

Jinkx: "Since he was the senior officer, he asked me to take him to a house on fourth street. I did, and then I picked him up about an hour later and he was blasted. I mean, ah, drunk. Intoxicated.."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Attorney Faber: "Did you tell your Sgt. about that too?"

Jinkx: "I did, and that was what he was going to handle along with the pulling the nozzle off the hose."

Attorney Faber: "Were there any repercussions about your telling the Sgt. about Wainger's condition? The drinking I mean."

Jinkx: "Not at that point."

Attorney Faber: "Mr. Finner, did you relieve Deputy Wainger at the Grand Samaratin Medical Center when a prisoner was being guarded by the Sheriffs Department, and would you tell the court what happened?"

Jinkx: "We were to guard a prisoner at the hospital, and I relieved Deputy Wainger. I looked at the prisoner before I actually relieved him. The prisoner was handcuffed to the bed, with the handcuffs cranked up so tight that the prisoner had handcuff marks on his wrists. Bad marks. The prisoner also had a busted lip and bruises on his face and head. I had the nurse make a report on what happened, and I also made a little report and turned it in to supervision."

Attorney Faber: "Was Deputy Wainger upset about this report?"

Jinkx: "I heard that he was really upset over the fact that I reported it, and some of the other deputies said that he was going to get even with me. Of course, that's what I heard. Deputy Wainger never approached me concerning anything that happened between us. I understand that he was transferred to the jail facility over this and other matters and was eventually promoted to Jail Captain."

Attorney Faber: "Mr. Finner, is this the same Deputy Wainger, or Captain Wainger, that presumably wrote and orchestrated complaints written against you causing you to be here today?"

Jinkx: "Yes, it is. The same one."

Attorney Faber: "Would you tell the court what happened on December 25<sup>th</sup>, last year, concerning a prisoner by the name of Roswell Powers?"

Jinkx: "On December 25<sup>th</sup>, of last year, while on routine patrol for the Grabe County Sheriffs Department, I stopped a vehicle at Interstate and Old Glidding Highway, at the Community Store. The reason for the stop was that the driver failed to maintain a single lane. Taken from the vehicle was a black male, later identified as Roswell Powers of Klimore, Texas. When Mr. Powers was taken from his vehicle he smelled of an



alcoholic beverage. Because of the heavy smell of alcohol, and also because of Mr. Power's unsteadiness in walking and standing, I determined that Mr. Powers was intoxicated, and I told him to place his hands on the car. At this time I conducted a pat search, but Mr. Power's condition made it difficult to search and stabilize Mr. Powers. Also, a crowd was beginning to gather and I felt it necessary to take Mr. Powers from the scene as quickly as possible. I handcuffed Mr. Powers and placed him in the back seat of the patrol unit and I secured him with a seat belt. Upon arrival at the Grabe County Courthouse, I helped Mr. Powers from the patrol unit and practically had to carry him to the elevator. I locked my service weapon in the lock box next to the elevator. He rode the elevator to the sixth floor, which is the book-in or jail area, all the while helping Mr. Powers stay on his feet. Mr. Powers left the elevator first, and I guided him to one of the book-in tables. I took the handcuff from Mr. Power's left hand first. Mr. Powers rotated slightly to the left and I had to pull him back around to remove the handcuff from his other hand. I told Mr. Powers to place his hands on the table, and I guided his hands to the top of the table. I put my right hand in his right front pocket and pulled out a handkerchief which was wrapped around a small automatic handgun and a small pocket knife. I then stuck the gun in my belt, in the back. I then rotated, or spun Mr. Powers around and told him to raise his hands. He did not raise his hands, but instead backed up slightly to the wall, a glass partition between the book-in room and the console room, in a boxing stance. Thinking that he could possibly have another gun, or weapon, I slapped Mr. Powers with an open hand, forced his arms up into the air, and then conducted a thorough search. When I was satisfied that Mr. Powers had no other weapons, I told him to remove his coat. I placed the gun and knife on the end of the table near the door to the console room. At this time the female jailer, Gladys Boren, came out of the console room where she had been during this confrontation with Mr. Powers. She had started out once before, but when I had this problem with Mr. Powers, she went back into the console room. The female booking officer stood by the table. When I walked back to where Powers was standing I noticed that he had not taken off his coat. Seeing that Mr. Powers was not in control of himself, I removed his coat for him, and told him to set in the chair at the end of the table, away from the gun, of



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

course. I gently pushed him into the chair. He stood up so I pushed him back into the chair. He stood up so I pushed him back into the chair. He stood up again. When I pushed him back into the chair the last time, he remained seated. I walked to where the gun was on the opposite end of the table and picked it up. At this time the Jail Captain, Captain Wainger, and jailer Richard Matlock, came out of the room in back of the console, or control room, and Captain Wainger asked me, 'do you need any help?' I replied, 'Not now.' Roswell Powers submitted to an intoxilizer test and the results showed an alcohol content of 0.029% in his blood. The test was run by Richard Matlock. Due to the gravity of the situation I used only force that was necessary to arrest, search and insure the detention of my prisoner. I received no help, or asked for any help, from any of the jail personnel while in this delicate situation. I didn't know that anyone was in the jail area except the female jailer, Gladys Boren."

Attorney Faber: "Before we go any farther, Mr. Finner, I'm going to show you our Exhibit 1. Can you identify this for the court?" He handed Jinkx a small, blue slip of paper.

Jinkx: "This is an officers copy, which is my copy, of the results of an intoxilizer test. It contains the name of the one on whom the test was run, Roswell Powers. The date, time of test, intoxilizer operator and his certification number, and the results of the test."

Attorney Faber: "What are the results of that test as shown, Mr. Finner?"

Jinkx: "The results as shown, is 0.029% of alcohol in the blood."

Attorney Faber: "What percentage of alcohol in the blood is considered to be intoxicated by Texas law, Mr. Finner?"

Jinkx: "0.010%".

Attorney Faber: "In other words, you took a driver off our public streets that would be considered almost three times as drunk as Texas law allows. Is that correct?"

Jinkx: "Yes, that's correct."

Attorney Faber: "In other words, you did your duty that you were trained for, and hired for, by the Grabe County Sheriffs Department?"

Jinkx: "Yes sir."

Attorney Faber: "Mr. Finner, would you look at these documents and tell the court what they are? These are our Exhibits 2 and 3."



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

221

Jinkx: "This is an offense report that I filled out on Mr. Powers. This document is a report that is filled out on those that are suspected of driving while intoxicated. A special little report that gives a short summary of what happened, and what law was violated."

Attorney Faber: "These reports concern Roswell Powers, is that right?"

Jinkx: "That's correct."

Attorney Faber: "What happened later after you had left the book-in area of the jail?"

Jinkx: "I was approached by Lt. Rutherford and advised that the jail personnel had written complaints against me for the way, they said, I handled my prisoner, Mr. Powers. I was asked to make a detailed report, and I did so."

Attorney Faber: "Is this the report that you made that Lt. Rutherford asked you to make? Our Exhibit 4."

Jinkx: Jinkx looked the report over. "Yes sir. This is the report."

Attorney Faber: "What happened when you reported for duty the day after, which would be Monday the 26<sup>th</sup> of December?"

Jinkx: "When I reported for duty on December 26<sup>th</sup>, I was advised by Daniel Hummer, Patrol Division Captain, that jail personnel, at the direction of Captain Wainger, the Jail Division Captain, had written complaints against me, alleging that I had intentionally and knowingly allowed a prisoner, that was in my custody, to possess a small handgun when entering the book-in or jail area. Also that I was to have supposedly cursed the prisoner and physically manhandled him and some presumed violations of the Policy Manual, such as Protection of Prisoners, their rights and their property and other quotations I don't recall. I asked Captain Hummer for the complaints, so as to see these allegations, and also who had made them. Captain Hummer refused to show me the complaints, but instead presented me with a letter that had been pre-written prior to the time I had been called into his office."

Attorney Faber: "Mr. Finner, is this the letter that was given to you by the Patrol Captain? Our Exhibit 5."

Jinkx: "Yes sir, this is the letter."

Attorney Faber: "This is your copy of the letter for your personal record, is that correct? Signed by D. Hummer, Patrol Captain?"



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Jinkx: "That's correct."

Attorney Faber: "Would you read the letter to the court?"

Jinkx read the letter to the court.

Attorney Faber: "Did Captain D. Hummer, explain to you what the violations consisted of? Wait. Let me re-phrase that question. Did you understand fully what the allegations meant? In other words, did you have a departmental manual to refer to and see if the allegations met the guidelines as set forth in the manual?"

Jinkx: "I didn't know what the violations were exactly. I only had his interpretation of the policy and procedure to go by, as was what was contained in his letter of recommended termination. I did have a Sheriffs Department Policy Manual in my locker, also a copy of the amended manual that was never actually adopted by the Sheriff, but was passed out to us by Captain Hummer. He had used the Dallas County Sheriffs Department Policy Manual as a guideline, and it contained excerpts from this manual that he called 'amended procedures and policy.' It is my understanding that the Sheriff had never adopted this amended policy."

Attorney Faber: "What do you mean when you say the Sheriff had never adopted the amendment to his already established Policy Manual?"

Jinkx: "Well, in his, the Sheriff's Policy Manual, I remember that when I first read it, it was compiled and submitted by an individual, and then was approved by the Sheriff. The amended policy manual was, as I said, just pages copied from another department's Policy Manual, and it never showed that it was ever adopted by Sheriff Waverly. I did have a Sheriffs Department policy manual in my locker, but I didn't think to even look at it. I was so flabbergasted over having received a letter of this nature, I was, I would say, out of it."

Attorney Faber: "What happened next, after you read the letter that the Patrol Captain handed you?"

Jinkx: "I asked to see the complaints again, but he again refused to present them to me. He called my attention to the last paragraph on the letter."

Attorney Faber: "Mr. Finner, would you read the last paragraph to the court?"



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

223

Jinkx: "On December 26<sup>th</sup> at approximately 3:30 p.m. I Captain Daniel Hummer, advised Deputy Finner he was on suspension until further notice pending conclusion of the investigation."

Attorney Faber: "Did you ask the Patrol Captain anything else?"

Jinkx: "I asked him to go before the Review Board."

Attorney Faber: "What was his reply?"

Jinkx: "He really didn't give me an answer. He said that I was to report to Chief Deputy Donner the next day at 9:00AM. I assumed that at that time I was to go before a Review Board. I asked him again to see the complaints that were signed against me and he couldn't produce them."

Attorney Faber: "When you saw Chief Deputy Donner the next day, what happened?"

Jinkx: "I reported to Chief Donner the next day at 9:00A.M. and told him what happened with my prisoner on the 25<sup>th</sup>. He took the letter that I was given by Captain Hummer, wrote a note on the bottom of it and gave it back to me. I then asked him to go before the Review Board, and that I thought I was to go before the Review Board this morning. He didn't say anything. I asked him again. No response. I asked him again and he said, 'not you'. I don't remember if I asked him again or not, but it was clear that I was not going to go before a Review Board. He asked me to resign, which was a shocker to me. I said that I would not resign. He then said that if I wanted a good recommendation on my next job, I would resign. I said that I would not resign because I didn't do anything wrong. He said that I was to make an appointment with the Sheriff and tell him my story. He said that he was going to support the termination recommendation of Captain Hummer, but that the Sheriff would be the one that would fire me, and also that the Sheriff would not go against the recommendations of termination. I then asked to see the complaints that were supposedly written against me and he said that I would get them later. I said that I wanted to see them now. He said that we had no other business, and to get out of his office."

Attorney Faber: "Mr. Finner, would you look at this letter of Captain Hummer's, and look closely at the little note written in the lower left hand portion of the letter. Is that the note that was written by Chief Deputy Donner? Our Exhibit 5A. The same as evidenced as Exhibit 5."

Jinkx: "Yes sir, that is the note written by Chief Donner."



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Attorney Faber: "I want to clarify one thing you testified to, Mr. Finner. You did say that the Chief Deputy of the Grabe County Sheriffs Department had demanded that you resign in order to get a good recommendation on your next job, is that correct?"

Jinkx: "I might have insinuated that he asked me to resign, but I would say that he more or less demanded that I resign. Yes, sir. He said that if I wanted a good recommendation on my next job I would resign."

Attorney Faber: "When did you see the Sheriff?"

Jinkx: "I saw the Sheriff on the 3<sup>rd</sup> of January and told him the same story I told Captain Hummer and Chief Donner. I told the Sheriff that the Chief had told me that if I wanted a good recommendation on my next job, I would resign. The Sheriff said that he run this show and that he would make the decisions. It was about this time that I asked to see the complaints that were signed against me. He said I would see them later. I said that I wanted to see them now, and he again said later. He said that he would take everything into consideration, and give me an answer later. I then left his office."

Attorney Faber: "When did you actually receive notice that you had been terminated?"

Jinkx: "Later on that day a Grabe County Deputy delivered a letter to me from the Sheriff."

Attorney Faber: "Would you take a look at this letter and identify it, please? Our Exhibit 6."

Jinkx: "That's the letter of termination that I received from Sheriff Waverly."

Attorney Faber: "Read the letter aloud, Mr. Finner."

Jinkx: "Dear Sir: After careful consideration, it is my opinion that your termination with this department be effective immediately. The reasons as stated in Captain Hummer's letter, and violation of Policy Manual P.4, Section 8; Section 15 & 21, Amended Policy Manual P. 11, Section 8:03. You have the right to appeal this decision to the Commissioner's Court of Grabe County within (10) days. Sincerely, Billy Waverly, Sheriff."

Attorney Faber: "Do you have anything to add, Mr. Finner?"

Jinkx: "I remember that I asked the Sheriff to go before a Review Board, and he did not answer me. That's all."



Attorney Faber then faced the judge. "Your Honor, with the court's permission, Mr. Finner will be helping present his appeal. as I have several pending cases and cannot be attending this appeal daily. Mr. Finner wishes to help present this appeal. He requests that he have the same privileges as any pro se appellee or pro se plaintiff. He asks that the court grant him this request."

"Mr. Finner," said the judge. "Do you know the consequences you will suffer if you fail in your attempt to present your appeal? I will rule on what is presented, or rebutted. You do understand this, don't you?"

Jinkx: "Yes, I do. I have been made fully aware of the consequences, and I don't think that I am taking that much of a chance. I feel that the truth will prevail, regardless of who presents my appeal."

Judge Stamp: "Do you realize that you are going to be cross examined by the counsel that represents the Grabe County Sheriffs Department, a recognized and experienced attorney?"

Jinkx: "I surely do. If my request is granted I want to be treated as any pro se plaintiff or appellee. As I said before, the truth will prevail. I ask you personally to honor my request."

The judge looked at Attorney Isner. "Counsel, do you have any objection to Mr. Finner helping present his appeal to this court?"

Attorney Isner leaned over to talk to the Sheriff and Chief Deputy. "I say let him try to be an attorney. I'll bury his ass in legal mumbo jumbo and send him home."

"He's trying to be a big time operator," said the Sheriff. "He can't prove that we did anything wrong, because we didn't."

...."Even if we did, which we didn't, he's not smart enough to prove otherwise. I have never gave an employee a choice to resign or get fired," said Chief Donner.

"Are we in agreement that he can continue, shall we say, on his own?" asked Attorney Isner.

They all nodded in agreement.

"Your Honor," said Attorney Isner. "We have no objection to Mr. Finner's request to help present his appeal. In fact, we welcome him."

The judge looked at Jinkx. "Your request is granted, Mr. Finner. Let the record show that Mr. Finner will assist Attorney Faber in the presentation of evidence in his appeal, and that when Attorney Faber is



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

not present, Mr. Finner will have the same privileges as a pro se plaintiff and pro se appellee." He turned to the courtroom. "This court will recess for fifteen minutes, and then Mr. Finner will take his place back on the witness stand." The judge gently pounded his gavel.

Jinkx joined Attorney Faber at the table. "I guess that Isner will try to confuse me when he cross examines me, won't he?"

"He sure will," replied Attorney Faber. "Think before you answer any questions. If you don't have an answer, say you don't have an answer for his question. Give a complete answer to the best of your recollection and ability."

Jinkx saw Marissa wave to him. She had been sitting behind the Sheriff and his attorney. "The attorney for the Sheriff said that he was going to confuse you with legal mumbo jumbo when the court was asked permission to allow you to present, or help present, your appeal. They talked loud enough for me to hear," she told Jinkx.

"We already suspected what they were going to do. He practiced this at our meetings over the past few days. I think we are ready for them. I know that cross examination from the Sheriff's attorney will be tough."

"Jinkx," called Attorney Faber.

He went back to the table. "Yes sir, what's the plan?"

"I'm going to finish up questioning you, so do you have anything that we should question you on that will not allow them to bring up when he questions you?"

"The only thing that I can think of is that I had given a statement to a newspaper reporter on one case that I testified in. She, Kerrie Wintz of the Linview News, quoted me, and printed what I said. I brought the clipping from the paper." Jinkx handed him the clipping.

He looked it over. "I remember this. I'll hang on to this and ask you a few simple questions. Anything else?"

"Not that I can think of."

The judge entered the courtroom and everyone stood up.

Jinkx went back to the witness stand.

"Remember, Mr. Finner. You are still under oath," said the judge.

Attorney Faber: "I'm going to finish up with a few more questions, Mr. Finner. Have you ever been told by the Sheriff, or one of his



representatives, told not to speak to the press, or give statements to the press, on any court hearing that you may have testified in?"

Jinkx: "I have. ....In one instance, I was asked a question by a newspaper reporter in which I gave a reply, an honest reply, and when an article appeared in the paper we were told at a briefing not to talk to the newspaper people. We were told this several times?"

Attorney Faber: "Did you give any other statement to the newspaper reporters concerning testimony in a case that you were involved in?"

Jinkx: "No, I did not."

Attorney Faber: ...."Mr. Finner, were you faithful and dependable in the performance of your public duties as an employee of the Grabe County Sheriffs Department?"

Jinkx: "Yes, I was."

Attorney Faber: "Do you feel that you were discharged without good cause and proper and legal separation procedures as set forth in Federal Law, State Law, case Law, The Grabe County Personnel Policy Manual and the Grabe County Sheriffs Department Policy Manual?"

Jinkx: "Yes, I do."

Attorney Faber: "I have no further questions, Your Honor. "

The judge looked at Attorney Isner. "Cross examine, counsel?"

Attorney Isner: "Yes, Your Honor. Now, Mr. Finner, do you know a newspaper reporter by the name of Kerrie Wintz?"

Jinkx: "Yes sir."

Attorney Isner: "Did you make a statement to her in a case that you gave testimony in?"

Jinkx: "Yes sir."

Attorney Isner: "Do you always give statements to the press in cases that you were giving testimony in?"

Jinkx: "I wasn't giving testimony, I had already given testimony, and then I was excused by the judge, so that was the end of the trial for me."

Attorney Isner: "But you did talk about the trial to the reporter, did you not?"

Jinkx: "Yes, I did."

Attorney Isner: ...."Wasn't this against the Grabe County Sheriffs Department Policy?"



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Jinkx: "Mr. Isner, there are approximately 34 pages to the Grabe County Sheriffs Department Manual. No where in it does it say that a deputy cannot talk to the news media, newspaper or otherwise. So, in answering your question, there was not, or is, a policy to that effect. After my name appeared in an article concerning a trial that I gave testimony, all employees were told not to talk to the newspaper."

Attorney Isner: "Did you continue to talk to the newspaper people after you were told not to talk to them.?"

Jinkx: "Yes, I did continue to talk to Kerrie Wintz of the Linview News. She is an acquaintance, a friend. I believe that freedom of speech still exists here in Grabe County. I don't think that has been taken away. I did not discuss any departmental business with Kerrie Wintz."

Judge Stamp pounded the gavel. "Counselor, I do think that Mr. Finner has answered your question, several times. Would you proceed with another line of questioning?"

Attorney Isner: "Mr. Finner, please answer me truthfully. Have you ever manhandled another prisoner?"

Jinkx: "Mr. Isner, truthfully, I have yet to manhandle any prisoner. I have never manhandled a prisoner, period."

Attorney Isner: "You have complaints, written complaints, against you, that state that you physically manhandled a prisoner. "

Jinkx: "The complaints are definitely false. I told the court exactly what happened."

Attorney Isner: "Mr. Finner, I do know that you now have in your possession a copy of the complaints that were signed against you."

Attorney Isner turned to the judge. "Your honor, I submit our exhibit, and with your permission I'll read it to the court. Our Exhibit A."

Judge Stamp: "Where is the one, or ones, who wrote these reports against Mr. Finner? Why aren't they here today?"

Attorney Isner: "Captain Wainger, the Jail Captain, is in school in Austin, given by the Texas Jail Commission. Jailer Richard Matlock is now full time as the City Marshal of Larkmount, and is in the Police Academy. Lt. Rutherford is no longer with the Sheriffs Department, and civilian jailer, Gladys Boren is no longer with the Sheriffs Department as she resigned because of personal reasons. Also, Patrol Captain Hummer



has since resigned from the Sheriffs Department and is now with the Department of Public Safety, and is in the DPS Academy in Austin."

Judge Stamp: "It is very, very unusual that those that were partly responsible for the termination of an employee of the Grabe County Sheriffs Department are so conveniently absent when the future of the terminated employee could hinge on their testimony. This is a hearing of course, and the court is more lenient in these matters, but I need to study what the impact could be without the personal appearance of certain witnesses. I'm going to adjourn for the day, in fact the next two days, and this court will convene on the 18<sup>th</sup>. I will have to take this under consideration. Any one have questions?"

Attorney Faber: "Your Honor, could we meet in chambers? I have something to add in relation to the witnesses not being here? "

Judge Stamp: "Let's meet right now, gentlemen. The adjournment still stands. This hearing will resume on the 18<sup>th</sup>, two days from now." He pounded the gavel. "Adjourned."

Marissa was waiting for Jinkx at the elevators. "What happened in the judge's chambers?" she asked.

"Let's step over here away from the elevators. The Sheriff and his crew will be here in a few minutes and I really don't want to ride the elevator with him. Well, Faber asked the judge to grant the admission of the documents of those that had signed them against me. That is the only way they can be introduced and give us a chance to rebut what they contain and establish a solid defense against their allegations. The judge said that it is now OK to introduce them into evidence. We have the opportunity to point out the faults of their documents. Here comes the Sheriff and his bunch. Let's use the stairs and get out of here. Remind me to give Kerrie a call. Oh, yes. I need to stop by the law library where Rutherford and another witness is. I need to see if they can appear again the 18<sup>th</sup> and give testimony."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Kerrie met Jinkx and Marissa at the Whistle Stop the next morning. "I set in on part of the court proceedings yesterday. I was in the back of the courtroom."

"I didn't see you. In fact, I didn't look around the courtroom when I was testifying," remarked Jinkx.

"I can do a story on this, Jinkx, if you want."

"I think we better pass on the story for now. The less publicity, the better. Regardless of the outcome, I want your word that there will not be any story on this."

"You have my word. and by the way, before I forget. I was told by one of your friends that there was a legal document in one of the J.P. Courts concerning a family member of Chief Deputy Donner, and I found this set of documents in the record and got a copy. You might want to read this." She handed Jinkx some documents.

He began to read:

### APPLICATION FOR WARRANT—EMERGENCY ADMISSION— MENTALLY ILL NO. 21311

THE STATE OF TEXAS

IN THE COUNTY  
COURT

Grabe COUNTY, TEXAS

FOR THE BEST INTEREST  
AND PROTECTION OF

Boyee Jamie Donner

AS A MENTALLY ILL PERSON

NOW COMES Bonnie Gladys Donner HEREINAFTER CALLED APPLICANT, WHOSE ADDRESS IS 420 Adams KNOWN TO ME TO BE A CREDIBLE PERSON, WHO, AFTER BEING BY ME DULY SWORN UPON OATH DEPOSES AND SAYS:

1. THAT Boyee Jamie Donner HEREINAFTER CALLED PATIENT,
2. IS A RESIDENT OF 420 Adams St., Linview, Grabe County TEXAS, AND RESIDES AT 420 Adams Linview Texas.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

231

2. THAT BASED UPON THE CONDUCT OF PATIENT AND UNDER THE CIRCUMSTANCES WHICH PATIENT IS FOUND, THE APPLICANT HAS REASON TO BELIEVE AND DOES BELIEVE THAT THE PERSON EVIDENCE MENTAL ILLNESS.

3. THAT THE APPLICANT HAS REASON TO BELIEVE THAT THE PERSON EVIDENCES A SUBSTANTIAL RISK OF SERIOUS HARM TO HIMSELF OR OTHERS.

4. THE SPECIFIC CONDUCT OF THE PATIENT INDICATING PATIENT TO BE MENTALLY ILL AND LIKELY TO CAUSE INJURY TO PATIENT OR OTHERS IF NOT IMMEDIATELY RESTRAINED IS AS FOLLOWS: Patient is threatening suicide, threatening to lock wife in house and not release. Has had temper flair up toward his three children for no reason. Thinks people are hiding in trees on roof watching him. Has children believing this also. Shoots methamphetamine.

5. THAT APPLICANT HAS REASON TO BELIEVE AND DOES BELIEVE THAT THE RISK OF HARM IS IMMINENT UNLESS THE PERSON IS IMMEDIATELY RESTRAINED.

6. THAT APPLICANT'S BELIEFS ARE BASED ON SPECIFIC RECENT BEHAVIOR, OVERT ACTS, ATTEMPTS OR THREAT.

7. AND, THAT SUCH RECENT BEHAVIOR, OVERT ACTS, AND ATTEMPTS AND/OR THREATS ARE SPECIFICALLY AS FOLLOWS: Threatens suicide, trying to lock wife up in house, thinks people are watching and trying to get him, irrational in conversation and contradicts himself. Very angry. Shooting methamphetamine.

APPLICANT HEREBY REQUESTS THAT A WARRANT BE ISSUED AUTHORIZING THE TAKING OF PATIENT INTO CUSTODY AND THAT THE PATIENT BE TRANSFERRED TO THE NEAREST HOSPITAL FOR EMERGENCY OBSERVATION AND TREATMENT.

DATED THIS 15<sup>th</sup> DAY OF July.

Bonnie Gladys Donner

APPLICANT—TITLE

APPLICANT'S RELATION TO PATIENT

Wife



HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

WARRANT—EMERGENCY ADMISSION—MENTALLY ILL  
THE STATE OF TEXAS  
NO. 21311

THE STATE OF TEXAS  
FOR THE BEST INTEREST  
AND PROTECTION OF

IN THE county COURT  
Grabe COUNTY, TEXAS

Boye Jamie Donner

AS A MENTALLY ILL PERSON

....TO ANY PEACE OFFICER OF THE STATE OF TEXAS,  
GREETINGS:

....YOU ARE HEREBY COMMANDED TO TAKE INTO  
CUSTODY Boye Jamie Donner HEREINAFTER CALLED PATIENT,  
TO THE Grand Samaratin HOSPITAL, in Linview, FOR  
EMERGENCY OBSERVATION AND SUCH TREATMENT AS  
PROVIDED IN THE MENTAL HEALTH CODE OF THE STATE OF  
TEXAS.

HEREIN FAIL NOT BUT OF THIS WRIT MAKE DUE RETURN,  
SHOWING HOW YOU HAVE EXECUTED THE SAME.

EXECUTED THE DAY OF \_\_\_\_\_ 19\_\_

WITNESS MY OFFICIAL SIGNATURE, THIS THE 15<sup>th</sup> DAY OF July.

Benny Richardson JUDGE,

JP

COURT,

Grabe

COUNTY, TEXAS

SWORN TO AND SUBSCRIBED BEFORE ME BY THE ABOVE  
NAMED APPLICANT, THIS 15 DAY OF July.

Paul Finnegan

NOTARY PUBLIC IN AND FOR

Grabe COUNTY, TEXAS

THE UNDERSIGNED PEACE OFFICER HAS GOOD REASON TO  
BELIEVE AND DOES BELIEVE THE ABOVE AFFLIANT.

Paul Finnegan

PEACE OFFICER



"Can I have a copy of this?" asked Jinkx. He handed the document to Marissa.

"That is your copy. Do you think you can use it in court?" asked Kerrie.

"I don't know. I'm new at this juris prudence stuff. I'll have to think about it. Any news on the Kinney Fine Chicken murders?"

"Not from law enforcement involved in the so-called investigation. I have an interview with two of the victims relatives next week. They are very upset and disappointed in the investigation. That old saying that no news is good news doesn't set to good with them. And, this Weldon Severnson is out on bond and I have a meeting with him next week also. He says that he has some vital information concerning the murders in Klimore. He said he is going to tell me about a document that is in the possession of the Grabe County Sheriffs Department and is supposed to be given to the one who made the statement when he was in jail there. He also has some information concerning the officers, some of the officers, that busted him and the others on the drug charges awhile back. He is in the process of obtaining some government documents on this."

"I'm thinking about going to Klimore and seeing my friend, Ramey Broom. Maybe I can come up with some rumors about the murders that could be turned into something. I don't go around the Klimore PD, as they all know by now that I'm no longer in law enforcement, and have no business there. I have a meeting with my attorney this afternoon to prepare for the 18<sup>th</sup> 9:00AM call."

"I have to go now, so I'll be in touch with you, Jinkx. Marissa, see you later too." Kerrie left.

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx had been talking to Ramey Broom for about an hour when there was a knock on the door. Ramey opened the door." Come on in, Weldon. I want you to meet someone."

Jinkx got up. "I know this guy. He used to come to the Sheriffs Department to make bonds. I didn't recognize the name."

"Weldon Severnson, and this is Jinkx Finner," said Ramey.

"Ramey was telling me about the trouble you're now having at the Sheriffs Department."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"I hear you're having a little trouble too, with some of the laws. I was talking to Kerrie Wintz this morning and she said that you had some information for her."

"I'm going to tell you now, there is some of the dirtiest laws right here in Grabe County. I've about got some of the little snitches turned around. I'm not going to say I am innocent, I'm going to say that the method used by Lyle Farmer and Gene Perry wasn't quite right. I have some papers in my car that you might like to see. I'll go get them."

When Severnson left the room Jinkx looked at Ramey. "Do you think he has something about our great drug team?"

"I read some of the stuff, and it is pretty interesting."

Severnson came back into the room with a stack of papers.

"Read this. You might learn something about Mr. Farmer." Jinkx looked at the paper and began to read it aloud.

To whom it may concern;

I, Kandi Henley, being of sound mind and on my own free will do say the Lyle Farmer came to Gene Henley myself at our garage and wanted us to help him get Weldon Severnson and Weldon Severnson Jr. He said that he wanted to get them. He said that he would furnish us the drugs and anything we needed to get the Severnsons. At another meeting with Lyle Farmer he Gene and myself that Jimmy Henley, Gene Henley's brother, was killed because he worked undercover for him and that the Severnson's had Jimmy killed because he worked as an undercover agent for Lyle Farmer. Lyle Farmer and his partner Bennie Denmon came to our garage and offered to give us all the equipment to get a lab set up. They wanted us to go to the Severnson's with all the glassware and get the Severnson's to set a lab up. They also wanted to mount hidden cameras and recorders in our garage so we could set the Severnsons up on the drug deals. Lyle told us on numerous occasions that he would do anything to get the Severnsons .

Gene Henley said that before he talked to Lyle Farmer he talked to Gene Ellis. Gene Ellis told Gene Henley at that time that he was going to send Lyle Farmer to talk to Gene Henley about getting the



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

235

Severnson's. Gandy Morely was also present at the time Gene Ellis came to our garage.

Gene Henley  
Kandi Henley

"This is not a surprise to me, however. What would be the real reason for Farmer to want to get you so bad? There has to be more to it than this."

"The main ingredient in this deal is that the laws were having sex with some of the informants." Severnson looked at Jinkx and nodded his head.

He looked surprisingly at Severnson. "Say what, now?"

"You heard right. That's what it's all about. Pussy. Not necessarily drugs. The pussy came first, and the drugs came second. If you can get them both, it makes the Sheriff look good along with the laws. As I said, I am just now finding out why they were so intent on going after me and the others. I have a question. Is Lyle Farmer married?"

"He's married. His wife's name is Penny. They went to school together at Linview High School. Class of 1978, or there 'bouts."

"This is how he happened to get involved sexually, and then after his informant, my son's girlfriend, Tina Godsend, strapped it on him, he fell in love and recruited her as his informant. This is what she told me. She was riding with my son, Wylie, one night. They, the Drug Task Force, had mostly those that associated with my sons under surveillance. My sons are getting ready to plead out on drug charges, so that tells you most of the story. Anyway, Lyle and another of his partners, Gene Perry, stopped Wylie on a traffic violation. He had some stolen property in his car. They stopped him and bagged him on that. They took him to jail, but Lyle talked to Tina, and said that she was in bad company, she needed to get away from the Severnsons, and said that he was willing to help her, if she would help him. He wanted her to provide him with information on the Severnsons, and who ever associated with the Severnsons. Regardless if it was true or not, he just wanted any kind of information such as names, what went down, when it went down and so forth. You know women, Mr. Finner. ....When Lyle Farmer mentioned that he, or the



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

government, would be willing to pay for this information, it was an offer she couldn't refuse. He had her then. He said that if she didn't agree to this that he would throw her in jail right then, and every chance he got. She told me that is how she got into an informant role. She was asked to try to get others to inform on the Severnsons as well. She got Karnie Meeks, you know, the one whose mother, Minnie Tilley, was murdered at the Kinney Fine Chicken place, to start informing too. Money was the deal, and then drugs entered the picture. They were given drugs also. Three things that the girls lived for was sex, drugs and money, and they now had the chance to be close to a big time DEA agent. Excitement was on the horizon. They couldn't resist. Regardless of whether Lyle was married or not, he had played his cards and was going have the best hand. This is the way I understand it. They gave testimony to the Federal Grand Jury. Their testimony was rehearsed prior to their appearance, by federal prosecutors and DEA agents Farmer and Perry. They were told what to say and about whom. I'm supposed to get another attorney this week, as the one I had, Bick Flores, has been giving information to the federal prosecutors. Everything I tell him, he runs and tells them. I'll get another court appointed attorney. If I would have been as heavily involved in this drug trafficking as they said I was, I wouldn't have to rely on the court appointing me a free attorney, as I could pay for the best defense. That's part of the story, Mr. Finner. That's the way it works here in Grabe County."

"We're about in the same mess, except mine is a civil matter and yours is criminal. I still have to clear myself from the lies that were told about me. I should be going now. Can I hang on to this statement from the Henleys?"

"I have other copies. Keep it." replied Severnson.

"By the way, Weldon. Keep in touch with Kerrie Wintz. She might be able to put the screws to someone who needs it."



## CHAPTER 9

The court was called into session, and Jinkx took the witness stand.

Judge Stamp addressed the court. "We discussed in chambers the other day the non-appearance of those that had contributed to the termination of Deputy Jinkx Finner. ---I, ah, I have given this careful consideration, with the input of Mr. Finner's legal adviser, Attorney Faber. He stated that he had no objection to the admittance of certain documents into evidence without the personal appearance of the ones who made and signed the documents. He has made the court aware that documents presented will be accepted as fact, and stipulates that they will be accepted by him, and Mr. Finner, as such. An unusual request, but not what I consider improper. This court accepts the terms of this agreement. and we will proceed accordingly." He looked at Attorney Isner. "Proceed with cross examination, counsel."

Attorney Isner: "Mr. Finner. I am going to present to you an inter-office memorandum from Captain Robert Wainger to Captain Daniel Hummer and Sheriff Waverly. Would you read this to the court, please. Our Exhibit B."

Jinkx looked over the letter and began to read.

### INTER-OFFICE MEMORANDUM

TO: Captain Daniel Hummer & Sheriff B. Waverly  
FROM: Captain Robert Wainger  
REFERENCE: Deputy Jinkx Finner

REMARKS: On Sunday, December 25<sup>th</sup>, last year, at App. 9:55PM, I Captain Robert Wainger, while in the booking control room, observed Deputy Jinkx Finner as he came off the elevator. I first thought he was by himself. Deputy Finner walked over to the table then a prisoner walked off the elevator behind Finner. Subject was handcuffed. Deputy Finner turned subject around and took handcuffs off subject. Deputy Finner then started to check the subject. I, Wainger, looked away. When I looked back as Deputy Finner said something loud. Deputy Finner was taking a silver automatic pistol from the subject. Deputy Finner had the automatic



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

in his hand. He threw it on the table next to the booking door. I walked outside to the booking area where Deputy Finner and the male prisoner were. Deputy Finner was cursing the subject and slamming him around. Finner said to the prisoner. "I (Finner) knew that you had that gun and I was waiting for you to pull it so I could shoot you. Deputy Finner told the prisoner this 2 or 3 times. Deputy Finner shoved subject down into the chair and then pulled him up and shoved him down again. I, Wainger, took the weapon and checked it. The clip was loaded but not one in the chamber I placed weapon in the control room. Deputy Finner did not have his weapon on him, as it was locked up downstairs. The prisoner had not been searched or Deputy Finner would have found the weapon and knife. This is not good procedure at all, and it is going to get someone hurt, either Deputy Finner or someone else. The prisoner did nothing that I saw for Deputy Finner to slam him around. The prisoner's name is Roswell Powers. black male.

I, Captain Robert Wainger, recommend that some action be taken with Deputy Jinkx Finner on this incident.

Captain Robert Wainger

Attorney Isner: "Mr. Finner. You said that you searched the prisoner before you took him to the book-in area, is that correct?"

Jinkx: "I said that I attempted to search him, in a field search, or pat search, upon the initial arrest. I had also stated that since a crowd was gathering, I made the decision to take the prisoner from the scene as quickly as possible."

Attorney Isner: "Were you afraid that the crowd would take your prisoner away from you, Mr. Finner?"

Jinkx: "Exactly. It's been known to happen. ....The Police Academy instructors advise you to take the prisoner away from the scene under these circumstances."

Attorney Isner: "You also said in your testimony that he left the elevator first and you guided him to one of the tables. Captain Wainger says that you left the elevator first, and the prisoner followed you."

Jinkx: "That's what he says. However, since he wasn't in sight of the elevator, and was in the room back of the console room, he can say anything."



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

239

Attorney Isner: "Did you take the weapon from the prisoner, or did you let him take it out of his pocket?"

Jinkx: "He never had the chance to put his hands in his pockets. I searched him. I took the gun and knife from his pocket.

Attorney Isner: "Why were you cursing the prisoner and jerking the prisoner around, Mr. Finner?"

Jinkx: "I didn't curse the prisoner, and what he calls slamming the prisoner around, was when I was trying to get him to stay seated, in a chair that I told him to set in."

Attorney Isner: "The Captain unloaded the automatic, is that right?"

Jinkx: "No, that's not right. I unloaded the automatic, myself. There was no bullet in the chamber, and I took the clip out of the gun and laid it beside the gun. The captain picked up the gun later, after I had the clip out."

Attorney Isner: "Captain Wainger recommended that some action be taken on this incident. Do you agree?"

Jinkx: "I agree that action should be taken that is consistent with other action taken in similar situations."

Attorney Isner: "You do agree that action should be taken, is that correct?"

Jinkx: "That's correct."

Attorney Isner: .... "In other words, to stop this kind of negligence, where police officers and civilian jailers could get injured or killed, some kind of action should be take to make sure it never happens again. Is that correct?"

Jinkx: "Action should be take that is consistent with other action taken under similar situations."

Attorney Isner: "That's your answer?"

Jinkx: "That's my answer."

Attorney Isner: "Mr. Finner, I'm going to give to you another memorandum to look at. Our Exhibit C. Would you read it to the court, please?"

Jinkx looked over the letter and began to read.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

**INTER-OFFICE MEMORANDUM**

TO Lt. Barron Rutherford

PROM Richard Matlock

REFERENCE Jinkx Finner and Inmate Roswell Powers

REMARKS I Richard Matlock jailer while working evening shift December 25<sup>th</sup>, last year, at approximately 9:45p/m observed Deputy Jinkx Finner point toward one of our book-in tables and tell subject he had just incarcerated to place his belongings on the table. I had then looked toward Captain R. Wainger when I overheard a commotion in book in area and observed Deputy Finner with his hand around prisoner's chest and frisking subject, as I came into booking area I observed a silver auto pistol lying on one of the tables. At this time Deputy Finner threw prisoner against the wall and then into a chair. Deputy Finner stated, "I knew you had the pistol all the time I was hoping you would pull it so I could blow your shit away." "I was standing app.? feet away when this was happening, holding the pistol. The subject stated he wasn't stupid enough to pull it on a policeman. He had it because some dudes had been bothering him. I later asked subject to take a breathe test which he consented.

Richard Matlock

Jailer, Grabe Co. S.O.

Attorney Isner: "Mr. Finner. Again we have a witness that says that you allowed your prisoner to have a gun in his possession while riding in the back of a patrol unit to the courthouse, while riding in the elevator to the jail floor, and still maintain possession of this gun in the book-in area. And this witness states that you knew he had the gun and you wanted him to pull it so you could blow him away. This witness also says that you manhandled this prisoner. Why did you allow this prisoner to have possession of the gun under these circumstances."

Jinkx: "I did not allow Mr. Powers to have the gun. As I said before, and I will agree to the fact that, I failed to search my prisoner properly. I have admitted to that. I did not slam Mr. Powers around and I did not curse Mr. Powers. I would never, and no peace officer would, allow a



prisoner, any prisoner, to have a gun in his possession, especially in the back seat, behind him, while being transported to a jail facility.”

Attorney Isner: “I have no further questions. I reserve the right to recall Mr. Finner for further questioning.”

Judge Stamp: “So noted, counsel . Mr. Faber, Mr. Finner, call your next witness.”

Attorney Faber: “Your Honor, we call former Grabe County civilian jailer, Gladys Boren, to the stand.” Attorney Faber motioned toward the back of the courtroom.

...Attorney Isner, Sheriff Waverly and Chief Donner looked to the back of the courtroom.

Gladys Boren walked slowly to the front of the courtroom, glancing frequently at Sheriff Waverly. She took the stand and raised her right hand, and was sworn in.

Attorney Faber leaned over to Jinkx. “It’s all yours, Mr. Finner. The end of your rainbow.”

“I don’t know if I can do this,” he whispered.

“I’m not doing it, so you have to. Just like we planned and practiced. It’s now or never.” Attorney Faber got up, picked up his notes and books and walked down the aisle.

Jinkx watched as he left the courtroom. He turned to face Gladys Boren.

Jinkx: “Good morning, Mrs. Boren”

Gladys: “Good morning, Mr. Finner.”

Jinkx thought to himself. “Damn, she’s cooler than I am.”

Jinkx: “May I call you Gladys?”

Gladys: “You may.”

Jinkx: “Gladys, you are a former employee of the Grabe County Sheriffs Department, in the capacity of civilian jailer, aren’t you?”

Gladys: “Yes, sir.”

Jinkx: “You are familiar with the procedure of the officers that bring prisoners to the jail facility, are you not?”

Gladys: “Yes, I am.”

Jinkx: “When an officer brings a prisoner to the sixth floor, the book-in or jail area, what is the first thing he does once they are off the elevator? This is, providing that the prisoner is not hostile.”



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Gladys: "The first thing that an officer does is that he tells the prisoner to place his hands on the book-in table once the handcuffs are taken off, or immediately after the handcuffs are taken off he tells the prisoner to place his hands on the book-in table. Not all officers have the same procedure."

Jinkx: "Does the officer allow the prisoner to put his hands in his pockets?"

Gladys: "No, they do not. They always make sure the prisoner's hands are placed on the book-in table."

Jinkx: "What do they do next?"

Gladys: "They search the prisoner thoroughly."

Jinkx: "Every officer does this? Deputies, city officers, FBI, ATF, DEA and all officers. This is their established procedure, correct?"

Gladys: "All the officers do this. They always search the prisoner when he is brought into the jail facility."

Jinkx: "Have weapons been found on these prisoners after they were brought into the jail or book-in area?"

Gladys: "I was in the capacity of civilian jailer for several years, and I would say that maybe twenty to thirty times weapons have been found on some of the hundreds and hundreds of prisoners that were brought into the book-in or jail area."

Jinkx: "Including the prisoner, Mr. Powers, that I brought in on Christmas day of last year?"

Gladys: "Including your prisoner. However, you found the gun on your prisoner. There have been situations where the weapon, a gun or knife, a razor, a ball point pen or other object, wasn't found until right before they were put in a cell by the jailer. I don't recall the officers involved, dates or names of prisoners, but I know it happened."

Jinkx: "Do you remember when I brought the prisoner, Mr. Roswell Powers into the jail facility on December 25<sup>th</sup> of last year?"

Gladys: "Yes, I do."

Jinkx: "Where were you when Mr. Powers was brought into the jail facility?"

Gladys: "I knew that you were bringing in a prisoner, because I heard you on the scanner when you told the dispatcher you were in the Sallyport with a prisoner. I was at the desk in the control, or console room. I was



getting together the papers that would be needed to book in your prisoner."

Jinkx: "Who was in the control room with you?"

Gladys: "No one. I was alone."

Jinkx: "Who was in the book-in area, the space that contains the book-in tables and chairs, right outside the elevators?"

Gladys: "No one." She looked at Sheriff Waverly, who was looking at the floor.

Jinkx: "Is there a room behind the control room?"

Gladys: "Yes, there is."

Jinkx: "What is in that room behind the control room?"

Gladys: "That is the records room. Folders that contain booking sheets, offense reports, medical records and any record of a prisoner and any record made by the arresting officer and book-in officer."

Jinkx: "Was there anyone in that room, and if so, who was in that room?"

Gladys: ...."The Jail Captain, Captain Wainger and civilian jailer Richard Matlock were in that room when you rode the elevator to the sixth floor with your prisoner, Roswell Powers."

Jinkx: "To the best of your recollection, what happened on the day that Roswell Powers was brought to the jail floor, the sixth floor of the Grabe County Courthouse, by then Deputy Jinkx Finner, on Christmas day of last year?"

Gladys: "I heard over the scanner that Deputy Finner was at the Sallyport with a prisoner. I then started getting the paperwork ready to process the prisoner, and was sitting at the desk in the console room. When the elevator opened Deputy Finner led the prisoner to the book-in table. He took the handcuff from one hand first. I don't remember which hand. Powers staggered or fell slightly to one side and Deputy Finner pulled him back around and took the other handcuff off. He told Mr. Powers to place his hands on the table. When he did, Deputy Finner started searching him. I started out of the console room at this time, and I was going to book the prisoner. Deputy Finner took a handkerchief from one of Mr. Power's front pockets. Then Deputy Finner unrolled the handkerchief and exposed a shiny little gun, which he stuck in the back



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

part of his belt. I remember he asked Mr. Powers to raise his hands, but he backed up to the wall, and I thought he was going to punch the deputy. It was at this time that Deputy Finner slapped Powers. I was outside the console room but I ran back in there, behind the glass partition. Deputy Finner didn't hit him again, instead he pushed Powers arms up into the air and searched him again. He didn't find any thing else that I saw. He told Mr. Powers to take off his coat. It was about this time that Deputy Finner looked over the little gun and took the clip out and put it on the table at the door to the console room."

Jinkx: "Let me interrupt you for a minute. How many people were in the book-in room and the console room, all combined I mean?"

Gladys: "I was in the console room and you and the prisoner were in the book-in room. Three persons, that's all."

Jinkx: "Continue with what you were telling the court, please."

Gladys: "Where was I? Oh, yes. He didn't take his coat off, and you took his coat off for him. I remember you told him to sit in a chair, but he wouldn't stay seated and you had to push him into the chair several times. When you were at the end of the table looking at the gun I remember Captain Wainger coming out from behind the console room and asking you if you needed any help and you told him that you didn't need any help now. I think jailer Matlock came up beside him at this point. Captain Wainger picked up the gun and looked at it. I think he put it in the console room. I started to book the prisoner but you took the book-in sheet and said that you would book him because he might get rowdy. You asked him if he would take an intoxilizer test and he said that he would. Matlock run the test and you finished booking him."

Jinkx: "Did you ask Deputy Finner if he knew that the prisoner, Mr. Powers, had a gun?"

Gladys: "Yes, I did. It was an asinine question, really. I don't even know why I asked it. But Deputy Finner replied: 'Yeah, I knew he had it all along, like I was waiting for him to pull it so I could blow him away.'"

Jinkx: "From the way Deputy Finner answered the question, did you think that he knew the prisoner had a gun in his possession all the time?"

Gladys: "Absolutely not. No, no, no. But, Wainger and Matlock sure thought it."



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

245

Jinkx: "Let me show you a memorandum that you wrote and signed, Mrs. Boren." Jinkx handed her the document. "Can you identify this document. Our Exhibit 7."

Gladys: "This is a memo that I wrote and signed."

Jinkx: "Would you read that memo to the court, Mrs. Boren?"

Gladys looked over the memo.

**INTER-OFFICE MEMORANDUM**

TO: Lt. Rutherford

FROM: Jailer: Gladys Boren

REFERENCE: Deputy Jinkx Finner

REMARKS: While standing in booking area, I, jailer Boren, said unto Deputy Jinkx Finner, "Did you know he had a gun?," and he replied to me, "Yes, I knew he had a gun all the time."

Gladys Boren

Jinkx: "Now Gladys, what and who prompted you to write this memorandum?"

Gladys: "When Deputy Finner left the jail, after he had finished booking his prisoner, I was approached by Captain Wainger and asked to write a memo on what had happened concerning Deputy Finner and his prisoner. He was all excited and said that it was pay back time. Jailer Matlock said, 'we got him now.' Captain Wainger said that he wanted it to look bad on Deputy Finner and that, he said it again, it was pay back time. I had second thoughts on writing a memo, as I didn't know what to write. I wrote one memo, but Captain Wainger tore it up and said that it wouldn't do. He then showed me his memorandum and Matlock's memorandum and told me to write something like they wrote. I said that I couldn't do that. He ordered me to write something bad on Deputy Finner, and that's when I wrote this memo. I told him that this would have to do."

Jinkx: "Did you think, at that time, that it would go as far as Jinkx Finner being terminated?"

Gladys: "No, I did not. I'm sorry."

Jinkx: "A very simple question, Gladys. ....Were you terminated shortly thereafter?"



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Gladys: "I was told by the Jail Captain, Wainger, that I was being terminated because of insubordination to a superior, because I refused his order to write a detailed memorandum against Deputy Finner. I went to the Chief Deputy and told him that it wasn't right that I was being terminated because they said I was insubordinate."

Jinkx: "Did Chief Deputy Donner tell you that if you did not resign you would not get a good recommendation on your next job?"

Gladys: "Why, yes. He did. He downright demanded that I resign. I didn't though. I left work that day and never came back. I finally got my last check through the mail. I say good riddance."

Jinkx: "Your Honor, I have no further question at this time. I do reserve the right to recall Mrs. Boren to the stand if counsel should raise a question on cross examination."

Attorney Isner whispered to the Sheriff and Chief Deputy. "You two didn't tell me all this shit. Did you forget?"

He received no answer.

Attorney Isner: "I have no questions of this witness, Your Honor." He turned back to the Sheriff. "She covered everything so completely that I don't think I could raise a question in the judges mind. She could dig a deeper hole for you two."

"What did we hire you for?" asked Sheriff Waverly nasty like.

"You didn't tell me the entire story of the termination of this guy, Finner. You underestimated him. You two overestimated yourselves. The ones who wrote these bad things against Finner are off playing with themselves instead of here in this courtroom trying to save your asses. You also led me into this mess, blind."

Judge Stamp pounded his gavel. "Gentlemen, lets quiet down. This court is still in session." He looked at Jinkx.

"Call your next witness, Mr. Finner."

Jinkx was about to speak when Attorney Faber called his name and motioned to the judge. "May we have a moment Your Honor?"

The judge pounded his gavel. "We will recess for thirty minutes. I will meet with the attorneys representing the Holliday case in my chambers. Bailiff, see if you can round up the attorneys that had some motions in that case."



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

247

He followed Attorney Faber outside the courtroom. "Jinkx, Barron Rutherford wants to know how long it will be before you call him as a witness. He has some other business he has to attend to. I saw him in the law library."

"I was reading over his memo and I think it contains what was told to him by Wainger and Matlock. I'm in favor of letting him go. In my honest opinion, Gladys Boren swung the hearing in my favor, and I think she shot Waverly out of the saddle."

"I agree," said Faber. "Surely Isner is going to have Donner and Waverly take the stand. When they take the stand you know what to present as evidence, and what questions to ask. I'll try to be back in the courtroom after the lunch break. I'll tell Rutherford that he can go."

"Thank him for me, OK?"

Marissa joined Jinkx when Faber walked away. "Well, counselor, you're putting on quite a show. Would you like to represent me?"

"Do you do that with your clothes on, or off, ma'am?"

"Getting frisky, Mr. Finner?"

"How am I doin', kiddo?"

"Doin' real good. The Sheriff is squirming. His attorney is a little upset with him, and the Chief Deputy."

"They ain't seen nothin' yet. Wait until I spring those medical records on them. If they give me the chance, that is. Lets go get a cold drink downstairs," suggested Jinkx.

The judge called the hearing to order. "Call your next witness, Mr. Finner. You do have other witnesses, don't you?"

Jinkx: "I have no other witnesses on direct, Your Honor. I rest."

Judge Stamp: "Call your first witness, counselor."

Attorney Isner: "I call Chief Deputy Donner to the stand."

Chief Donner walked slowly to the stand and was sworn in.

Attorney Isner: "Chief Donner, are you reasonably familiar with the circumstances that led to the dismissal of Jinkx Finner from the Grabe County Sheriffs Department?"

Chief Donner: "Yes, I am."

Attorney Isner: "How were you notified of this incident?"



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Chief Donner: "I had a visit from Patrol Captain Daniel Hummer on the morning of the 26<sup>th</sup> of December."

Attorney Isner: "Explain what transpired on that visit from Captain Hummer."

Chief Conner: "I was then advised by Captain Hummer that Deputy Finner had allowed a prisoner to have in his possession a small handgun when he entered the jail facility. He also said that he had witnesses to that effect, and the same witnesses said that Deputy Finner physically manhandled his prisoner."

Attorney Isner: "What was your reaction to this?"

Chief Donner: "I then advised Captain Hummer to research the Sheriff's Department Policy Manual and see if Deputy Finner violated any procedures. I then told him to use his own judgement in issuing punishment if he found that there was a violation."

Attorney Isner: "When did you meet with Deputy Finner on these alleged violations?"

Chief Donner: "Deputy Finner was advised by Captain Hummer to see me on the 27<sup>th</sup>, two days after it happened. Deputy Finner told me his side of the story which was not what was told in the statements of Captain Wainger and jailer Matlock. Their reports were more precise."

Attorney Isner: "Now, Chief Donner, are these the statements, or memorandums, complaints, that were written by Captain Wainger and jailer Matlock? Our Exhibits A and B."

Chief Donner: "These seem to be the complaints written by Wainger and Matlock."

Attorney Isner: "Here is Captain Hummer's letter to Deputy Finner. You wrote a note on the bottom left portion on the letter of Hummer's, and upheld the recommended termination. Our Exhibit C. ....Do you recognize this letter?"

Chief Donner: "This is the letter of Captain Hummer. I wrote the note on the bottom of the letter."

Attorney Isner: "Do you fully agree with the recommendations of termination as set forth in Captain Hummer's letter?"

Chief Donner: "I fully agree with Captain Hummer."

Attorney Isner: "Chief Donner, did you ask for the resignation of Deputy Finner?"



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

249

Chief Donner: "No, I don't think I did."

Attorney Isner: "Did you tell Deputy Finner that if he did not resign he would not receive a good recommendation on his next job?"

Chief Donner: "I really don't think I did. He was so irrational about being terminated that I became upset because of his attitude."

Attorney Isner: ...."Did Deputy Finner ask to go before a Review Board?"

Chief Donner: "I think he did. As I said, his attitude got me pretty upset. He might have. As far as I know, the Sheriffs Department does not have a Review Board."

Attorney Isner: "No further questions. I pass the witness."

Jinkx: "Chief Donner, lets back up just a little bit here. Isn't it true that when Captain Hummer came to you and wanted to terminate Deputy Finner, he just told you about the signed complaints, but never actually gave them to you to look over?"

Chief Donner: "Well, he then explained to me what the complaints contained. As long as I knew what they contained was good enough."

Jinkx: "Good enough? Do you realize that you made a decision to terminate, or to uphold the termination, of an employee based upon hearsay?"

Chief Donner: "I have the greatest respect for Captain Hummer, and I trusted his judgement implicitly."

Jinkx: "The main question is, Chief Deputy Donner, did you trust your judgement implicitly?"

Chief Donner: "Yes."

Jinkx: "How long after the initial meeting with Captain Hummer was it when you actually saw the complaints that were written by Captain Wainger and jailer Matlock?"

Chief Donner: "After I met with Deputy Finner, I asked Captain Hummer to bring me the complaints."

Jinkx: "After you made the decision to uphold the termination of Deputy Finner, you then saw the so-called evidence against him, is that correct?"

Chief Donner: "That's correct.."

Jinkx: "Chief Donner. Has there ever been another situation where a gun was found on a prisoner after he was in the book-in area?"



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Chief Donner: "Not that I know of. I wasn't informed of it if there was."

Jinkx: "If another deputy had brought a prisoner into the book-in area, and a gun was found on the prisoner by jail personnel when the prisoner was being put into a cell, would you have terminated, or recommended termination, of that employee?"

Chief Donner: "If I would have known about it, but I didn't, I would have recommended termination of any employee who failed to search his prisoner properly as described in the Policy Manual."

Jinkx: "And you say that this has never happened before?"

Chief Donner: "Not to the best of my knowledge and recollection."

Jinkx: "Did Mr. Finner ask to go before a Review Board?"

Chief Donner: "I think that he did. I told him that we didn't have a Review Board."

Jinkx: "You are saying that the Grabe County Sheriffs Department does not have a Review Board, is that correct?"

Chief Donner: "I don't think it does."

Jinkx: "I need a definite answer, sir. Does the Grabe County Sheriffs Department have a Review Board available to the deputies so they can air a grievance, or defend themselves against an allegation or charge?"

Chief Donner: "No sir, the Sheriffs Department does not have a Review Board."

Jinkx: "Thank you, sir. Now, I would like for you to look over this document. Our Exhibit 8, and read this to the court."

Chief Donner: "I've never seen this before. I don't know anything about it."

Jinkx: "Your Honor, would you instruct the witness to read this document to the court. I also have a copy for you and opposing counsel."

Jinkx handed the judge and Attorney Isner a copy of the document.

Judge Stamp: "Read the document aloud so the court can hear, Chief Donner."

Chief Donner began to read the document.

To: Sheriff Billy Waverly

From: Capt. Daniel Hummer, Review Board Chairman

Ref: Fleet accident unit # 825, Deputy Jinkx Finner



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

251

....On October 4, a review board was convened as per departmental procedures to review the fleet accident involving unit #825, Deputy Jinkx Finner operating.

The following officers were in attendance: Capt. Daniel Hummer-Patrol, Lt. Barron Rutherford-Patrol, Deputy Randy Randall-Patrol, Capt. Skinner-Civil, and Detective Stan Brenner-CID.

After reviewing all facts and circumstances, it was the opinion of the board that the accident was unavoidable due to the actions of the other driver. It was found, by the board, that Deputy Finner complied with departmental procedures.

It is the recommendation of the board that no disciplinary action be taken on Deputy Finner.

Respectfully submitted,  
D. Hummer  
Capt. D. Hummer

Jinkx: "I would like to read again, a few lines of paragraph one for the court. Listen. "On October 4, a review board was convened per departmental procedures to review—" Jinkx hesitated. "I think that's enough. I have no further questions of this witness, but reserve the right to recall this witness for further questioning."

Judge Stamp: "So noted, counsel. Do you have any questions on re-cross, sir?"

Attorney Isner: "Not at this time. It's close to lunch."

Judge Stamp: "We will now recess for lunch. We will resume at 1:30PM."

Jinkx and Marissa went to the Whistle Stop for lunch and Jinkx had called Kerrie and asked her to meet them there.

"How is it going at the hearing?" asked Kerrie.

"I think I got a few points across. Important points," replied Jinkx.

"He is doing great. He stung Chief Deputy Donner. Jinkx asked him if the Sheriffs Department had a Review Board and the Chief said no several times to his attorney and Jinkx. Jinkx showed him a paper where a Review Board had been convened, and get this, 'as per departmental procedure', and Donner liked to fell through his ass." Marissa put her



# HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

hands to her mouth. "I'm sorry. I don't usually talk like that. I know who I learned this from."

Jinkx was looking at her. "You're having too much fun at the hearing, young lady."

Kerrie laughed, and then they all laughed.

...."I had a visitor this morning. Weldon Severnson brought me several documents that might shed some light on the Klimore murders. I want you to look over this here." She handed Jinkx several papers. "I want to warn you right now, that this guy who wrote this can't spell and cannot write where you understand it. You have to read between the lines on some of it. See what you can make of this."

He looked over the papers. "I'm lost on the first page. Let me start over." Marissa moved over close to Jinkx to read the papers.

Grabe County Sheriff Dept.  
Attn: Records Division  
Linview Texas

\*

\*

\*

Re: Walt Yanskia

Dear Sir:

Pursant to the Freedom of Information Act Title 5. Section 5229 (B), and the Texas Open Records Act, V.A.Civ., Art 6252-17 (A), (B). I Walt Yanskia, do requests that the Grabe County Sheriff Dept produce the following records:

(1). All data, including confessions, complaints, A list of witnesses, witnesses statements, and the arrest reports in file.

(2). A copy of the arrest sheets and search warrants

## Pauper's Oath

I, Walt Yanskia, further requesys that because of my incarceration in the Sims County Jail, which makes it impossible for me to provide for the copying of said documents. And that the Grabe County Sheriff Department provide me, as a poor person, under the Pauper Oath, who can not pay the cost of zeroxing the documents.

I certify that I'am the same person: Walt Yanskia

Respectfully,  
Walt Yanskia



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

253

When I first got involved with drugs in Klimore Texas, and I was working for a well service, as a derrickman. We were living by Lana parents which were renting us a house at that time. Lana was pregnant with Chama and he was born in February. I was working long hours and seven days a week. There was a black guy working on our crew who told me he knew a man with some crank. And introduced me for the first time to Sammy Hayes, and I started buying small amounts of crank from him. By doing the crank I was able to keep the long hours and my job. Then some of our friends wanted to buy from us, and we would sell them small amounts. We were able to pick up some extra money, which at that time came in real handy. To pay bills and keep our credit going since we were starting over. As time went on our friends would tell their friends, and then the little part time business turned into a full time business. Cause of more people wanting to buy more speed. This was about the same time of Kinney Fine Chicken went down. And I got introduced to Gene Ellis of the Texas Rangers. Who told me he knew that we were dealing dope but he wasn't there for that, cause the feds would take care of the drug end. But he needed to catch the people who did the Kinney Fine Chicken killing. It was during this period of time when I lost my job caused I feared for Lana and Chama while I was gone from the house. So to keep making money I kept making dope for Sammy Hayes. But Sammy developed a habit and started doing more than he was paying for. And telling the people he owed that he still had people that owed him, causing Sammy to get pissed off at me every once in a while. But I thought he would get over it. But the people that Sammy owed wanted their money which was about ten thousand dollars. This is when I met Wake Samples for the first time. In which Sammy was getting his speed from. But Wake needed some one more or less to take Sammy place. And I was the one more or less. So being unemployed at the time and needing the money I started dealing for Wake. This went on for about a month. Every day picking up the dope and selling most of it that night. Then along comes the information about the phone being taped. By this time it's the later part of October and had my phone disconnected. And Wake slowed down cause the FBI wire tap. So combined with the Kinney Fine Chicken killings and the FBI wire tap out on the streets things got really rough. Because the rangers were hot after Bubba Mission which at the time was a regular customer and known to



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

all, along with the other fifty other people in town. By this time every body in town though I was going to be the next big dealer. This is when the FBI busted Wake Samples, Barton Hines and Lora Poplar at his house also at the same time the FBI hit Sammy Hayes at his house. They were coming to my house but Danny Tokar came and warned us to what was happening. And I totally stayed away from Sammy and Wake. Then comes all these people who wanted us to sell dope for them.. The next were Big E, Adam King and Ron Glade. Out of these three Big E would wind up like Sammy Hayes. Doing the dope and not paying for it. And blaming the people who was dealing for him for not paying for it. (still keeping Kinney Fine Chicken in mind I was still keeping in touch with Gene Ellis texas rangers, also when I met Lanny Trumble of FBI and Dwight Waskom of Klimore PD, They advised me I was being invesgated by the FBI) Ron Glade took over supplying the dope to us, even bring it to us. We went on with him for about a mounth but he got greedy with his people and had to get out. So Adam King came along and wanted me to meet Bob Mintor. Bob and I met and began doing business with Bob Mintor. (During this time with Bob, I was returning stolen items that I received from trading dope for them and returning them back to Dect Cummins of the Grabe Co Sheriff dept) So now we are in full swing with Bob Mintor dealing real heavy for him at time dealing up to two ounces a day for him, and for about six weeks. By the time we have moved from beall road to rainbow creek. Then the Fed busted.

Jinkx looked at Kerrie. "I'm not getting very much out of this. I can't see the connection between this and the Klimore murders."

"Skip those first pages and look for a statement of Bonnie Sims. Keep the papers and look at the rest later. That's your copy. I didn't mean for you to read a dozen pages before you got to the statement. I thought that I put the statement on top."

"Here it is. It's only one page. Right?"

"Right."

Jinkx started to read the statement.



STATEMENT OF BONNY SIMS

BONNY SIMS, with some of her good friends:  
Donna, John Jr., Big E, Barton, Bubba, Kline

As told to Lana Yanskia, who wrote this letter to husband.

Bonnie owed Big E some money, at the time she was really strung out on the stuff that she was getting from Big E, but Big E had to collect the money that she owed him so he got the above named people, and they all walked in the Kinney Fine Chicken location and confronted her about the money, this is when one of the men jumped at John Jr., and he went off on him, John pistol whipped the man pettery bad this was the reason for the blood all over the place, this is when they decided to load the people in the blazer and take them to Tawneytown, at that time Big E was driving the blazer and the girls followed behind them to the location their in Tawneytown, at this point Bonny didn't want anything to do with it, but she had know choice in the matter, the girls sat in the car, all they saw was the woman get up and run.

Why does Bonny Sims think that she is going to do time, even though the murders was a capotal offence, and carry the death plenty, like Mel Strange told Donna already.

Donna has been heard talking about this Bonny Sims? Candi telling about Big E saying that Barton did it? Where is Big E blazer after he tolted it out one night leaving our house, there on beall road?

"That's it?" asked Jinkx.

"That's it. It sheds some light on the murders. The Grabe County Sheriffs Department had this statement of Bonnie Sims in its possession for quite a while. I wonder if it has been used to question suspects?"

"I don't know. I can ask Detective Waskom about this. I'll let him look it over. Now, these other papers I will read later. I'm curious to see what part Chick Colley played in this caper. He's the one who took my place when we started the drug officer from the patrol division. When I started coming up with recognizable names, mainly John Mallory, Jr. and Sr., I was suddenly replaced by Colley. Anyway, you were right. The one who wrote this can't spell too well. The story is there, you just have to look for it."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Kerrie looked at her watch. "It's after 1:00PM. Guess I better start back to the office."

"Yeah, and I better start back to the courthouse."

"Well," said Marissa. I have to go home and get ready to go to work. I won't be there to cheer you on. I can't get anyone to work for me, I've already tried. Your number one fan has to go to work."

The judge called the court to order. "Where were we when we broke for lunch? Oh, yes. Chief Donner had been questioned."

Attorney Faber: "Your Honor, I would like to call Chief Donner back to the stand. I have a few more questions." He looked at Jinkx. "I think I'll question him now about other prisoners being manhandled instead of later. Let me have those medical reports. Lets start on the manhandling of other prisoners. Pick out the one where Donner called the hospital to check on one of the prisoners that was hospitalized, and put it on the top."

Judge Stamp: "I want to remind you that you are still under oath, Chief Donner."

Attorney Faber: "Chief Donner, was the prisoner, Roswell Powers, taken to the hospital/medical center, after he was allegedly manhandled by Deputy Finner?"

Chief Donner: "No, not to the best of my knowledge."

Attorney Faber: "Did Mr. Powers, your prisoner, file a complaint against Deputy Finner?"

Chief Donner: "No, not that I was aware of."

Attorney Faber: "Has any other Grabe County Sheriffs Deputy hospitalized a prisoner when he, or she, made an arrest?"

Chief Donner: "I'm sure they have, but I don't recall any names of the prisoners or deputies. It hasn't happened often or I would have known about it."

Attorney Faber: "Do you have a Sheriff's Deputy by the name of Paul Finnegan?"

Chief Donner: "Yes," he replied as he squirmed in his seat.

Attorney Faber: "Chief Donner, I would like to call your attention to this medical record of Fred Lane Stamper." He looked at the judge. "Your Honor, I present this as evidence, our Exhibit 9. This is a certified copy of the medical record of Fred Lane Stamper, pages 1-13, and are a true and



exact copy of the records of hospitalization of Fred Lane Stamper, who was hospitalized on the dates as stated. The microfilm or original records from which these were copied are on file at Grand Samaratin Medical Center. The signature of the Assistant Director of the Medical Records Department is attached to the certification sheet. I have a copy for the court and one for Chief Donner."

Judge Stamp: "Accepted by the court. Exhibit 9."

Attorney Faber: "Chief Donner, if you read page one at the bottom of the big box, it states the chief complaint was: Laceration on head. ---If you look at the physicians report, he states: WM brought in, custody of Grabe Co. Sheriff's Dept., blows with a flashlight to R cheek & front temporal area. ---I can never read these reports, so lets skip down to where it says: DIOGNOSIS: multiple lacerations. ---We can at least read that.---Page 2---CLINICAL SUMMARY-Primary diagnosis---Observation for closed head injury.---Page 3-middle of the page---GENERAL APPEARANCE-lacerations to face and scalp. ---Page 6--History: ---Chief Donner, would you read that to the court, please?"  
Chief Donner read the designated paragraph.

#### **PROVISIONAL DIAGNOSIS:**

1. Observation for closed head injury.
2. Multiple lacerations about the head.

PI: This 33 year old white male was brought to the ER while I was on duty, in the custody of the Grabe County Sheriff's Department. The patient apparently received blows to the head during an arrest attempt. Deputies state that there was no loss of consciousness.

#### **PHYSICAL EXAMINATION**

T: 97.9% P: 72 R: 20 BP 154/88

GENERAL: The patient was initially very uncooperative. He became more cooperative during his stay in the Emergency Room. He had a strong smell of alcohol on his breath. He was awake and alert.

HEENT: His TM's were clear. Pupils equal, round. reactive to light. EOM's intact. DTR's were 2+, and equal in all extremities.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

There was no Babinski. Motor sensory was within normal limits. The patient had an approximately 2" scalp laceration over the frontotemporal area. he refused local Xylocaine, therefore it was closed without benefit of anesthesia, with 000 Ethilon thread, with five simple sutures. Laceration #2 is approximately 1 ¼ to 1 ½" laceration below the right eye, closed in three layers, muscle layer closed with Vicryl, cutaneous layer closed with chromic and thirteen 6-0 Ethilon simple sutures to close the skin, post 1° Xylocaine with Epinephrine local infiltration. Cranial nerves 2-12 were within normal limits.

Plan: The patient will be observed for neurological signs over the next few hours so that the ethanol level will be reduced, so that repeat neurological exams will not be influenced by that.

Attorney Faber: "Does that tell you anything, Chief Donner?"

Chief Donner: "It sometimes happens that a law enforcement officer has to use certain force to make an arrest."

Attorney Faber: "Doesn't it also hold true that a deputy has to use certain force to arrest, search, and insure the detention of his prisoner, as such the case of Deputy Jinkx Finner?"

Chief Donner: "I don't think so in this instance with Deputy Finner. We also have witnesses that signed complaints against him. I made my decision based upon what the witnesses said."

Attorney Faber: "Does this include Gladys Boren, the female civilian jailer, who testified that your two witnesses were not there when Deputy Finner had an altercation with his prisoner, Roswell Powers?"

Chief Donner: "I have two witness to one witness. I stand by my decision."

Attorney Faber: "No sir. You have two witnesses against two witnesses. You forgot that Deputy Finner was a witness. Isn't that true?"

Chief Donner: "Yes. I guess you would say so."

Attorney Faber: "We're not finished with this medical report. Page 11---NURSES NOTES-10:00AM, the next day. Gene Ellis of the Texas Rangers there to talk to pt.—Family member (brother) notified of the pts. condition. Security officers (The Grabe County Sheriff's dept.) at bedside continuously; 11:15, Sheriff's Deputy left. Talked by telephone to Chief



Deputy Jamie Boy Donner. He stated that Grabe County Sheriff's Dept. was no longer required to remain with pt. and that it was up to us (GSMC) as to pt. visitors. At 1:45 he was discharged from the floor.---Chief Donner, I am going to ask you again. Has a deputy ever hospitalized a prisoner while making an arrest? Before you answer my question, I want to refresh your memory on something. When I gave an opening statement to the effect that a Grabe County Deputy had hospitalized more than one prisoner while making an arrest. Did you forget that I had made this statement?"

Chief Donner: "I-ah-I didn't forget."

Attorney Faber: "Sir, I am going to ask you again. Were you aware that Deputy Paul Finnegan had used a flashlight, or other object, to strike a prisoner while making an arrest, and hospitalized this prisoner?"

Chief Donner: "Let's see. I remember now. Yes, I remember calling the hospital and having a conversation with the nurse."

Attorney Faber: "Were you aware that the amount charged for this ER treatment was \$364.60?"

Chief Donner: "No, I wasn't."

Attorney Faber: "The date on this incident was March 31<sup>st</sup>. Chief Donner, I would like to call your attention to a medical record dated March 21<sup>st</sup>, ten days earlier. For the record this is our Exhibit 10. A copy for the court and a copy for you, Chief. This is also a certified copy that was signed by the Assistant Director of the Medical Record Department. Page 1 of this reports states: ---23 year old WM seen and evaluated w/ multiple scalp and facial lacerations, --and some stuff I don't quite understand, but if you turn to page five and read that to the court, we will understand it better. Would you read that please?"

Chief Donner read the document.

CC & P1: The patient states that he was arrested by deputy sheriff and was struck on the head several times. The patient was brought to the emergency room and was treated for lacerations and released to be taken to jail. The patient was released from jail and was brought back to the Emergency Room by the family where the emergency room contacted me for evaluation and admission.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Attorney Faber: "Let me interrupt you for a minute, Chief. Do you know who the arresting officer was on this?"

Chief Donner: "No, I do not."

Attorney Faber: "Take a look at the offense report and tell the court whose name appears as the arresting officer?" He hands the Chief a copy of the offense report. "Who is the arresting officer?"

Chief Donner: "Deputy Paul Finnegan."

Attorney Faber: "That's right, Chief. Two arrests and two prisoners hospitalized within ten days. Let me read part of the medical report. Still on page five."

### PHYSICAL EXAMINATION

**GENERAL:** The patient is a well developed, well nourished white male in no acute distress.

**SKIM:** Appears to be normal.

**HEENT:** **EYES:** Conjunctives and pupils appear to be normal Pupils are round, regular and react to light and accommodation. **EARS:** Both tympanic membranes are normal. **NOSE:** Septum and turbinates are normal. **MOUTH:** **TEETH:** **GUMS:** **MUCOUS MEMBRANE:** normal. The patient has an approximately 4 cm. laceration above the left eye. The patient also has a 4 to 5 cm. laceration on the parietal area on the left. Other laceration is also found on the right side in the frontal area. This location is also 4 to 5 cm. All of the lacerations have been sutured. No abnormal masses.'

Attorney Faber: "There are 24 pages to this report. Let's turn to page twenty four, and I will read the Discharge Summary.

### ADMITTED

### DISCHARGED

**DISCHARGE SUMMARY:** This patient was admitted because of injury to the head sustained when the patient was arrested. On examination in the Emergency Room the patient was found to have multiple lacerations of the head and was complaining of headache. During the patient's course in the hospital he complained of feeling lethargic and also complained of



difficulty with vision, particularly the focusing in his left eye which was intermittent. The patient also improved with the eyesight and also states that he feels better as far as the general tiredness is concerned. The patient was admitted to the hospital. He had an x-ray taken of the right forearm which was negative and showed no fracture. The patient also had skull series which were reported as negative also. On 3-24 a CT scan of his head was done which was reported as negative. The patient will be seen in the office on Monday for suture removal.

Attorney Faber: "Were you aware of this incident, Chief Donner?"

Chief Donner: "I don't remember being told about it."

Attorney Faber: "Chief Donner, were you aware that the cost of this was \$994.55?"

Chief Donner: "No, I was not."

Attorney Faber: "Was Captain Wainger the Jail Captain during this time?"

Chief Donner: "I don't recall. I would have to check the records."

Attorney Faber: "Are you aware of any more arrests by Deputy Finnegan that hospitalized a prisoner that was in his custody?"

Chief Donner: "No."

Attorney Faber: "No further questions, Your Honor, I do reserve the right to re-call the witness." He shook his finger at the witness.

Judge Stamp: "So noted. Do you have any questions for this witness, Mr. Isner?"

Attorney Isner: "No questions."

Sheriff Waverly pulled the arm of Attorney Isner. "Aren't you going to ask any questions that would help us?"

"I ask questions, they put their foot in the door and in your asses. If I was to open a new line of questioning, and they pick up on something, it makes it worse for you. You didn't tell me what they had as evidence to present against you, did you? When Faber made his opening statement and told what he was going to prove, and he even gave the dates of occurrence, you said that there was nothing to worry about. So, as you can see, I'm not worried."

"I should have had Olin Hall represent me. You're not."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"I'm not part of this bull shit in Grabe County, Waverly. You're used to having your way and being protected by the likes of Hall. Feel free to get another attorney at any time. That might be best for both of us. Hall couldn't represent you anyway. You told me Finner asked him to talk to you about his termination, so that constitutes a conflict of interest. You give me information for a defense, and I'll use it. So far, they have the big guns, and I think there is more."

"Who are you going to call now?" asked Waverly.

Attorney Isner stood up. "Your Honor, I call Sheriff Waverly to the stand."

Judge Stamp: "I'm looking at the time, gentlemen. We will continue tomorrow morning—no, no. This is Friday. We will resume the hearing Monday at 9:00AM. We are adjourned until then. This hearing is taking longer than I thought. I thought we could finish in three days, but we will carry over into next week." He pounded his gavel. "Adjourned."

All rose until the judge left the courtroom.

"I won't be able to be here next Monday, Jinkx. You're going to have to go it alone. Come by my office after 12:00 noon tomorrow and we will set up our plan for Monday. We are going to finish it then," said Attorney Faber.

"I do need to talk to you about what is appropriate for a rebuttal witness," said Jinkx.

"A rebuttal witness, eh? Tomorrow we plan our attack. The rebuttal witness sounds good to me if you can disprove anything that was said by one of the witnesses. We'll talk about it tomorrow."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx was fixing a cup of coffee in his apartment when he thought of the documents that Kerrie had given him. He took them from his folder and began to read them where he left off at the restaurant.

First time when we lived down on Beall road he kept coming into Rashe County. And antagonizing people who came and went from our house their. This is when he arrested Kline Parks, Donna Yantis and Johnny Mallory along with Jimmy Harris all leaving from my house. But never came their with no warrants. Even though Kline Parks had just got



through cooking their. And a week after the arrest of those four, Bubba M cooked up a pot one Sunday and so if they were coming they missed it. Even when I had all of Kline Parks glass ware their at the house. I don't know if my father in law was calling are what? One night he came all the way in and asked Ron Glade if he was Bubba Mission. And all the times Bubba was their he must have been sleeping or just stupid.

Date 3 Second time is after we moved to Rainbow Creek Rd and on one saterday night Lanny Trumble (FBI) and Chick Colley came threw trailer looking for Barton Hines, And I heard Chick Colley ask Lanny Trumble, if he could go and get a search warrant For the trailer and check out the guns in my closet. He had been looking in. Trumble told him no! Leave it alone! But Chick had already went through most of my personal items. Earlier that day I had Wake S, BobM, Dick G and many other known people at my house that day. This is also when Chick saw the window pane on the foot of my bed that night. And also the scales in the closet.

Third time is on rainbow creek again Donna Yantis has moved in more or less. Due to she had know other place to go, even her own sister would not have her. Donna's code name to Chick was (CHRISTAL) and he always returned her calls at any time. And even came to pick her up if she asked while Lana and I were gone to the store one evening Chick came to the house with felony warrants on Kline Parks and Vince Yantis. Donna Yantis was arrested for PCS, again for Kline Parks stuff he found on him in my bedroom. Donna and Vince was at the other end of the trailer. Tonya Lollar was arrested for paraphernalia he found while he was searching her hand bag. When Lana and I returned back, Lana stayed in the car while went in. Chick already had Kline Parks in the car. And was fixing to put Vince, Donna, and Tonya in the car. And he advised me to clean the house up Because he was coming back with a search warrant in an hour and left. He came back with a consent to search form and then he told me to sign it. \*\*\*\*\* As always before I copperated complete I had taken and put scales and baggies. some old rigs in a box and put them on the front porch before he got there. But it seemed like Chick was looking for something else instead in my bedroom. While he



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

was running the numbers on the guns it just was the feeling I had. I told him the TV was hot. Chick left the house that night with Two TV sets, one brief case, two sets of scales. But left the hot microwave for Cummins to pick up. Chick left the house not leaving a receipt for the items he took. After Chick left that night I started looking myself because I knew there was know dope in the house at that time. But after searching myself I found in the bathroom behind the mirror two of Kline Parks baggies with stuff in them. And Lana or I had \*\*\*\*\* not them their.

Fourth time is when Trumble and Dwight came to the rainbow creek location and arrested Lana and I for the Federal charges and, Then I asked Chick Colley if any of the guns came up hot? He said he didn't know yet, and I advised him again of the hot microwave oven. he said he would advise Cummins. This is when Trumble handed me the cuffs and told me I knew how to put them on. Then I told Trumble I did not want to loose my guns, Trumble said he would take care of it. then he put me in the car and sent me to tyler, leaving Lana there with them. About an hour and a half later Lana got to tyler, and told me that she had Trumble take chama and the guns to her mothers, where she helped him unload the guns and put them up. But she said while they were back at the trailer Trumble showed her two gram baggies, with a white substance in them. and wanted to know why they were their. She advised him that it was not our stuff because of the baggies did not have the red line across the top. Because thats the way we order them, like a trade mark of ours. When I finely got to talk to Trunnle, I asked him about the baggies, and suprisingly. said don't worry about them it was nothing. this is when we went before Mr. Houston Able, and gave us the 50,000 PR bond, and appointed Lewis Gormert as our attorney. The whole thing was preplaned.

Date of arrest March 13

Why did Chick Colley leave the microwave oven, even though I told him it was hot

Then arrest me on the hot TV and rifle?

Why did Chick Colley take the hot pistol, even though it was the wrong one, and not say anything about the pistol being the wrong one? Why didn't he leave me a copy of the search warrant? Why did Trumble pull the baggie trick with Lana, was it just for fun?



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

265

Fifth time is after the FBI arrested Lana and I. Chick Colley came back one thursday nite with a warrant for Pos of Stolen Property 750/20,000, being the 243 rifle and the TV set. Chick Colley advised me that he was going to teach me a lesson, along with Lana. For not coming in and signing statements on where we got the stolen property. chick went to my father in laws house and picked up the rifle along with a H&R shot gun single shot. And the pistol he got from the trailer was the wrong one, because I had sanded the numbers off of it, and he took it and never said nothing about it beeing the rong one. There again know recipets for the items he took. So in all Chick recovered:

1-Sony color TV	1-HIR single shot Gun 410
1-Silvina color TV	1-Black Power Pistol
2-Sets of triple beam scales	
1-243 Rem rifle with scope	
1-Brief case	

But as far as checking the Numbers on the steros, video recorders, and CB he did not. And still didn't leave a recipt on the items taken. In fact, I never had any receipts."

Why did Chick wait until the FBI arrested us first, and come back and arrested us? Why did Chick take my briefcase? Even though the books can link John Jr. to the pistol used in the Kinney Fine Chicken killings along with Donna Yantis?

Sixth time is when Gene Ellis of the Texas Rangers arrested Me for Mot to Rev Prob out of Walker County. Gene took me to Klimore Police Station called the Probation office and they advised him I needed to pay on my fine in which he had Lana go and get two money oders that equled to 300 dollars and let me go.

Fifth time Chick Colley Grabe County Sheriff Dept Arrested Lana and I on state charges Fel Poss of Con Sub Two Counts Bond on Lana was 10,000 And on me was 20,000

Reason for: Being at Jimmy Majors when Chick Colley kicked in the door in process of planting the dope on Lana and me Because we already new he was coming and the house was clean.

Then again the Feds pulled the bonds on Lana and I-set them at 50.000.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Seventh time Chick Colley arrested me was for Mot to Rev Prob the same thing Gene Ellis had arrested me for but instead Chick Colley had me held over, and sent to Walker County, after staying in jail for about two weeks. They set my bond at 20,000 which made it an out of county bond at 40,000, when I made the bond, then the Feds put a hold on me. It was at this time Grabe County bench warranted me back to their jail in Linview. I stayed about a week until the Marchles came and picked me up and brought me back to Tyler for another week until Mr Houston Able could see me again to set my bond at 50,000 cash or surity which I made. Mr Walker advised me at my hearing of my dirty urine, and the times I missed reporting in to them. The times I missed reporting in to them was from being in jail, and when my urine was dirty I advised him. And when Walker did come to the house we were always there.

Date arrested March 26

Why didn't Chick Colley let me call Gene Ellis or Dwight Waskom?

Why did Walker county advise me that they wait until Grabe county gets there before they do anything with me?

Eight time is when Lana and I stopped at Jimmy Majors on First Swanny and Pine Valley road. On Friday evening it was about four o'clock in the afternoon on June 1. Reason for stopping was that I wanted to talk to him about some money that he owed me. While Jimmy and I were talking Lana and Chama left in Jimmy station wagon, and went to her mother house and left Chama. When she returned Jimmy asked us to stay and eat dinner with him Donna Suttleworth and Derrick, we all sat down and ate dinner. After we got through eating Lana asked me to load some of our things in the car, being the station wagon of Jimmy's. This is when Chick Colley and company came busting in. While I was trying open the front door, that the deputy was trying to kick in but he finally did. They advised Jimmy of the search warrant and gave him a copy of it. Chick Colley gave Jimmy a small speech and had some woman with him, who took the girls in the bedroom and searched them. Finding stuff on Donna, but not on Lana or Derrick. Then Chick took Jimmy and searched him. And me last and not finding nothing. Then he took me and the three girls and put us in the back seat and took us to Linview and booked us for Poss of Con Sub all of us. It was when I went before the JP is when I found out about the second



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

267

count. But to Chick Colley surprise is that we knew he was COMING, and the house was dope free except for what was on Donna, And the dope that he found was brought with him, and that we were set up.

Why did Chick Colley take the search warrant from Jimmy Majors when he took him to jail?

Why was Dick Glenn named on the search warrant as to visiting the house being Jimmy Major's on two times?

Why was it that Weldon and Ramey warned Jimmy Majors about their information of his house getting busted

Why did Weldon come back thursday night and advise Jimmy that the bust was called off?

Why was Chick Colley wanting to get Lana to sign some statements against Weldon?

Why did Chick tell Donna in a tape: that Callie Oakly has dope for him? ("I GO TO ANY LEGITHS TO BUST THEM WEATHER I HAVE TO PLANT SOMETHING ON THEM OR IN THEIR CAR OR WHAT EVER")

She also said if Chick found one ounce of dope he kept at least half and ran it up. (used the dope for hisself. He was a dope head too. That's why he liked working dope.") (He flunked a piss test two or three times and that why Sheriff Wavley had to get rid of him.)

Could it had been Barton execution style? Like Callie had said when the police found out that Bonny had talked to some of the people, and when asked by the police if they would sign statement they all refused WHY?

The sanded down pistol first came from Big E to pay off a dope debt that he owed to Donna, and the pistol was given to Jimmy Jr.

Was Bonny really with Bubba or was he with Allie? Why did Bonny take twelve vallum before taking a polygraphy and still fail?

Why didn't Big E let the rangers use his house to catch Bubba M while he was still coming out their?

Why did Bubba M cop out for twenty five years TDC? Why did Kline Parks cop out for three years TDC after what all he has been arrested for?



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

How could you put five victims and five actors in a blazer? Why did they take two cars to the location or did they? How did any know that the woman got up and ran, unless they were there, or where could they have heard it from?

I have to think what I need to do.

I need the reports of Klime Parks, Donna Yantis, Johnny Mallory Jr. To be pulled from the Grabe County Court house and put here to attached sheets. The time of arrest was late November.

Jinkx looked through the papers to see if he had missed any. "That must be it. I was wondering why Chick Colley was let go a couple of weeks ago. You don't, ah, hear the real truth through the grapevine. Hummer's golden boy turned out to be as worthless as he was, or is. I'm going to give KPD Detective Waskom a copy of this. Maybe he can do something with it. All this has got me talking to myself. I wonder if Waskom is working now?" He dialed the Klimore PD.

"Klimore Police Department," answered the dispatcher.

"Is Detective Waskom around?"

"Is that you Finner?" asked the dispatcher.

"Yes, it is. Who is this?"

"Sgt. Benfelder. Waskom doesn't work here any more. He was let loose, fired or what ever, by Chief Hadley this morning."

"What did he do?" asked Jinkx.

"He was associating with some people who wanted to know about the killings here, and another killing that happened a year or so ago. The Chief didn't like that, so he fired him. Dwight was happy to get away. He didn't like the bull shit that went on here."

"I had some information that I think he would be interested in."

"I don't think anyone is going to listen, Jinkx. This case will never be solved. Too much interference. I think some one, maybe several, are impeding the investigation. If you get down this way, drop what you have off here at the PD. I'll take a look at it. Put it in an envelope, or give it



directly to me, OK? You know, Jinkx. I've been having a little trouble with this big fat body of mine. I think I might have to go see the Doc. I can't eat like I used to. Spicy foods are beginning to bother me more and more. I've lost about 35 pounds."

"With all the new sprays on the fruits and vegetables, everyone is contaminated now," stated Jinkx. "Take care, and I'll see you later."

## **CHAPTER 10**

It was early Saturday morning and the phone rang loudly waking Jinkx. "Hello," he answered.

"Jinkx, Kerrie Wintz. Guess who got stopped last night for DWI?"

"I don't know. It's too early to guess. Who was it?"

"Sheriff Waverly. He got stopped by a Linview police officer, and then he drove away to his apartment and wouldn't cooperate with the police. There is a big stink over his lack of cooperation. They might bag him for DWI."

"Well, well. It's about time someone stopped catering to him. Did the officer know who he was?"

"I don't think so, but after everything happened, the public knew about it and it was too late to sweep it under the rug like they usually do. There is an article in today's paper about it. Thought I would inform you of what was happening."

"I'm glad you called, and don't let this wind up in the classified section. Keep it in front of the public, and thanks for calling." Jinkx dialed Marissa's number.

"Hello."

"Hello, kiddo. I was just called by Kerrie, and she said that Sheriff Waverly was stopped for DWI last night. There is an article in the paper, she said. You want to meet me at the Hot Biscuit for breakfast?"

"Sure do. Say, thirty minutes?"

"Thirty minutes it is. See you."



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Jinkx and Marissa ordered breakfast and Jinkx looked over the article about the Sheriff.

### **LINVIEW PD TO CONSULT DA AFTER SHERIFF STOPPED**

**By John Zimenas**  
**Staff Writer**

Linview Police plan to consult with the District Attorney Monday over what action might be taken against the Grabe County Sheriff, who was stopped Friday night on suspicion of driving while intoxicated, Police Chief Jimmy Upshaw said.

Sheriff Billy Waverly was not arrested or charged with DWI, ...but spokeswoman Barbara Morse said that doesn't mean the 30-minute incident involving him Friday night is over.

"Basically, (Police Chief Jimmy Upshaw) is going to end up talking to the DA and other people to see just what the options are," said Morse. "The department has options, and it's just a matter of what steps to take."

Waverly could not be reached at home or through the Sheriff's department for comment.

The incident began at 10:35p.m. Friday when LPD officer Will Tanner stopped Waverly, who was driving north on Spur 6. When reporting the stop to dispatchers, the officer said it was a possible DWI violation, said Morse.

Sheriff Waverly stopped his truck near Spur 6 and West Mansfield Avenue. Morse said.

She said she did not know what led Tanner to make the traffic stop.

"I do know at the time he initially stopped him, (Tanner) didn't now who (Waverly) was," Morse said.

However, after being stopped, Waverly drove away leading police about half a mile to his home in Twin Lock Villas, just off Spur 6.

"He should not have left the scene before we released him," Morse said.

Three patrol cars joined Tanner in front of Waverly's house, where the sheriff refused a field sobriety test, Morse said.

One Grabe County Sheriff's Department patrol unit also arrived at the scene, she said.



Upshaw said he was immediately notified of Waverly's traffic stop by officers who were at the scene as part of department procedures related to public officials.

"I was called last night at 11:00p.m. and was told they had him stopped," Upshaw said.

He said one of the issues raised during his conversation with officers at the scene was whether the sheriff should be arrested.

"My suggestion was they put him in jail if he was intoxicated," Upshaw told the Linview News Journal.

"My philosophy is if I'm out and getting drunk and I get picked up, then I should go to jail," he said.

"I don't think anybody ... should be above the law just because they are a political figure."

Waverly was not arrested based upon what Upshaw said was the discretion of Sgt. Paul Sonders, who was the commanding officer at the scene.

"He did not tell me (Waverly) was not arrested, Morse said.

Upshaw, who had not spoken with all the officers involved, said he also didn't know why charges were not filed.

"They decided not to," he said. "I don't know why."

Jinx looked at Marissa. "Looks like he skated again. This will be swept under the rug, as usual. All he has to do is plead no contest, get a little probation and do it all over again on down the road. Typical Grabe County politics. He will tell the public that this has made him a changed man, and he now has his eyes open and he will perform his job better as he now realizes how fortunate he was to have it brought to his attention that he is a drunk and a hazard to the other drivers on the public streets. The public will eat it up, as they have been doing for years. They love this kind of guy. He is an idol to the citizens of Grabe County."

"Do you think he will be in court Monday?" asked Marissa.

"I don't know. When I meet with Faber this afternoon we can discuss what our plans will be for Monday. Oh yeah, I forgot to tell you. This Klimore detective Waskom, that I talk to. He was fired by the Police Chief and is not there anymore. There goes my inside man."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Monday morning came fast and this would probably be the last day of the hearing. Everyone was seated when the Sheriff came into the courtroom with Chief Deputy Donner.

The judge took his seat on the bench and looked around. He tapped the gavel lightly. "This court is now in session." He looked at Attorney Isner. "I believe you were going to call a witness, counselor."

Attorney Isner: "I call Sheriff Waverly to the stand."

The Sheriff took the stand and was sworn in.

Attorney Isner: "Sheriff Waverly, did you talk to Deputy Finner about the way he handled his prisoner on December 25<sup>th</sup>, last year."

Sheriff Waverly: "Yes, I did."

Attorney Isner: "Sheriff, would you tell the court why you reached the decision to terminate Deputy Finner?"

Sheriff Waverly: "I relied upon the Grabe County Personnel Policy Manual to help me make this decision. After I read the complaints that were signed against him. Therefore, I felt it necessary to take him off the duty status and not allow him to be in touch with the public at all as a Peace Officer, representing Grabe County. ....The statements signed against him were quite clear that he violated the civil rights of a citizen by striking him and cursing him. I would like to refer to Grabe County Sheriffs Department Policy Manual, Chapter IX, number 5. Gross negligence or incompetence. As stated in Captain Hummer's Memo; to wit:

Deputy Finner failed to search his prisoner properly before entering the book-in area of the jail and the prisoner had in his possession one lock-blade knife and one .25 automatic which was loaded. Also, amended Policy Chapter IV.

Protection of Prisoners, their rights and their property, Section 6:02 which states: All employees shall protect the rights of any person held in custody and no employee shall verbally abuse or use any unnecessary violence against any person. "

Attorney Isner: "I have no further questions. Pass the witness."

Jinkx: "Sheriff Waverly, as you saw, and heard, while Chief Deputy Donner was being questioned, there were medical reports submitted as, I guess you would say evidence, to the effect that on more than one occasion, Deputy Finnegan hospitalized two prisoners while attempting



the arrest of these individuals. Do you agree that he used the proper procedure in making these arrests?"

Sheriff Waverly: "He might have handled it a different way, I don't know because I wasn't there."

Jinkx: ...."I'm going to ask the question again. Do you agree that Deputy Finnegan used proper procedure in making two arrests that led to the hospitalization of these two prisoners?"

Sheriff Waverly: "That is not our policy or procedure that is used or recommended at the Grabe County Sheriffs Department."

Jinkx: "Are you aware of any of the other prisoners that were hospitalized while a Sheriff's deputy, any deputy, arrested, searched or insured the detention of a prisoner?"

Sheriff Waverly: "I vaguely remember a prisoner that was taken to the hospital because he attacked a deputy in the jail one day and the deputy had to defend himself."

Jinkx: ...."Do you remember the prisoner's name and the circumstances that revolved around that particular prisoner being taken to the hospital for injuries?"

Sheriff Waverly: "No. I don't."

Jinkx: "Let me see if I can refresh your memory, Sheriff. Does the name Kiley Tom Severnson sound familiar?"

Sheriff Waverly: "Not really."

Jinkx: "Would you take a look at this Personal History and Arrest Record, then tell the court if you recall this prisoner?"

Sheriff Waverly: "Where did you get this?"

Jinkx: "Do you recognize the name?"

Sheriff Waverly: "Judge, he's not supposed to have this."

Judge Stamp: "Let me see that paper, Mr. Finner." He looked the document over. He looked at Jinkx. "Is this an exhibit, Mr. Finner?"

Jinkx: "Yes, Your Honor. Our Exhibit 11."

Judge Stamp: "I'll allow it." He turned to the Sheriff. "I believe counsel requested several documents from the Sheriffs Department, and they were never received. I have a list of what was requested. This was on the list, but you failed to produce them for Attorney Faber and Mr. Finner. They allowed your documents into evidence, remember? The ones



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

that were the signed complaints against Mr. Finner, so therefore it's only right that this be allowed into evidence."

Jinkx: "Thank you, Your Honor. Sir, do you recognize the name on this document."

Sheriff Waverly: "No, I do not."

Jinkx: "Take a look at this document, Sheriff, and would you read this to the court?" Jinkx handed the judge a copy and the Sheriff a copy. "Our Exhibit 12."

Judge Stamp: "Accepted by the court."

Sheriff Waverly: "You want me to read this?"

Jinkx: "Yes, I do. And so does the court."

Sheriff Waverly read the document.

THE STATE OF TEXAS           \*  
COUNTY OF GRABE            \*

I, Kiley Tom Severnson, do solemnly swear that I forever relinquish, release and hold harmless the County of Grabe and any of its officials or employees thereof for any harm, injury, damage or other result stemming from actions of the Grabe Country Sheriff's Department, on or about the 10<sup>th</sup> day of September. This relinquishment includes any and all State and Federal claims that might have arisen or might arise out of said incident.

Kiley Tom Severnson

SUBSCRIBED TO AND SWORN BEFORE ME, on this 13<sup>th</sup> day of September.

\_\_\_\_\_  
Lillian Kone

Notary Public-State  
of Texas

Jinkx: "This was typed by your secretary at your direction, wasn't it Sheriff?"

Sheriff Waverly: "Yes."

Jinkx: "This incident involved a 200 pound Deputy Akers working in the jail, and a 135 pound prisoner, Kiley Severnson, didn't it?"

Sheriff Waverly: "Yes."



Jinkx: "Isn't it true, sir, that the prisoner was arrested for public intoxication, no drivers license and disorderly conduct, and that when this small drunk prisoner didn't answer the deputy's questions to his satisfaction, the deputy struck the prisoner several times and he had to be taken to the hospital?"

Sheriff Waverly: "The prisoner was taken to the hospital."

Jinkx: "Isn't it true that the prisoner threatened to sue you and the county for his mistreatment?"

Sheriff Waverly: "I think he did say that he would file suit against me and the county."

Jinkx: "As you can see on the arrest record, another charge, assault, was added and then marked through. When the prisoner signed away his rights of recourse to his being mistreated you dropped the assault charges, didn't you?"

Sheriff Waverly: "The assault charges were dropped, yes."

Jinkx: "Here is a copy of the charges for the emergency room service on this prisoner, \$81.25. Were you aware of these charges?"

Sheriff Waverly: "No, I was not."

Jinkx: "If you did this little favor for Deputy Akers, why didn't you do the same for Jinkx Finner when he had a problem with his prisoner?"

Sheriff Waverly: "The circumstances were not the same."

Jinkx: "That's right, the circumstances were not the same. On one hand you have a prisoner that was slapped and struck several times about the head, and this is true because if you look on the medical report, it shows that his head was x-rayed. The prices as stated is \$29.95. He received a Tetanus Toxoid 0.5 ML, in which the price was \$2.75. The prisoner showed signs of being struck or the hospital would not have performed this treatment. Isn't that correct?"

Sheriff Waverly: "That's what this report shows."

Jinkx: "On the other hand you have Deputy Finner, who slapped a hostile prisoner to pacify him, and he gets terminated. In your opinion, does this balance out?" Jinkx turned to the court reporter. "Strike that question. I'm going to re-phrase the question. "The treatment wasn't the same was it, Sheriff? An answer of yes or no will be sufficient. The treatment was not the same was it?"

Sheriff Waverly: "No."



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Jinkx: "On a date of May 12, Deputy Paul Finnegan took an axe handle from the back of his patrol unit and struck a black handcuffed prisoner on the head and body several times causing the prisoner to be taken to the hospital for treatment. Do you know anything about that one, Sheriff?"

Sheriff Waverly: "No, I do not."

Jinkx: "On the date of September 2<sup>nd</sup>, Deputy Paul Finnegan made an arrest and while the prisoner was handcuffed in the patrol unit, Deputy Finnegan struck the prisoner several times and he had to be taken to the hospital for treatment. Do you remember that?"

Sheriff Waverly: "No, I do not."

Jinkx: "I'll read from the emergency room report, Sheriff Waverly."

Pt. states he was assaulted during arrest per Grabe Sheriff's Dept. c/o pain, jaw, neck & shoulder, the upper ribcage, both eyes are blackened & upper lip is swollen and abraded. c/o dizziness.

### **PHYSICIANS REPORT:**

22-year-old male complains of being beat up by Sheriff's deputy. This report is for lawyer.

"Sheriff, would you look at the arrest report and please tell the court who the arresting officer was?" Jinkx hands the Sheriff and the court the arrest report.

Sheriff Waverly: "Deputy Paul Finnegan."

Jinkx: "Isn't it true, Sheriff, that you knew about this and the only punishment you gave Deputy Finnegan was that you took away his county furnished unit for two days?"

Sheriff Waverly: "I did take his unit away for two days."

Jinkx: "You took Deputy Finnegan's car away for two days after he had hospitalized his fourth prisoner for injuries while making his arrests, and you took Deputy Finner's livelihood away for one slap of a prisoner when the prisoner challenged him, isn't that correct?"

The Sheriff sat there motionless and didn't answer.

Jinkx: "I withdraw the question, Sheriff. The answer is obvious. Sheriff Waverly, you are familiar with the termination procedure that is



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

277

recommended in the Grabe County Personnel Policy Manual, are you not?"

Sheriff Waverly: "Yes, I am."

Jinkx: "Sheriff Waverly, I would like to bring it to your attention, and the courts attention, just what the procedure is, when a law enforcement officer is terminated. I have copies of Federal Law, State Law, Case Law, Grabe County Personnel Policy Manual and the Grabe County Sheriffs Department Policy Manual. Briefs were given to the court earlier in support of this appeal now being heard. I'm going to touch on what is contained in the briefs. The important parts that apply to this appeal."

28 U.S.C. 1343 (3) (4)

(3) To redress the deprivation, under the color of any state law, statute, ordinance, regulation, custom or usage, of any right, privilege, or immunity secured by the Constitution of the United States or by any act of Congress providing for equal rights of all of the citizens or of all persons within the jurisdiction of the United States:

(4) To recover damages or to secure equitable relief under any act of Congress providing for the protection of Civil Rights, including the right to vote.

Article 1, Section 19 Bill Of Rights State of Texas Deprivation of life, liberty, property, privileges, or any immunities, or in any manner disenfranchised, except by the due course of the law of the land, as applied to procedure, due process requires a fair and impartial trial before a competent tribunal. (Vogt v. Bexar County, 5 Tex. App. 272, 23 S.W. 1044 (1893).

Included within this requisite is an opportunity to be heard, and reasonable opportunity to prepare for the hearing.

There should be an opportunity given to cross-examine witnesses and to produce witnesses and be heard on questions of law. (Steddum v. Kirby Lumber Co. Supra)



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

**Article 6870 Vernon's Texas Civil Statutes Sheriffs- Responsible for their acts.**

Sheriffs shall be responsible for the official acts of their deputies, and they shall have the power to require from their deputies bond and security; and they shall have the same remedies against their deputies and securities as any person can have against a Sheriff and his securities.

### **Grabe County Personnel Policy Manual Chapter XIV Sub-Chapter III**

#### **2. Adverse Action Procedures**

##### **A. Notice of proposed adverse action**

- (1) An employee should be given at least ten full days (excluding Saturday, Sunday and legal holidays) advance written notice of the proposed action. The notice must state the reasons that are supporting the proposed action specifically and in detail, including names, times and places.
- (2) The notice should be so contained that a person unacquainted with the facts and circumstances involved can obtain from the notice a clear understanding of the reasons for the proposed action.
- (3) The notice must make it clear that it concerns only a proposed action and not a matter already decided.
- (4) The notice must tell the employee that he has a right to reply both personally and in writing, and to submit affidavits in support of his answer.
- (5) The notice should tell him that his reply, if any, would be considered. It should identify the person to receive a reply and assure him that he will be informed of the department's final decision in the matter.

##### **3. Hearings**

##### **D. Duty status**

An employee against whom adverse action is proposed should be retained in an active status during the notice period. When however, circumstances are such that the retention of the employee in an active duty status in his position may result in damage to county property or may be detrimental to the interest of the county or injurious to the employee, his fellow workers, or the general public.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

279

The employee may be temporarily assigned to duties in which these conditions will not exist.

Due Process of Law 5<sup>th</sup> Amendment Note # 199-12. "Due Process of Law" does not necessarily mean a judicial proceeding, the proceeding being adaptable to the natures of the case, but it does necessitate an opportunity for a hearing and a defense. (Barry v. Hall (1938) 98 F 2d 222 68 D.C. 350).

Due process demands that an individual whose livelihood is threatened by administrative action be given notice and hearing to fairly rebut evidence against him, particularly where action of administrative body as regulator of qualifications for entire field of private employment may entirely foreclose an individual from their employment opportunities. (Birkfield v. U.S.C.A. PA. (1966) 309 2d 491.

Where proceedings are held under the auspices of administrative authorities, all claims must be appropriately set forth so that they may be open to challenge and opposing evidence. (Takeo Tadano v. Manney C.C.A. Ariz. (1947) 160 F. 2d 665).

In Re; Bishop-Mississippi

52 So. 2d 18

Note #1-Where a deputy Sheriff may be removed only for cause, he has a right to notice.

Deputy Sheriff may be removed whenever the public interest will be sub-served, and that there must be some good cause or ground for removal, and that such fact must have a direct bearing on the kind of service Deputy Sheriff is supposed to render to the public; and

Note #2-Where the removal of officer can only be for just cause, officer has a right to notice and an opportunity to disprove charges; and

Note #5--Charge(s) against a Deputy Sheriff, who is sought to be removed, can be made by County Attorney, or some official acting for the state, to do so, and let such charge(s) be heard by a trial judge. (There must be some good ground for removal).



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

### Equal Protection 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment Note #24-14

An individual who has suffered injuries as a result of unjustified invidious discrimination may be able to establish an equal protection violation regardless of whether such injuries arise to the level of deprivation of life, liberty or property. (Harris v. Harvey, D.C. Wis. (1977) 436 F. Supp. 143.

“Sheriff Waverly, did you follow the guidelines as set forth in the Grabe County Personnel Policy Manual when you determined that Deputy Finner should be terminated? Let’s take, for example, adverse action. The incident occurred on December 25<sup>th</sup>, which was on a Sunday. Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday and Friday is five days. Don’t count Saturday or Sunday. Don’t count Monday, the 1<sup>st</sup>, a holiday. Tuesday, the 2<sup>nd</sup> and Wednesday, the 3<sup>rd</sup>, the day Deputy Finner was terminated. Did he have ten full days advance written notice before he was terminated? Doesn’t that come out to seven days? I have brought a calendar to the courtroom for your convenience. Please count the days and tell the court how many days written notice was given Deputy Finner.” He then handed Sheriff Waverly the calendar. “Remember. Excluding Saturdays, Sundays and legal holidays, in which the 1<sup>st</sup> is recognized as a holiday. If it isn’t recognized as a legal holiday, Deputy Finner only had eight days written notice, not ten as required by the Personnel Policy Manual. Am I correct?”

Sheriff Waverly sat motionless and studied the calendar.

Jinkx: “You can forget about counting, Sheriff. I think the court has the right number. That covers 2 A (1). Now, Sheriff. (2), (3), (4) and (5) are now still questionable, will you agree to this? Did you follow these guidelines?”

Sheriff Waverly: “I think I did.”

Jinkx: “Sheriff Waverly, ah--, you are familiar with the Texas Penal Code, aren’t you?”

Sheriff Waverly: “Yes, I am.”

Jinkx: “Here is the Texas Penal Code book. Would you read to the court the sections that have markers at certain pages?”

Sheriff Waverly turned to the first marked page.



**9.51 Penal Code**

**Arrest and Search**

- (a) A Peace Officer, or person acting in a Peace Officer's presence and at his direction, is justified in using force against another and to the degree the actor reasonably believes the force is immediately necessary to make or assist in making an arrest or search, or to prevent or to assist in preventing escape after arrest. (The standard sliding-scale-of-force formulation, under which only that degree of force reasonably believed to be immediately necessary to arrest, search or prevent escape is justified). (P.C. 1142, (5) (7) Code of Criminal Procedure 15.24) (An officer having lawful authority to make an arrest, may, on meeting with resistance, employ such force as may be necessary to overcome such resistance; but he must use no greater force than is necessary for the arrest and detention of the accused).

**9.52 Penal Code**

**Prevention of Escape From Custody**

The use of force to prevent escape of an arrested person from custody is justifiable when the force could have been employed to affect the arrest under which the person is in custody, including deadly force, that he believes to be immediately necessary to prevent the escape of a person from jail, prison, or other institution for the detention of persons charged with, or convicted of a crime.

**9.22 Penal Code**

**Necessity-Conduct is justifiable if:**

The actor reasonably believes the conduct is immediately necessary to avoid imminent harm.

**9.31 Penal Code**

**Self Defense:**

- (a) A person is justified in using force against another when and to the degree he reasonably believes the force is immediately necessary to protect himself against the others use or attempted use of lawful



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

force. (Note #3- One must actually believe that he is in danger of death or serious bodily injury to rely upon self defense.)

Jinkx: "Would you say that these sections of the Texas Penal Code fits the situation encountered by Deputy Finner with his intoxicated prisoner on December 25<sup>th</sup> of last year?"

Sheriff Waverly: "I don't know. I know what the complaints stated about Deputy Finner and his actions. I relied upon that when I made my decision to terminate him."

Jinkx: "Sheriff, I'm going to read to you and the court some case law that is almost parallel with the actions of Deputy Jinkx Finner and his prisoner, Roswell Powers."

Lamb V. Cartwright D.C. Tex. (1) (75) 393 F. Supp. 1081 (Affirmed-524 F. 2d 238)

Where deputy with probable cause told plaintiff husband that he was under arrest and he pulled away and made some move with his hands which deputy interpreted as threatening, deputy's action in striking husband plaintiff with his fist, knocking him to the ground, was reasonable under the circumstances and was not excessive force.

Conklin v. Barfield 334 F. Supp. 475 D.C.W.D. Missouri (1971)

Note #6- Police officer in defending himself against possible attack, or visible signs of possible attack during arrest of prisoner was entitled to act on reasonable appearance of danger from prisoner and was not required to narrowly gauge force to amount required from a deliberate retrospective view. (U.S.G.A. Const. Amends. 4, 14).

Note #39- Where arrested person had turned suddenly on officer and made motion which at least offered prospect of physical harm to officer, officer was under reasonable apprehension that he was in danger and was justified in striking person to pacify him.



Jinkx: "Sheriff Waverly, Captain Hummer's letter, or memorandum, stated that Deputy Finner had manhandled his prisoner and failed to protect his rights, is that correct?"

Sheriff Waverly: "That's correct."

Jinkx: "Sheriff, would you say that Deputy Jinkx Finner violated his prisoner's civil rights?"

Sheriff Waverly: ...."Yes. I most certainly would say that. Yes, he violated his prisoner's civil rights."

Jinkx: "In other words, when you terminated Deputy Finner, based upon Captain Hummer's letter of termination and Chief Donner's support of Hummer's accusations, it was mostly because Deputy Finner allegedly violated his prisoner's civil rights, and he was accused of these violations according to your testimony, Chief Donner's testimony, and the complaints of Captain Wainger and jailer Matlock, along with the memorandum of Captain Hummer. Is that correct?"

Sheriff Waverly: "That is definitely correct."

Jinkx: "In other words, Captain Hummer's letter, passed around to Chief Donner and you, was an accusatory statement. Is that correct?"

Sheriff Waverly: "Yes, you could say that. It definitely accused Deputy Finner of violating departmental policy, including a violation of a prisoner's civil rights."

Jinkx: "You're saying that Deputy Finner committed a crime, in that he abused his prisoner. Right?"

Sheriff Waverly: "Right. Now you should understand why you were terminated, don't you?"

Jinkx: "I would like to bring one thing to your attention, Sheriff Waverly. I would like to read to the court, and you, some case law. Listen carefully, because I have several questions on this matter."

### Accusatory Statement

"Accusatory statement" is a statement expressly directed to a person, or in his presence, accusing him of a crime, or tending to connect him with the commission of a crime. (People v. Moore, Cal. App., 27

Cal Reporter, 526, 532)

An "Accusatory Statement" is the foundation for, and leads directly into, and accusatory investigation.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

“At the bottom of Captain Hummer’s memorandum, the letter that you and Chief Donner agreed with, it reads: ....‘On December 26<sup>th</sup>, at approximately 3:30P.M., I, Captain Daniel Hummer, advised Deputy Finner he was on suspension until further notice pending conclusion of the internal investigation.’ A very simple question, Sheriff. The internal investigation would be an accusatory investigation, would it not?”

Sheriff Waverly: “I, ah, I-”

Jinkx: “Your Honor, would you please instruct the witness to answer the question?”

Judge Stamp: “Sheriff, you have to answer the question.”

Sheriff Waverly: “Whatever is interpreted in the letter in question, is what it is.”

Jinkx looked quizzically at the judge, and the judge looked at Jinkx. Jinkx shrugged his shoulders, looked around, and made a motion with his hands, almost breaking into a laugh.

Jinkx: “Sheriff Waverly, would you tell the court, and produce documents to the court, and me, showing the results of the accusatory investigation, or as you say, whatever is in the letter in question, the part pertaining to the, and I quote in part: ‘Deputy Finner was on suspension until further notice pending conclusion of the internal investigation.’ I want you to produce, in detail, the text and conclusion of this investigation. Before you produce for the court the results, I have something else to bring to your attention. I am sure you have heard of Miranda Rights.”

Am Jur volume Evidence 555-557

Miranda v. Arizona 378 U.S. 478

### Rights

The United States Supreme Court (in Miranda v Arizona) held that an individual may waive effectivation of his right to remain silent, providing the waiver is made voluntarily, knowingly, and intelligently, after he had been informed of his right to remain silent.(Moreover the court said that the mere fact that he may have answered some questions or volunteered some statements on his own does not deprive him of the right to refrain from answering any further inquiries until he consents to be questioned.)



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

285

Escobido v. Illinois 40 Cal Reporter (378 U.S. 478)

Right to Counsel.

People v. Dorado 40 Cal Reporter 264

Rights

Note #2- Constitutional right to counsel precludes use of incriminating statements elicited by police during Accusatory Investigation unless the right is intentionally waived; and no waiver can be presumed if investigating officer(s) do not inform suspect of right to counsel or right to remain silent. (U.S.C.A. Const. Amends. 6, 14)

Note #3- Defendant is not required to specifically request counsel at time of incriminating statements are elicited (drawn out or forth; educed; as to elicit truth by discussion) by police during accusatory investigation to render statements inadmissible.

"Now, Sheriff Waverly, since an accusatory investigation was in progress immediately after Captain Hummer produced the memorandum to read and/or told Deputy Finner what it contained, was he given his rights as an accused person of committing a crime?"

Sheriff Waverly: "Can I consult with my attorney before I give an answer to that question, Your Honor?"

Judge Stamp: "That might be advisable, Sheriff."

Attorney Isner walked to the witness stand and talked to Sheriff Waverly, then took his seat.

Jinkx: "I'll re-phrase the question, Sheriff. Did you give Deputy Finner his Miranda warning before you asked him questions?"

Sheriff Waverly: "I didn't think it was necessary."

Jinkx: "I'll ask the same question over and over until you give me and the court an answer. Did you give Deputy Finner his Miranda warning before you asked him questions?"

Sheriff Waverly: "No."

Jinkx: "You are responsible for the official acts of your deputies, aren't you Sheriff?"

Sheriff Waverly: "Yes."

Jinkx: "Now, did Captain Hummer or Chief Donner give Deputy Finner his Miranda warning?"



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Sheriff Waverly: "I don't know if they did or not."

Jinkx: "Don't you have a document that is signed when a suspect is accused of a crime and he, or she, is given their rights?"

Sheriff Waverly: "Usually we do."

Jinkx: "Can you produce the results of the internal investigation that was conducted, or was there an internal investigation?"

Sheriff Waverly: "I—ah,—could not find that there was an internal investigation conducted."

Jinkx: "Are you familiar with Article 6252-20 of Vernon's Texas Civil Statutes, Sheriff? Let me read it for you."

### Article 6252-20 Vernon's Texas Civil Statutes VACS

#### Complaints Against Law Enforcement Officers: Writing: Signatures:

In order that a complaint against a Law Enforcement Officer of the State of Texas, including but not limited to Officers of the Department of Public Safety and the Liquor Control Board, or against a Firemen or Policeman may be considered by the Head of a State Agency or by a Chief or Head of a Fire Department, neither of which is under the protection of a Civil Service statute, the complaint must be placed in writing and signed by the person making the complaint. A copy of the signed complaint must be presented to the affected employee within a reasonable amount of time after the complaint is filed and before any disciplinary action may be taken against the affected employee.

"Sheriff Waverly, did Captain Hummer, or Chief Deputy Donner, or yourself, present to Deputy Finner a copy of the complaints signed against Deputy Finner? In other words, did he receive a copy of the complaints signed by Captain Wainger, jailer Matlock and Jailer Boren, after he had asked for the complaints several times?"

Sheriff Waverly: "I don't think so."

Jinkx: "Did you present to Deputy Finner a copy of the complaints?"

Sheriff Waverly: "No."

Jinkx: "One more, and maybe the last question. Actually speaking, not hypothetically speaking, would you rather have a deputy that made



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

287

four or more arrests and hospitalized four prisoners, or would you rather have a deputy that slapped a prisoner that had challenged him, just to pacify the prisoner, with no injuries to the prisoner?"

Sheriff Waverly: "I, I, ah-"

Jinkx: "I withdraw the question. I have no further questions. Pass the witness."

Judge Stamp: "Attorney Isner. Any questions of the Sheriff?"

Attorney Isner: "No questions."

Judge Stamp: "That seems to be all the witnesses, gentlemen?"

Jinkx: "Your Honor, I would like to call a rebuttal witness."

Judge Stamp: "A rebuttal witness?"

Jinkx motioned to the back of the courtroom. .... "Yes, Your Honor. I would like to call former Grabe County Deputy Sam Retton to the stand."

Sam walked to the front of the courtroom and was sworn in.

Jinkx: "You are a former Grabe County Sheriffs Department deputy aren't you Mr. Retton?"

Sam Retton: "Yes, I am."

Jinkx: "And you are presently employed by a chemical company in south Linview, is that correct?"

Sam Retton: "That's correct."

Jinkx: "You were in law enforcement for several years, including the Linview Police Department and the Grabe County Sheriffs Department were you not, Mr. Retton? And, also the Glidding Police Department?"

Sam Retton: "Yes, I was."

Jinkx: "Were you partnered with Deputy Jinkx Finner for a period of time, Mr. Retton?"

Sam Retton: "Yes I was. For almost two years."

Jinkx: .... "Mr. Retton, have you ever seen Deputy Finner abuse a citizen and/or a prisoner that was in his custody?"

Sam Retton: "Absolutely not."

Jinkx: "Have you ever seen any other Grabe County Deputy abuse a citizen and/or a prisoner that was in his custody?"

Sam Retton: "Yes, I have. On two separate occasions."

Jinkx: "And you have personal knowledge of these two incidents?"

Sam Retton: "Yes, I do."

Jinkx: "Would you tell the court about these two incidents?"



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Sam Retton: "It was on or about March 21<sup>st</sup>, a year or so ago and me and my partner, Deputy Finner, was on routine patrol when we were dispatched to Old Glidding Highway and Interstate in reference to a vehicle parked in the roadway. At this time another unit, 524, our south roving unit told the dispatcher that he would be en route to assist. That unit was closer, so they got there first. They, meaning Deputy Finnegan and Deputy Bowles. When we arrived on the scene we saw Deputy Finnegan leaning into the back door of his patrol unit and he was using his flashlight as a club and hitting the prisoner that was in the back seat. When we were approaching Finnegan's unit, he then stopped hitting the prisoner and told us that the prisoner had gave them a bad time, and that the show was over. When we shined our flashlights in the back seat we could see blood running down the face of the prisoner."

Attorney Isner: "Your Honor, I do object to the questioning of this witness. This is supposed to be a rebuttal witness, and he is testifying to an incident that supposedly happened."

Jinkx: "Your Honor, Chief Deputy Donner and Sheriff Waverly plainly testified that incidents such as was described by this witness never occurred. His testimony is pure fact, not fiction, that unnecessary beatings of handcuffed prisoners by Deputy Finnegan did happen. They said it did not happen. My witness says that it did happen, and the court knows, that as stated in Article 6870, in Vernon's Texas Civil Statutes, and I quote: 'Sheriffs shall be responsible for the official acts of their deputies.' The Sheriff is trying to sweep blatant acts of civil rights violations under the rug, and does not accept the responsibility that he has no control over Deputy Finnegan."

Judge Stamp: "In view of the circumstances, and documented proof of civil rights violations by a Grabe County Sheriff's Deputy, I will allow this line of questioning, but I would like to remind Mr. Finner that it is a very thin line, and he has to be careful not to step over the line. Objection overruled."

Jinkx: "Thank you, Your Honor. Mr. Retton, was there another incident that involved Deputy Paul Finnegan where he made an arrest and used violence on a prisoner?"

Sam Retton: "Yes, there was. It was on or about May 12, less than two months from the incident I just described. I was on routine patrol and



heard Deputy Finnegan check out on a vehicle on Gamble Road at the Sims County line. I advised the dispatcher that I was en route to assist. I also heard Deputy Finner advise the dispatcher that he would also be en route to assist. ....Deputy Finner was in plain clothes and driving an unmarked unit. Anyway, me and Jinkx, Deputy Finner, arrived at the same time. I observed a black male laying in the middle of the road. As I approached this black male on foot I noticed that he was handcuffed. He was laying on his back. Deputy Finnegan stated that him and his partner had one hell of a time getting him handcuffed, and that he would not let them get close enough to him to put him in the patrol unit to transport him to jail. At this time Deputy Finnegan went to his patrol unit, opened the trunk, and took an axe handle from within the trunk, and returned to where the black man was still laying in the road, and still handcuffed. Deputy Finnegan said, 'this is my Nigger-knocker,' as he raised the axe handle. And then he said, 'this is the way I used to do it in Sims County,' as he proceeded to hit this black male on the head and upper part of the body. He hit this black male several times, and kept saying, 'I'll kill you. I'll kill you,' until this black man begged him to stop. When we secured the detention of the prisoner by wrapping a chain around his legs, he was put in the back of Finnegan's unit, and they transported him to the Grand Samaratin Hospital. Approximately one and a half hours later myself and Deputy Finner helped Deputy Finnegan and his partner carry this prisoner to the elevator. His head was partly shaved and you could see many stitches, and his hair had blood on it, and his clothes were saturated in blood. That's it."

Jinkx: "Was this kept hush-hush around the department?"

Sam Retton: "If you didn't hear about what happened, you were not concerned or you approved of it. It was common talk. Everybody knew about it."

Jinkx: "I'm going to show you this medical report, and see if you recognize the name."

Sam Retton: "That's the prisoner Deputy Paul Finnegan hit with the flashlight."

Jinkx: "Take a look at this one and tell the court if you recognize the name."

Sam Retton: "The one Deputy Finnegan hit with the axe handle."



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Jinkx: "Mr. Retton, was there ever a situation when you were with the Sheriffs Department when you took a prisoner from a DPS officer and took the prisoner to the jail area to be booked in?"

Attorney Isner: "Your Honor, I definitely object to this question as it has no relevance to this hearing."

Jinkx: "Your Honor, if I am allowed to continue I will show this court that Chief Deputy Donner committed perjury. And, I can show this court that when I asked Chief Donner if another prisoner had been brought into the jail, or book-in area, with a gun in his possession, and Chief Donner said, while under oath, that he was not aware of it ever happening. I can show this court that it did happen, and Mr. Retton can tell this court that it did happen, and that Chief Donner was aware of it. ....I am laying a foundation to a line of questioning concerning this."

Judge Stamp: "Can you show this court by documentation that this actually occurred?"

Jinkx: "I can show this court by documentation and direct evidence and testimony that it happened, if I am allowed to continue."

Judge Stamp: "Continue. Objection overruled."

Jinkx: "Mr. Retton, would you take a look at this Prisoner's Jail Record and tell the court if you recognize the prisoner's name?" Jinkx handed the Judge and Attorney Isner a copy.

Sam Retton: "The prisoner's name is Danny Guy Alonzo. The date of arrest was March 17, almost two years ago. The arresting officer is listed as Sam Retton. The place arrested is Whitley Street, which was the Sheriffs Department, the courthouse. The reason the address is Whitley Street is because I took this prisoner from a DPS officer. After he had arrested Mr. Alonzo he was called to investigate a major accident. He asked me if I would take the prisoner and book him. I took the prisoner to the jail area, and he was booked by Lonnie Retton, a civilian jailer. The offense was public intoxication. The offense as shown on the jail record is PI, and a charge of UCW, unlawful carrying a weapon, was added by Lonnie Retton, because when he searched the prisoner just before he put him in a cell, he found a 38 caliber revolver in his shoe, as so stated on the second sheet, the offense report. A witness to this incident was the jail Sgt., whose name is listed also. Page number three and four is the charges that were filed against Mr. Alonzo by the District Attorney's office and



the affidavit of the Affiant, Ralph Henry. Anyway, I had gone back downstairs and was notified that Chief Deputy Donner wanted to see me. I went to his office and he lectured me about not searching my prisoner properly and allowing the prisoner to enter the jail, or book-in area, with a gun in his possession. I told him that I took a DPS officer's prisoner and that I thought he had searched the prisoner. He advised me that I had made a mistake, a big mistake, in not searching the prisoner again, when I had him in my custody."

Jinkx: "Did you receive a reprimand of any kind because of this incident?"

Sam Retton: "No, I did not."

Jinkx: "Did Chief Deputy Donner send you to the Sheriff because of this incident?"

Sam Retton: "No, that was the end of it."

Jinkx: "Was Daniel Hummer in supervision at that time, and if so, did he know what had happened?"

Sam Retton: "Yes, he was. He joked with me about it, and didn't threaten me with any reprimand, or anything."

Jinkx: "No further questions. Pass the witness."

Attorney Isner: "Mr. Retton, are you testifying today because of spite?"

Sam Retton: "I'm testifying because of justice, sir."

Attorney Isner: "No further questions."

Judge Stamp: "I have heard the testimony and saw the evidence. I'll render a decision shortly. Court adjourned."

Attorney Faber was in the back of the courtroom when Jinkx started towards the door. He grabbed Jinkx's hand and shook it. "I'm going to tell you right now. I think you missed your calling. You need to go to law school. I am overwhelmed at the way you presented this appeal. I've been back here quite a while, just listening. The judge will find in your favor, I know it. You framed the exhibits, questions and law perfectly. Great job."

"Thank you, Mr. Faber. How long do you think it will take for him to reach a decision?"

"Oh, two or three days. He will have the court reporter transcribe the testimony and read it several times and refer to policies, procedures and



He shook hands with Sam. "I appreciate your being here. You shook them up pretty good. The truth hurts sometime. I hope Waverly and Donner feels the pain forever. The one who started all this shit, Daniel Hummer, bailed out at the right time. I would have loved to get his half Mexican ass on that stand and hear his immature explanation. Pissy assed 26 year olds usually don't make adult decisions. Even older persons, Waverly and Donner's ages, sometimes are not too swift either. Will you agree?"

Sam laughed. "You are still a mess, Jinkx. Finner. I really have to go." Sam left laughing.

Jinkx and Marissa met Kerrie as she entered the courthouse and they were leaving. "Kerrie, what's going on?"

"I was hoping to set in on your hearing. Did I miss anything?"

"It's over. I do think I got all my points across. The judge was very accommodating, and Attorney Faber thinks he might rule in my favor. How about that?"

"That's wonderful. I knew you could do it. How did the Sheriff take it?"

"I wish you could have seen his face," remarked Marissa.

"Before I forget, Jinkx, there will be another article in the paper about Waverly's DWI tomorrow, so don't miss it. He is tough to get in touch with, as he can't be reached at the Sheriffs Department or his house. Every reporter in East Texas and portions of Louisiana are trying to locate him."

"He just left here, him and Chief Donner. He took the elevator up, so he must be at the Sheriffs Department. Have you tried there?"

"No. I've only called there. I might catch him if I go up there now. I think I'll give it a try. By the way, ....I'm meeting with that Severnson person tomorrow and he says he has some more information about drug officers, and their antics with female informants. If I get the chance, and valid information, I will write the article about what is being swept under the rug by the DEA and other police agencies. We at the paper have decided to give polygraph tests to those that will cooperate. If they pass



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

the test we will do a continuing expose until we have covered everything that is told to us. If it proves to be true, that is."

"If you find out anything give me a call, Kerrie. I believe you had said that you were going to meet with relatives of the victims?"

"Sometime this week. They are supposed to call me. Well, I'm off to see the Sheriff. The wonderful Sheriff of Oz."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx stacked his paperwork on the table and looked at Marissa. "I'm lost, kiddo. Lost. I don't know what to do." At this time the phone rang. Jinkx answered.

"This is Ramey. Did you hear about Detective Waskom being fired at Klimore?"

"Yes, I did. Did you give him those bloody coveralls?"

"Yes, I did. He told me later that he gave them to Ranger Gene Ellis. Another thing that happened is that I found some shells that had been fired at the trailer where I found the coveralls. I was at Timmy Aikens today and Chief Hadley and Donny Prince came out there, as they heard that I had found the shells. They asked me for them, so I gave the shells to them. Do you think I should have gave them to someone else?"

"I'll tell you, Ramey. I don't know who is good and who is bad any more. Knowing Hadley, he probably will hold on to them and not turn them in for a ballistics check. It's rumored that there is quite a cover up that has originated at the Klimore PD. Make a note of what you gave to him, or them, and describe what you found and where you found it. That's all I can recommend. I have enough problems trying to get my job back at the Sheriffs Department. I finished my appeal today, and now I play the waiting game. If I am re-hired I'll try to trace some of this evidence down. I don't know what to say other than that. Have you heard anything else about the murders?"

"Not really. You know how rumors spread when something happens like this. I'll let you go. Call me if you hear anything."

"I sure will, Ramey. By the way. I was reading about something that Walt Yanskia wrote, and I think Weldon gave you a copy of it. He said that Weldon and Ramey came to Jimmy Major's house and told him, or



warned him, that there was going to be a drug bust at this house on a particular day. Did you warn him?"

"Weldon warned him. It really wasn't a warning. The only thing that was said was that Chick Colley and Ranger Ellis was sitting out in the open, in plain view, and they might, just might, be coming to Major's house. They weren't hid. You know, like Lyle Farmer and Gene Perry did before they raided Weldon and the others. They set out in the open. It would hardly be called an undercover operation."

"That's about what I thought. I just wanted to make sure that you did not get involved in anything. Better be careful."

Tuesday was a day of more of doing nothing. Jinkx and Marissa slept late and finally got to the Whistle Stop about 10:30AM. "I've got to have coffee," Jinkx told the waitress. "First comes the coffee, and later we'll order breakfast." Jinkx unfolded the paper and read about the Sheriff's DWI stop.

**UPSHAW: LPD TO PURSUE  
DWI CHARGE ON  
SHERIFF WAVERLY**

**By Jeb Grantham  
Staff Writer**

The Linview Police Chief, Jimmy Upshaw, said Monday that his department is pursuing a driving while intoxicated charge against Sheriff Billy Waverly, and he apologized because his officers did not arrest Waverly after stopping him Friday night.

Upshaw said he presented copies of his officer's reports to District Attorney Danny Bonham. DA Bonham said he wants more information before making a decision on whether to file charges against Waverly.

"I would hope in a matter of days we will be able to obtain all the additional information we need," Bonham said.

Waverly could not be reached for comment. He was in his office only briefly Monday, and did not/would not return telephone calls from the Linview Newspaper or leave a message where he could be reached for response to Upshaw's comments.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Upshaw held a press conference to explain what happened Friday night, and to announce that he has ordered an internal departmental review to determine why his officers did not arrest Waverly.

"If a person is driving while intoxicated and is stopped by one of our officers, he should expect to be arrested. I expect our officers to enforce the law, no matter who is detained as a suspect. That includes me, my command staff and any member/officer of this police department or community," Upshaw said.

"On behalf of our entire department, I, we, apologize to the public for conveying the possible appearance of a double standard involving the arrest of public figures or that such individuals may be above the law," Upshaw said.

Upshaw said he reviewed the incident and "there appears to be probable cause to stop and arrest Sheriff Waverly for the investigation of driving while intoxicated."

But he was not arrested, and "I have now authorized a full internal review of the events, policies and individuals involved in this incident, including myself. Until that review is completed in about thirty days, I am limited on being able to comment on some details of the case," Upshaw said.

Friday, he said an officer observed a red pickup truck run the red light at Mansfield Avenue and Spur 6, and the officer pulled the vehicle over.

"They had just stopped him and were in the process of talking to him. One of the officers went back to the squad car, and as he did the sheriff drove away," Upshaw said.

Upshaw said he believes Waverly was aware that the officer had not completed the traffic stop when the sheriff drove away. Waverly drove to his residence a-bout half a mile away in Twin Lock Villas, he said.

At the residence, Waverly refused to take a breath test to determine how much alcohol he had consumed, Upshaw said.

Upshaw said he was contacted while officers were at Waverly's home because of his policy that he immediately be notified of any investigation concerning a public official. Upshaw said that he told the officers at the scene "if he is intoxicated, he should be arrested."



The officers "understood what I told them, and that is one of the things we will have to look at when we do our internal investigation," Upshaw said.

Asked whether Waverly was belligerent toward the police officers. Upshaw said, "Yeah, that is probably a good description. I would prefer not to go into that at this point. I think that is part of the case that we filed with the district attorney's office."

Upshaw said after Waverly was stopped at the residence, he was released to a captain from the sheriff's office.

He said Waverly is now being investigated on charges of driving while intoxicated, and evading arrest. Both are Class B misdemeanors, punishable by up to 180 days in jail and a fine of up to \$2,000.00.

And, in addition, conviction on a DWI charge requires mandatory confinement in jail for a minimum of 72 hours, he said.

If an arrest is not made at the time the offense is occurring, a warrant is issued for the person's arrest. If Waverly should be charged, Upshaw said, "Then I am sure a warrant will be issued for his arrest, we will contact him and he will come in and make bond."

The police chief said he is not sure how this would affect Waverly's position because he is an elected official.

"If a police officer in this department was ever convicted of a Class B misdemeanor, he would be terminated," Upshaw said.

Linview attorney Olin Hall attended Upshaw's press conference, but declined to comment on whether he has been retained as Waverly's attorney.

Bonham said he talked on the telephone with Waverly Monday, but "I am not going to go into what we talked about. We talked of nothing judicially, just personal."

Bonham also said that to his knowledge, Waverly had not been arrested for driving while intoxicated.

Waverly has had accidents while driving county-owned cars, and after an accident several years ago, the commissioner's court took away a county owned car assigned to him.

The county auditor has said Waverly now drives his own personal vehicle, which is not listed as one of the vehicles covered by the county's insurance policy.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Waverly's first reported accident while driving a county vehicle occurred a few months after Waverly was sworn into office.

He was injured so severely that he was hospitalized for a week. He said at the time that his car ran off the road during early morning hours when he started chasing a vehicle which he considered suspicious because of the hour he saw it leave an oil lease traveling down Texas 4.

A few years later, Waverly was issued a citation after he was involved in a collision with another vehicle at 3:06AM. Officers at the time said a woman was stopped at a red light and he (Waverly) struck her vehicle from the rear.

Waverly told the officers then that he had been distracted because he was observing another vehicle being operated without headlights turned on. He also stated that he had had a meeting with an informant and that was the reason that he was out so late.

Another of his accidents occurred in the early morning hours on Spur 5 when he said he hit a piece of iron in the roadway and did thousands of dollars worth of damage to the undercarriage of a car he was driving. Witnesses stated that he ran off the high curb while leaving a lounge in the shopping center.

"I don't foresee anything except a no contest plea, a very small fine, if any, a few hours of community service, and ordered by the court, one of his judge friends, to seek some kind of treatment for alcoholism. He will apologize to the public and tell how straight of an arrow he is going to be. I've always said that if you can't dazzle them with brilliance, you confuse them with bull shit. Waverly is a professional at this," stated Jinkx.

"Are you ready to order breakfast, Jinkx?" asked Marissa.

"This kind of spoils my appetite, but I'll have just toast and coffee."

"I'll have the same."

"Say, here's something on the Kinney Fine Chicken murders. ....I almost overlooked it."



**INVESTIGATORS FIND CLUES  
FEW, MONTHS AFTER MURDERS**

**By Jock Landry  
Staff Writer**

Klimore- At a press conference here Saturday to mark a half year of the worst crime in Klimore history, Klimore Police Chief Dirk Hadley implied investigators are not much closer to solving the case than they were six months ago.

During Monday's press conference Chief Hadley said robbery still appeared to be the motive behind the slayings since approximately \$2,000.00 was found taken from the restaurant.

When asked if it was plausible that five people were shot to death for \$2,000.00. Hadley said. "I don't particularly feel that was the entire motive."

Hadley said investigators lack the evidence needed for an indictment. "That's the key word in the whole thing—evidence," he said. "Evidence that would gain a grand jury indictment."

He also said there is not enough evidence to convict anyone on robbery or abduction charges.

The family of one of the victims was not satisfied with Hadley's answers. Drew Masters, Dale's father, and Leona Masters, Dale's wife, attended the press conference, asked Hadley questions and spoke with reporters afterward.

No other victims' families attended the conference which apparently was called after several reporters contacted Klimore police this week.

Many reporters from about seven area newspapers and television stations attended.

Masters said he has been frustrated by the lack of communication between investigators and the victims' families.

"As an example," he said. "I'm still waiting for someone to officially notify me my son is dead."

Mrs. Masters said. "We didn't hear about the murders from the police. We heard it on the radio."



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Masters has charged that police have been conducting a cover-up of the investigation, a charge Hadley emphatically denied.

"There's nothing to indicate or support that," Hadley said. "There is no cover-up. There never has been and never will be a cover-up."

Hadley said that a crime of this magnitude in which evidence is sparse is normally difficult to solve. "If you don't break the case in the first two weeks, it could take much longer," he said.

"Everything is still working as planned. The investigators are continually working with it. They will continue to work with it."

At one point, 50-60 officers from Klimore, Rashe County, Grabe County and five Texas Rangers were still investigating the case.

.....Now, Hadley said, he has only one investigator, Lt. Donny Prince, assigned to the case full time, along with officers from Rashe County.

An investigator for the Rashe County District Attorney's office said this week, "not a day goes by that you don't think about it. Whether or not you do anything on it, you still think about it."

He said it is "Terribly hard to say" how far the investigation has progressed. ...."You still get calls, and you get leads and you get information. You don't know which call is going to be the one that gets things going."

Rashe County Sheriff Mel Strange said he is still confident the case will be solved. "I am not discouraged in the case at all," he said.

"A case of this nature kind of gets to you," he said. "But you can't let it. You've got to keep plugging."

Strange said he has pushed his officers to the limit on the case. "It's had a very hard effect," he said. "Not only for me, but for the other officers in the department. I know that I have pushed some of my officers too hard on this."

But, he said, he will not push his officers to hurry the case and perhaps overlook some piece of evidence. "You've got to be right before you take that first step," he said.

Hadley added his optimism on Saturday. "I feel someone out there has the information we need."



"This Hadley still thinks that someone will actually confess to these five murders. I never heard of such crap in my life. That's his out. No confession, no solving of the crimes," remarked Jinkx.

"I can imagine the heartbreak that all the victims' relatives are going through," remarked Marissa. "Can you imagine hearing that your son, husband, mother, brother or any close relative is killed in such an atrocious manner such as was done at the Kinney Fine Chicken place?"

"Yeah, and when you try to find out something from the police they come up with, 'Duh, uh duh. I don't know anything about it. Are you sure it happened?'" Jinkx shook his head. "I thought that the Attorney General would have stepped in, as I think they are the last resort."

## CHAPTER 11

Three days had passed since the hearing on Jinkx's appeal. Jinkx and Marissa were at the Whistle Stop waiting for their breakfast. Jinkx had already gulped down three cups of coffee. "This waiting is driving me crazy."

"Short drive," remarked Marissa.

Jinkx looked at her and grinned. "Thanks. I needed that."

"Did you read this article in the paper about Sheriff Waverly?" she asked.

"I must have overlooked it. Too much caffeine cranks me up. I've really been drinking too much coffee lately and I do get cranky, don't I?"

"Honestly, yes, you do. You need to read this article, but if you do, you're going to get hyper. Want me to read it to you?"

"Maybe you better."

"OK, here goes. 'LPD won't ask for suspension of Waverly's driver's license.—Linview police are unable to seek the suspension of the Grabe County sheriff's driver's license because officers mishandled procedures after they had stopped him on suspicion of driving while intoxicated, officials said.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Sheriff Waverly refused to take a breath test after he was stopped Friday night.

According to Texas law, a person who refuses to take a breath test faces the automatic suspension of his driver's license for up to 90 days. The punishment is more severe than that of the 60 days given if a person fails the test.

Linview Assistant Police Chief said the department will not ask the Department of Public Safety to suspend Waverly's license.

'We can't,' he said. 'There was no arrest made, therefore we cannot file for a revocation. I echo what (Police Chief Jimmy Upshaw) said: We made a mistake.'

An Austin DPS spokeswoman said an arrest is not mandatory for an Administrative Revocation to be sought.

'In theory, a law enforcement officer could go back later and then proceed with a routine ALR case,' she said after consulting with DPS attorney's.

She said if procedures are followed properly leading up to and including when an officer requests a breath test to be taken, then that officer can later file for an ALR.

Linview police officials have reviewed their options and agree they could not seek suspension of Waverly's license.

The Linview police spokeswoman said the department mishandled the situation.

The Administrative License Revocation operates separately from the court system, where the Linview Police is pursuing the charges of driving while intoxicated and evading arrest against Waverly.

District Attorney Danny Bonham is reviewing reports provided by the police department to determine whether or not charges should be filed against Waverly.

Bonham said Wednesday he had not reached a decision.

Waverly, who has not responded publicly concerning Friday's incident, could not be reached for comment.' That's a pretty good article, don't you think?"

"It's a good article, but about par for Grabe County. You know, one of the first things you learn at the Police Academy, and I'm talking about the handling of a suspected intoxicated person, is that you make an arrest



immediately after you suspect that he, or she, is intoxicated. You don't dance with them, you arrest them. Another important factor is that if the suspected person, intoxicated person does leave the scene while an officer/violator interview is being conducted, 999 times out of 1000, that person is intoxicated and/or has something to hide. If any other person would have left that Linview police officer standing there scratching his head, and after they had caught up to that person, they would have thundered on his head, strummed his head in police talk, handcuffed him and took him to jail. I don't remember ever being told to call your administrator and ask what procedure is used to handle a drunk. This is about the humpteenth time Waverly has been stopped, or caught drunk. Not intoxicated, but d-r-u-n-k, by law enforcement. They have told him that they cannot continue to look the other way."

The waitress tapped Jinkx on the shoulder. "Are you Jinkx Finner?"

"Yes, I am."

"You have a phone call up front by the register."

"Thank you." He walked to the phone.

"Hello."

"Jinkx, Ron Faber. You need to come to my office. I have received a decision from Judge Stamp,"

"Are you going to tell me what it contains now, or wait until I get there? You don't sound too happy. Am I still without a job?"

"I am a little concerned. The reason is that you presented one case, an appeal, and won it, and I had to try five cases before I won my first one." There was silence. "Are you still with me, Jinkx?"

"Are you kidding me? I,--I mean we, actually won my case, the appeal?"

"We sure did. Come on over to my office and we'll celebrate with a coke. Congratulations. You earned it. Now, get over here. "

"I'm on my way."

Jinkx was all smiles as he approached Marissa. He was out of breathe as he tried to tell her the news. "I won the case. You mean that I actually won the case, my appeal?"

"Oh, my God," screamed Marissa and got the attention of those around them. "I knew you would. I told you that you would win."



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

"That was Faber. He said to come to his office." Jinkx got up and grabbed the check. "Let's get out of here."

When the secretary showed Jinkx and Marissa into Attorney Faber's office, Faber was all smiles. "This letter was hand delivered to me by Commissioner Graham. I will get our copy in the mail. There is the coke. Open three."

"What does the letter say? That's what I'm really interested in."

"Straight from the Commissioners Court." Faber handed him the letter.

Jinkx opened the envelope with kid gloves. He looked at Faber and Marissa as he gently took the letter from the envelope. He slowly read the letter containing the decision.

**COUNTY COURT AT LAW.  
GRABE COUNTY  
LINVIEW, TEXAS**

**LONNIE STAMP  
JUDGE**

**TO: GRABE COUNTY COMMISSIONERS COURT**

**Honorable Manny Slocum, Presiding  
RE: Recommendations of Examiner regarding  
employee appeal/grievance of Jinkx Finner.**

**Gentlemen:**

A hearing was conducted, as prescribed by the Grabe County Personnel Policy, and such sworn testimony was received and certain documents admitted. I have requested Court Reporter Lora Victory to furnish the Grabe County Commissioners Court with a transcription of her verbatim stenotype notes of the hearing and document copies, with a copy to Sheriff Billy Shane Waverly and the attorney for the employee, Ron Faber. I must recommend to you that the employment separation pertaining to the employee not be upheld because (1) proper separation procedures (including written notice, opportunity to reply or be heard,



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

305

etcetera) were not followed, and (2) as to employee Jinkx Finner, good cause for the adverse action was not demonstrated in the evidence.

### NOTICE

In brief, the Grabe County Personnel Policy requires that a regular employee be given at least ten full (excluding Saturday, Sunday and legal holidays) advanced written notice of proposed action. This procedure was not followed by Sheriff Waverly. The notice must state the reasons supporting the proposed action specifically and in detail, including names, times and places. (Used as reference is Article 6870, Vernon's Texas Civil Statutes.—Sheriff's shall be responsible for the official acts of their deputies, and so forth;) Deputy Daniel Hummer, in the capacity of Patrol Captain, Deputy Jamie Boy Donner, in the capacity of Chief Deputy, and Billy Shane Waverly, who, in the capacity of Sheriff (Administrator), failed to follow this procedure. The notice should be self-contained so that a person unacquainted with the facts and circumstances involved can obtain from the notice a clear understanding of the reasons for the proposed actions. The notice must make it clear that it concerns only a proposed action and not a matter already decided. The notice must tell the employee that he has a right to reply both personally and in writing and submit affidavits in support of his answer. Sheriff Billy Waverly and the aforementioned deputies failed in this procedure. The notice must advise the employee that his reply will be considered and assure him that he will be informed of the department's final decision in the matter. Sheriff Waverly did inform the employee, Jinkx Finner, of a decision that was obviously arrived at prior to any notice. The employee must be retained in an active status during the notice period. This truly was a violation of Personnel Policy procedure as the employee, Jinkx Finner, was not afforded this procedure. The employee must be given a written notice of decision. The notice of decision must clearly identify the reasons relied on in taking the adverse action. The notice of decision should include information of the employee's right to appeal to the Commissioners Court. This procedure was followed, and that was the reason for the hearing .

### CHOOSING AMONG DISCIPLINARY ACTIONS

GENERAL—There are many situations which may call for disciplinary action and a wide variety of disciplinary actions are



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

available, ranging from a warning or reprimand to suspension, reduction in rank or pay, or removal from the service. There is no substitute for judgement in selecting among them. In selecting an appropriate disciplinary action the department should not make the mistake of demanding the employee resign or retire to keep from being removed. The reason is that a resignation or optional retirement obtained by such means may result in litigation. (Again used as a reference, Article 6870, Vernon's Texas Civil Statutes.

• Sheriff's shall be responsible for the official acts of their deputies, and so forth;) Testimony to the effect that Jamie Boy Donner, acting in the capacity of Chief Deputy, is definitely believable, and it is therefore incorporated into my decision that Chief Deputy Donner did in fact demand the resignation of employee, Jinkx Finner, in order for the employee to receive a somewhat favorable recommendation on his next employment.

**REASONABLENESS**—Any adverse action demands the exercise of responsible judgement so that an employee will not be penalized out of proportion to the character of the offense; this is particularly true of an employee who has a previous record of completely satisfactory service. An adverse action, such as suspension, should be ordered only after a responsible determination that a less severe penalty, such as admonition or reprimand, is inadequate. This procedure was not followed by Sheriff Waverly.

**LIKE PENALTIES FOR LIKE OFFENSES**—(1) In taking disciplinary action, like penalties should be imposed for like offenses. Departments should be as consistent as possible when deciding on disciplinary actions. Adherence to this principle will help to insure equitable and uniform treatment to employees against proposed adverse action.

....As demonstrated by evidence produced by documentation and witness testimony, this procedure was not followed.

### GOOD CAUSE

The Grabe County Personnel Policy requires a showing of good cause for the termination of a regular employee (i.e., an employee who has



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

307

completed the six months probationary period during which he could have been discharged without notice or cause.)

In the case of Jinkx Finner, it is apparent that the matter of "good cause" was not even considered. At a time when then Deputy Finner was confronted by a very well proven case that his prisoner was highly intoxicated, and then Deputy Finner struck the prisoner to pacify him, evidence presented showed that then Deputy Finner was well within his rights to take action against a challenging, intoxicated person. It is apparent that Sheriff Waverly, and others, were resigned to the fact that then Deputy Finner should be terminated as they accused him of brutality toward a prisoner that was in his custody. If then Deputy Finner had indeed used police brutality toward a prisoner, it was the duty of Sheriff Waverly to take the charges before a Grand Jury to seek an indictment. Sheriff Waverly used bad judgement in the handling of this situation. His action was contrary to the adopted Grabe County Personnel Policy and could not be upheld.

Although the case of Jinkx Finner is less clear cut, it is apparent that he was promptly confronted with "termination", but not within the guidelines as set forth in the Grabe County Personnel Policy. It is my considered opinion that the record of evidence does not demonstrate that the termination of Jinkx Finner was founded on good cause. There was no personality differences or difficulty in cooperating with other employees in the same department. ....I cannot recommend that Jinkx Finner's termination be upheld.

**CONCLUSION**

Having recommended that the adverse action of Sheriff Waverly not be upheld, I must also recommend that the following provision (Chapter XIV, Sub-Chapter III, 3.C. (2) be given effect: "If the demoted, suspended or removed employee should be restored to his position by order of the Commissioners, he shall receive full compensation at the rate of pay that was provided his position at the time of his suspension."

Sincerely  
Lonnie Stamp



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Jinkx grinned. "What's next? Do we wait for the Commissioners Court to make a decision on the Judge's recommendation?"

"Commissioner Graham has assured me that at the Commissioners Court meeting next Monday, that you will be re-instated as a deputy. You see, the Commissioners Court just finished a court battle because of a similar situation in the County Clerk's office. They tried to fight it in court and lost and paid out some money. Your case is much stronger, so they don't want another court battle. However, we still have to wait for their official decision."

"Are you going to attend the meeting?"

"We will both attend the meeting, as I have to advise them that there shall be no retaliation against you because you stood up for your rights and followed appeal procedure."

As Jinkx and Marissa started to toast his victory in his appeal at her apartment later on in the day, they were interrupted by a ringing telephone. Marissa answered the phone. "Hello."

"Marissa, Kerrie. There is a rumor floating around the courthouse that Jinkx is going to be re-instated at the Sheriff Department. Is it true?"

"Yes, it is. Do you want to talk to him?"

"I would, and I have some news about the Kinney Fine Chicken murders."

"Let me put on the speakerphone. I want to hear this too . "

"Go ahead, Kerrie," said Jinkx.

"First, they're saying at the courthouse that you won your appeal. Is that true?"

"I sure did. However, as we discussed before, I don't want anything about it in the paper. Do we still have that agreement?"

"I'll make sure that there is nothing about it in the paper. Congratulations. I told Marissa that there is some good news about the Klimore murders, and Dirk Hadley is out as the Chief of Police of Klimore. I heard that the city council has been trying to get rid of him for months, but nobody wanted him. He has finally landed a chief's job somewhere, and I'll have to check on where he has gone. But, anyway, a new guy, Ramey Mann, is the Director of Public Safety and over the fire department and police department. The state attorney general's office is



studying the investigator's files and evidence in the murders, evaluating whether to present the case to the grand jury. Mann said investigators have talked to the attorney general's office on several occasions, and the departments involved had forwarded all files to the attorney general's office. ....Detective Prince, who is now with the Rashe County Sheriffs Department, and who was the lead investigator, met with state officials. Mann said that the representatives would need time to familiarize themselves with the contents of voluminous files. There is a new DA in Rashe county, now. I think Foley is his name. This case was discussed with the former DA, Wiley Farmer, some time ago, and he declined to present the case to the grand Jury because he said the evidence was not strong enough to win the case in court. I talked with Mrs. Masters, whose husband was murdered with four more, and she hopes the involvement of the attorney general's office in the case will finally result in indictments and arrests. That's about it."

"That's good news. Maybe something will happen now since they got rid of Hadley."

"Before I forget. I think Severnson is going to court pretty soon. They are trying to expedite matters, all matters, because it is rumored some of the informant/witnesses are giving it second thoughts on testifying. I'm trying to get a couple of the girls into the newspaper office on this polygraph thing. We'll just have to wait and see what happens."

"Well, thanks for calling. Keep in touch, OK?"

Jinkx drove Marissa to work and then drove to Klimore in hopes of seeing someone at the police department that he could find out more about the attorney general's office heading the investigation on the Klimore murders.

Sgt. Monroe was standing in the dispatcher's office when Jinkx entered the front door. He walked up to the glass separating the dispatcher from the front. "Hello, Sgt.. You busy?"

The Sgt. motioned to Jinkx. "Come on back here."

Jinkx joined the Sgt. in the coffee room. "I hear you have a new leader."

"It was easy to replace Hadley. He could have been replaced by a popsicle stick. He didn't last long. The public was after his ass because of his handling of the Kinney Fine Chicken murders and wrote many letter



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

to the city council wanting to get rid of him. He finally landed a job somewhere as a chief. Maybe Mayberry, I don't know."

"Mayberry?" Then it hit Jinkx. ...."Oh, Mayberry. Goober, Gomer, Floyd and the rest. That sounds about right. He'll fit right in."

"Waskom is gone, and so is Prince. Prince went back to the Rashe County Sheriffs Department. Benfelder is real sick and not expected to live. Cancer, I believe. He hasn't been to work in a few weeks."

"Benfelder? Damn, that's too bad. Sorry to hear about that. Between me and you, I won my appeal from being terminated by Waverly. I hope to be reinstated next week after the meeting by the Commissioners Court."

"You know, I heard rumors of what happened, but never really understood why he fired you. What happened?"

Jinkx explained what had happened on that Christmas day, and what he had produced as evidence in his appeal. "They play favorites at that police agency called the Grabe County Sheriffs Department. I expect a bad time when I go back. I've also been thinking about law school. Maybe a change of vocation would do me good. I really like police work, but I don't like the bull shit you have to put up with because of an adolescent administrator, especially one who is an alcoholic and whore monger, and doesn't try to hide it. That's the clincher. There is more going on in Grabe County than meets the eye. I have seen a lot of strange faces in this area lately. There is some heavy shit going on that should be brought to the attention of the FBI or some investigating agency that has not been sewed up by Grabe County politics and favoritism. Remember what happened in the past? Could it happen again?"

"You sound like you know something that I don't" remarked the Sgt.

"You just have to be observant, Sgt. Monroe. You are a home boy. Whatever happens seems natural to you. I'm an outsider. I see and remember things that are not of the ordinary. You see, you have this little group that meets at a Chinese food place in Linview. 'The Fortune Cookie Boys', there're called." Jinkx looks around. "Now, this is between me and you. They have political figures under their thumb, and they are controlled. They run the show, but I don't know what show. As Grabe County Sheriff's deputies, we are told to stay out of certain places. You know, like don't do walkthroughs in the Red Pen Inn, certain places on



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

311

Lake Chickaree, stay out of certain areas in North Linview and certain places in North Klimore, North of Interstate. Little things that mean nothing to some, but make those like me, very curious and nosey."

"I've heard something about what you're talking about. As you said, us 'home boys' don't pay that much attention."

"So, there is nothing new on the murders, huh?"

"You know as much as I do. Do you think you'll be back on the street next week?"

"It all depends on what the Commissioners Court decides. My attorney says that he don't foresee any problem. Well, I'm going to head back to Linview. I'll see you later, maybe in uniform."

Jinkx drove to Ramey Broom's farm instead of going directly to Linview. Ramey answered the door. "Come on in Jinkx. How is your hearing coming along?"

"I received notice that the Judge ruled in my favor, but I have to wait on the decision of the Commissioners Court, and they meet next Monday. The Judge recommended that I be re-hired."

"Good, congratulations. By the way, I don't know what happened to the bloody coveralls I gave to Waskom. I had heard that he gave them to Texas Ranger Ellis. I have not read or heard anything about it from the news media. And I guess you heard about the city council getting rid of Chief Hadley?"

"I heard about it. Do you know the new director of public safety, Ramey Mann?"

"I don't know him. In fact, I've never heard of him. Anyone would be better than Hadley. I was with someone the other night, and I won't mention any names, but this guy, Bob Mintor, a dooper, told a very interesting story about John Mallory Sr. Let me run this by you. He mentioned something about a limousine service, and something about a car dealer from Dallas, or thereabouts, that made a trip to this area to meet with John Mallory Sr. I think he said that they met at first at the roadside park on Interstate between here and Tyler, but they eventually decided to go to the Hot Biscuit. The story is that this car dealer, and I believe his name was Daniel McDaniel, gave, or loaned, John Mallory Sr. thirty or forty thousand dollars to pay off some law enforcement in this area for



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

their slowing down, and/or impeding the investigation on the Kinney Fine Chicken murders. Have you heard anything about that? As you know, John Mallory Jr. is a prime suspect in the murders.”

“The name Bob Mintor rings a bell. I read a statement a few days ago about drug trafficking in this area when they bagged Wake Samuels and Sammy Hayes a while back. Bob Mintor was a dealer and cook for this gang. Also, the FBI was involved in busting the lab that was in Rashe County. The rumor was that the sheriff, Mel Strange, had made numerous phone calls to Samuels and Hayes, and he was suspected of being involved in this drug ring. Isn't it amazing that the prime law enforcement agency involved in the Kinney Fine Chicken murders is the Rashe County Sheriffs Department in which Sheriff Strange is in charge of? Two plus two is still four, isn't it?”

“You got it! This is beginning to come together now. In a newspaper article a day or so ago when they had a press conference on the half year anniversary of the murders, some of the victims' relatives accused law officers of a cover-up. Hadley liked to have blown a fuse when they made this statement. I wonder if they knew how right they were to have claimed a cover-up?”

“I'm really concerned about the bloody coveralls and also the expended rounds that you turned over to Chief Hadley and Detective Prince. I've never heard mention of that evidence.”

“I'll change the subject. You know, I told you about the tiger I took from Tiger Lady Yanskia. Well, the damn thing got loose and wandered into the house and we had to shoot it. It like to have torn up everything until we got a bullet in it. Know anyone who wants to buy a tiger pen and house?”

“I'm afraid not. Get another tiger.”

“Not on you life. There was a little dog that came up to the pen, and the pen started about half a foot from the ground. It was just low enough that the tiger couldn't squeeze under it. Well, the little puppy got too close and the tiger reached out with a paw and snatched the puppy into the cage. The only thing left of it was the tail and the roof of its mouth. The tiger almost ate the whole thing. No more tigers.”

“It's a sad story, but it had to be told, right? Any news on Weldon Severmson?”



“Yeah, there is. He is going to court next week, I think he said. A hurry up court trial. I think some of the informants are about to change the testimony they gave to the grand Jury.”

“I was talking to Kerrie Wintz of the Linview newspaper, and she is trying to get a couple of the girls to take a polygraph test, and if they pass it, the newspaper is going to have an article about what methods the DEA and other police agencies use to set up, or possibly entrap, some defendants. I don't think much of the polygraph tests, because if they were a proven method of determining whether a person was guilty or innocent, you definitely would not need a judge or jury, just a polygraph examiner. I read up on the polygraph and anyone who would submit to one is crazy. When I was a Private Investigator in California, I had a friend that was a polygraph examiner for the Los Angeles Police Department. He told me that a polygraph examiner, even himself, could make a polygraph sing any song he wanted. He can make the results favor one side or the other. Of course, you're going to find those that rely on testing as an income that would wholeheartedly disagree. Let me go to my car. I think I have some information on it.” Jinkx left and got some documents from his car. “Let me brief you on this polygraph stuff. This is case law. I ran into this when I was at the law library researching material for my appeal. This is case law, which is used today when someone tries to force a polygraph test on someone. This goes back to 1923.

Frye v. United States (James Alphonso Frye, Polygraph-Lie Detector) 293 (Ca 1923) 1013 54 U.S. App. D.C. 46 No. 3969.

1. Criminal Law-Key 472-Expert testimony, explaining the systolic blood pressure deception test, ruled inadmissible.

2. Criminal Law-Key 472-Principle must be generally accepted, to render expert testimony admissible.

Rule 401 Federal Rules of Criminal Procedure 5168 036. Purpose of Frye rule is to prevent Jury from relying on unproven and unsound methods. (People v. Gonzales (1982) 329 N.W. 2d 743 425 Mich. 615 also;



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Major reason for inadmissibility of polygraph evidence is that it fails to satisfy Frye test for scientific acceptance. (Barrell of Fun v. State Farm Fire and Cas. Co. 5<sup>th</sup> (1984) 739 F. 2d 1028, 1031. also; Fifth Circuit precedents unequivocally hold that all polygraph evidence is inadmissible; There is no exception for civil cases.

Polygraph-AM JUR 831 Volume #29

Physiological or psychological tests of truth or deception. The courts almost uniformly reject the results of lie detector tests when offered in evidence for the purpose of establishing the guilt or innocence of one accused of a crime, whether the accused or prosecution seeks its introduction, for the reason that the lie detector has not yet attained scientific acceptance as a reliable and accurate means of ascertaining truth or deception.

“Now, look at it like this. Say you give the OK, and take the test. You have a series of wires, tubes and electrical attachments attached to, and around, your body and limbs like umbilical cords, and these in turn were connected to a mysterious, box-type apparatus. You don't know the actual function, or performance, but you were informed, and believe, that the attachments consisted of several measuring devices for a pneumatically operated instrument which simultaneously recorded your blood pressure, pulse, respiration rate and depth, psychogalvanic skin reflex, which is resistance to electrical current, and also your muscular activity. You must realize that you're already in a nervous state of anxiety and physical emotion and you experience out of the ordinary body functions and rhythmic disturbances produced by the unexpected. What the hell do you think is going to happen to the needles if you actually answer truthfully, and the machine says 'lie,' 'deception?'”

“They would probably break off, and I would probably wet my pants, and other stuff, if I was telling the truth and the machine possibly said otherwise. I never really gave that much thought, but now I know not to submit to a lie detector test.”

“I've heard a lot of wild stories since I've been with the Sheriffs Department. I wonder if Waverly would take a lie detector test if I was to pay for it. I would like to know if some of the stories about him are true. As an example, I heard that when his wife kicked him out of the house



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

315

and filed for divorce, Waverly moved in with a reserve deputy, and I can't remember his name, but a little queer lookin' ass hole that worked for the chemical company in south Linview. Any way, the story is that Waverly's daughter came to visit one day and found the door open, so she came in and found them in an embarrassing situation."

"The Sheriff?" asked Ramey.

"That's the story. She presumably had a nervous breakdown and spent a few days in the hospital. Now, when I asked for some hospital records for my appeal, I also asked a records clerk to look up the Sheriff's daughter's medical record, and she was admitted about the time that this was supposed to have happened. I didn't get the reason for the admittance, but she did spend some time in the hospital. Also, I would ask a few questions about a woman named Gail Horn that was working with a preacher from the Jail ministries. She did a few things wrong working with the women in jail so they wouldn't let her go back up to the jail. Sheriff Waverly saw that she was a pretty good looking, so he said that he would let her go back up to the jail if she would make out with him. One more thing. I would like to question him about the time that Waverly, his good deputy Paul Finnegan and Larkmount City Marshal Richard Matlock took Matlock's boat to the lake and run into a stump. Waverly got the worst of the damage. He had to have several stitches in his head. This he couldn't hide. I don't know what he told those that asked about his injury, but I'll bet it wasn't the truth. If he told the truth it would be the first time. They were drunk on their asses, and when they loaded the wrecked boat on the trailer and took off, they forgot to tie the boat down and it sailed off the trailer. They had to stop and finally realized they had not tied it down. It is also rumored that Matlock, later on, took the boat and buried it at Tanner Bottom and collected the insurance by reporting it stolen. I wonder how Waverly would answer a few questions concerning these events? I would pay for it if he would take a lie detector test, even though I don't trust the results. Several questions about his accidents would hang his ass if he lied and the lie detector answers could be admitted in a trial. You know, when he tells the officers that investigate his accidents, lies about what happened, he is actually giving a false statement to the police, a criminal offense. This in turn does cause him to file a false insurance claim, a criminal offense. I bet those little needles,



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

or whatever you call them, would do the boogie woogie on the answers to some of his questions. Well, I'm going to head back towards Linview. If you hear anything important, give me a call."

"I'll do that, and maybe I'll see you next week in uniform. Come by, or call and let me know what the Commissioners Court decided."

\*\*\*\*\*

The Saturday paper carried another article about the big drug bust that involved Weldon Severnson.

### **AGENTS NETTING 'BIG FISH'**

#### **E Texas Cooperation Helps Investigation**

**By Kerri Wintz  
Staff Writer**

Federal drug agents are netting some 'big fish' in East Texas narcotic trafficking as the result of "task forces" that have sparked greater interagency cooperation among the federal and local law enforcement, prosecutors say.

A few weeks ago, for example, two participants in what law enforcement officers say was the largest methamphetamine network operating in East Texas will stand trial in federal court on various drug charges including conspiracy.

The Severnson organization, allegedly operating in Grabe County, is one of about a half-dozen such groups to be the subject of either indictments or convictions in the Eastern District of Texas in the past two years, prosecutors say.

....Weldon Severnson Sr. and his son Kiley Tom Severnson, are charged with a variety of drug distribution offenses, which includes conspiracy to distribute methamphetamine .

If convicted of all the charges against him, Weldon Severnson Sr. could be sentenced to as much as 95 years in prison and fined \$4.125 million, and Kiley Severnson could face 35 years and \$1.125 million in fines.

....Three of Severnson's sons, Weldon Severnson Jr., Mackey Severnson and Wylie Severnson have already pleaded guilty to



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

317

conspiracy and could testify at one or both of the trials. And Severnson's daughter-in-law, Leona G. Severnson, was also allowed to plead/confess to misdemeanor possession of methamphetamine. She was also a willing informant against the so-called conspirators, the family members and friends. She was allowed to plead to a lesser charge for her informing on the other defendants.

Others in the same alleged organization who will stand trial on similar charges are Homer Sims Sr., Bubba Mission, Douglas Wolen and Sammy Earnest.

In addition, Sim's son, Homer Sims Jr., and another man, Johnny Golan, have pleaded guilty to using a telephone in a drug transaction and may also participate in government's prosecutions.

Not all of the other recent drug trafficking cases in East Texas involve task forces like the one that investigated the Severnson case-a cooperative effort between the Drug Enforcement Administration, the Sims and Grabe County Sheriffs Departments and the Tyler, Linview and Klimore Police Departments.

This article was from the federal prosecutors that are set to prosecute the Severnson organization. In the near future, articles from the other side, the Severnsons. will appear in a series, in which methods used by the DEA and other police agencies to gain information for an indictment, will be exposed.

Another article concerning Sheriff Waverly's run in with the Linview police caught Jinkx's eye.

### **BONHAM STILL LOOKING INTO WAVERLY INCIDENT**

**By John Zimenas**  
**Staff Writer**

Grabe County District Attorney Danny Bonham said his office is still investigating whether to file charges against Sheriff Billy Waverly who was stopped by the Linview police on suspicion of driving while intoxicated.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Bonham would not discuss any details on the progress his office has made in the case and has said, "I'm going to take all the time that is necessary."

The Linview Police Department has referred all questions dealing with Waverly's investigation to Bonham.

Waverly could face charges of evading arrest and driving while intoxicated stemming from an incident during which Linview Police said he was stopped for running a red light and then drove away before being released. Waverly was stopped a second time by his home in Twin Lock Villas.

Bonham's office has been interviewing officers involved in the Waverly incident. His office has also asked for the tapes that recorded the conversations between dispatchers and officers on the scene.

He declined to say if a decision on whether to charge Waverly would be made next week or the week after that.

"I can't give you a timetable," he said.

\*\*\*\*\*

Monday morning was just another day for those at the courthouse, except Jinkx, who was there for the decision of the Commissioners Court. Attorney Ron Faber met Jinkx outside the courtroom, and he was smiling as he approached Jinkx and Marissa. "Ready for the big news, Jinkx?"

"I hope you were right when you said that Commissioner Graham assured you that I would be reinstated. I had a weekend of hardly any sleep worrying about this mess."

"I'm sure that everything will work out. Let's go inside."

Everyone was seated when County Judge Manny Slocum was the last one to enter the courtroom.

Jinkx leaned over to Faber. "Where is our illustrious Sheriff?"

"He'll be here. They have to take care of their regular business and then they will go into executive session, just like before, and give their decision."

Almost an hour had passed when they finished the agenda, and asked the public to clear the courtroom so they could go into executive session on an employee matter."

Sheriff Waverly came through the door and took a seat on the other side of the room.



"The Commissioners Court of Grabe County is now in Executive Session to discuss the recommendations of Judge Stamp of the County Court at Law, on his recommendations in the matter of an appeal of Jinkx Finner on Sheriff Waverly's termination. It was the opinion of the Examiner that the termination of Jinkx Finner not be upheld. Do I hear a motion that we abide by the decision of the Examiner and also agree that the termination of Jinkx Finner not be upheld?"

"I make the motion that the Commissioners Court concurs with the decision of the Examiner," said Commissioner Graham. "

"I second the motion," said Commissioner Jake Bonn.

"All in favor say aye," said Judge Slocum.

All commissioners answered "aye" at the same time.

"Those opposed?" asked Judge Slocum. No answer

"The motion is carried. Now, I guess we would come to part two of the Examiner's recommendation. This is in relation to Chapter III, 3.C (2), which reads: ...."If the demoted, suspended or removed employee should be restored to his position by order of the Commissioners, he shall receive full compensation at the rate of pay that was provided for his position at the time of his suspension." Do I hear a motion?"

"I make the motion," said Commissioner Graham.

"Second the motion," said another commissioner.

"All in favor," said Judge Slocum.

"Aye," said all the commissioners.

"Those opposed?" asked Judge Slocum. No answer.

"It has been agreed upon here today that Jinkx Finner will be reinstated as a Deputy Sheriff of Grabe County. Does anyone wish to comment on this?"

Attorney Faber stood up. "We are all pleased at the decision of the Examiner and Commissioners Court and I do want to stress one point in particular. It was obvious that certain individuals in an administrative and/or supervisory capacity was somewhat embarrassed and surprised at the evidence that was presented during the appeal process, and I can understand their feelings. However, Jinkx Finner has feelings also. I want an understanding that Jinkx Finner will not be discriminated against, or punished unnecessarily when he goes back to the Sheriffs Department. I want Jinkx Finner to understand that just because he won his job back,



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

that he shall abide by the Grabe County Sheriffs Department Manual and the Grabe County Personnel Policy Manual, and all Federal and State laws, and not take it upon himself to make issues out of something that has already been settled. It is a period of 'start over' not 'continue.' Thank you for your decision."

As everyone was leaving the courtroom. Jinkx walked over to the Sheriff. He held out his hand.

"When do you want me to report back to work, Sheriff?"

Sheriff Waverly would not shake his hand. "Wednesday, evening shift. Same shift. Get your equipment this after noon at 1:00PM." The sheriff hastily walked away.

The Sheriff's action was noticed by those that remained outside the courtroom.

Attorney Faber walked over to Jinkx. "Everyone knows how he is, so shake it off. Did he tell you when to come back to work?"

"I get my equipment today at 1:00PM, and then go back to work Wednesday on evening shift. I think I'm in for a bad time, don't you?"

"Honestly, yes. Keep a record of anything that doesn't seem right to you. You can always file a grievance. I have to go now."

"We haven't talked about money, yet. So, what do I owe you for your representing me?"

"I have your address at my office. I'll send you a bill." He walked away.

Jinkx and Marissa walked to the bottom floor to get a cup of coffee. The first one they saw was Captain Paul Finnegan. He waited to get on the elevator, as he had left the counter with a cup of coffee. He looked the other way.

...."I expect a really bad time from him. He got exposed for his brutality, and he will try to get even, I know it."

"Just do what Attorney Faber said to do," remarked Marissa. "If anything, let him take them back to the courtroom."

Jinkx and Marissa had sat down at a table and were talking when Attorney Faber got off the elevator and handed Jinkx a newspaper. "Looks like it has been a real bad day for the Sheriff." He kept on walking.



Jinkx unfolded the paper and he and Marissa started to read it.

**WAVERLY FACES MISDEMEANOR CHARGES**

**Grabe County Sheriff**

**Billy Waverly has been**

**Charged With:**

**•1 count driving while  
intoxicated**

**•1 count evading detention**

**•Each charge is punishable  
by up to 6 months in jail  
and a fine up to \$2000.**

Grabe County sheriff charged  
with DWI, evading detention.

**By Jeb Grantham**

**Staff Writer**

Several days after he was  
initially stopped by a Linview  
Police Officer for a traffic  
violation, Grabe County Sheriff  
Billy Waverly was charged with  
two misdemeanors.

Grabe District Attorney Danny Bonham filed misdemeanor charges  
accusing Waverly of driving while intoxicated and evading detention.  
....Each charge is punishable by up to six months in jail and a fine of up  
to \$2000.

The charges against Waverly prompted the state chairperson of  
Mothers Against Drunk Driving to suggest that the sheriff be ordered to  
undergo treatment for alcohol problems and the local leader of the  
NAACP to call for his resignation.

Rather than a warrant, a summons was issued directing Waverly to  
appear in court to answer the charges, Bonham said. He said that is  
routine procedure in misdemeanor cases in which officers did not arrest  
the defendant at the time of the offense.

Bonham said he had talked to Waverly and Waverly was aware that  
charges would be filed against him. (He) Waverly could not be reached  
for comment.

The district attorney said his comments to Waverly were personal.  
Bonham said he was just advising him this was going to transpire, and  
also expressing to him that it was nothing personal. It was hard for me to  
do because of our relationship, but sometimes these things have to be  
done because of our jobs.

"It was difficult for me because he is a good friend, a colleague and  
he is a good sheriff," Bonham said.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

"It is important to understand that the sheriff is entitled to the same presumption of innocence, like any other citizen who has been accused of unlawful conduct. And the state has the burden to prove his guilt beyond a reasonable doubt," Bonham said.

Kim Soloman, state chairperson of Mothers Against Drunk Driving, held a press conference in which she said Waverly has been a good sheriff, but he should be ordered to seek treatment. After treatment, "He could continue to be sheriff and do a good job."

She said her group will also hold a rally at 7:00PM Thursday on the front lawn of the Grabe County Courthouse so people can express their views on the subject of drunk drivers.

And the Reverend C.D. Damon, president of the Linview Branch of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People, called on Waverly to resign.

**(There doesn't have to be  
a dead body. There  
doesn't have to be a  
crashed car or injured  
person for drunk driving  
to be considered a violent crime.)**

-----

Kim Soloman

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx entered the Sheriffs Department at 1:00PM, and the first one he saw was Ashley. "Welcome back, Jinkx."

"What are your duties now, Ashley?" Jinkx started to hold out his hand for a handshake, but Ashley fumbled with some papers and looked down at the desk. Jinkx withdrew his hand. "Am I poison, now? Don't shake my hand, who cares? Do you think you might be seen? Oh, yeah. You're the new PR man, I forgot."

"It's not that I don't want to shake your hand. It's-ah--."

"Don't bother." Jinkx wheeled around and went to Chief Deputy Donner's office and knocked on the door.

"Come in," the Chief answered.

Jinkx walked briskly to the desk. "I need some help, Chief. Since I've been re-instated by a court of law, I don't know who I should see first. Of



course, I've never been fired before, either. So, what is your procedure? The Sheriff told me to be here at 1:00PM and get my equipment. I'm here. What next?"

"See the Sheriff's secretary. She will give you your badge and I.D. card. Also, keys for the elevator. Go up to the sixth floor and see Sally, and she'll give you uniforms and a vest and all the other departmental equipment."

"Thank you, Chief." Jinkx left the room.

Jinkx got off the elevator on the sixth floor. He saw Sally, and she waved to him. She walked over to him. "I got a call from Chief Donner and he told me to issue your equipment. Do you remember when you first started here and I told you that you were possibly making a big mistake, and also that you probably wouldn't like it here?"

"What am I supposed to say? That you were right?"

"I just wanted to hear it for myself, that's all."

"Remember Captain Wainger?"

"Oh, do I remember Captain Wainger."

"He was drunk on the job most of the time, so Waverly fired him. Oh, I know that he told most everyone that he was attending a jail commission school in Austin. He wasn't. The Sheriff canned his ass. Not only that, one of the jailers caught Wainger and his girlfriend getting it on in his office and told the Sheriff about that too, so he went out the door."

"Who is the new Jail Captain?"

"Someone you know. Phalen Gilbert. I believe that you used to work together at Klimore."

"Yes, we did. I had heard that Captain Welby Fort was kind of in line for this position at one time."

"Waverly don't like blacks, so he originated a position, Major, that put Gilbert's rank higher than Captain Fort, and now Captain Fort is in charge of the bailiffs."

"I have always like Captain Fort. A super, super guy. He's probably better off in that position than have the problems that go along with the jail. The bad thing about it is that Phalen Gilbert is a drunk. D-r-u-n-k. Of course, you've already found that out."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"Of course. Here is the rest of your equipment. When I heard that you had appealed your termination and hired Attorney Faber, I set it aside as I knew you would be back."

"I fought to be reinstated as a deputy, so I hope to be around for a while."

"The same mistake twice? You don't ever learn, do you?"

Jinkx met Marissa at the car. He dumped most of his equipment in the back seat. He kept his badge and put it in his badge holder and clipped it on his belt. He took his shoulder holster from the glove compartment, put it on and slid his 38 Super auto into it. "Now, I'm dressed. Drive to the newspaper office. We have a little time before you go to work. I have a few questions for Kerrie, if she is there. I want to find out if there is anything new on the Klimore murders, and also if there is anything new concerning the girls that wanted to change their story on the Severnsons."

He asked the receptionist to see Kerrie and he was told that she was in conference. At that instant Kerrie came out of an office at the end of the hall. She saw him and walked to the receptionist's area. Jinkx slid back the long sleeve flannel shirt that covered his badge. He grinned broadly. "Thought I would drop by and see what was going on."

"Well, Mr. Deputy, I'm in the process of interviewing a couple of young ladies that were involved in the Severnson drug operation. Do you know Leona Gerry Severnson or Karnie Meeks?"

"No, I don't. I've only heard or read their names. Are they going to take a lie detector test like you wanted?"

"They said they would, and also Tina Godsend. Leona and Karnie came up here a couple of hours ago and wanted to talk, so, I turned on the recorder and told them to go for it. I asked them a few questions and they started to talk openly. I didn't stop them, and I told them they were being recorded. It didn't bother them. Would you like to ask them a few questions?"

"Boy, I don't know how to approach this. I just got back as a deputy. I don't want to overstep my authority."

"I have an idea. Why don't I tell them we should take a break, go to the lounge, and you and Marissa just happen to come in to have a coffee and visit me? Let your badge show a little and see what their reaction is?"



They talked freely about Lyle Farmer and Gene Perry, and I'm sure it won't make any difference if you're with the Sheriffs Department or not. Think it will work?"

"It's worth a try. Yeah, lets give it a try."

Jinkx and Marissa entered the lounge and saw Kerrie sitting with Leona and Karnie. "I'm sorry, Kerrie," said Jinkx. "The receptionist said you were back here. I didn't know you were in conference. We'll come back later."

"Don't go. I think you and these ladies have a mutual acquaintance. Grab a coffee and sit down."

Jinkx stretched out farther than he usually would to get two cups of coffee and exposed his badge.

"Are you a deputy Sheriff?" asked Karnie.

"Yes I am. Now, who is this person that is a mutual acquaintance?"

"Do you know Lyle Farmer?" asked Leona.

Jinkx set the coffee down and looked at them with a scowl. "You really made my day by mentioning his name." He handed Marissa one of the cups.

"You don't like him?" asked Karnie.

"What do you think?" replied Jinkx. He shook his head. He glanced at Kerrie and Marissa and winked. "How do you two know Farmer?"

Karnie replied, "Don't you read the papers. Haven't you heard about the big drug bust pulled off by Lyle Farmer and Gene Perry, and the rest of the sex crazed and drug crazed cops?"

"That's a pretty broad statement. Can you back up what you said?"

"Let me start from the beginning." Karnie looked at Kerrie. "Can he be trusted not to get us in trouble, maybe killed?"

"If anyone can be trusted, he can. He might be able to help you, I don't know. But, he can be trusted."

"OK. The Severnsons, and others, were under surveillance by the DEA. Farmer and Perry were what's known as task force officers. They stopped Wylie Severnson one night and they found some stolen property in the car, and presumably some drugs. Wylie's girlfriend, Tina Godsend was with him. From what Tina said, Lyle took a liking to her right off. He pulled her to one side and said that she should get away from the Severnsons, as they would get her in trouble. He told her that he would



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

take her to jail with Wylie, but was going to give her another chance. He arranged a meeting with her for later, and kind of threatened her if she didn't show. She then started meeting him and getting excited over associating with a big DEA agent. He talked her into telling him little things at first, and as time went by, he arranged for her to receive money for her information. She loved this. The money and the attention. She came to me and asked if I would like to make some extra money. I'll tell you right now, I am a dooper. I have been for a long time."

Jinkx interrupted. "Wasn't your mother, Minnie Talley, killed with the others at the Kinney Fine Chicken place?"

"Yes, she was. And Lyle could have been partly responsible for her death."

"Whoa! I'm lost now. How does he fit into the murders?"

"My mother had a recipe for methamphetamine that belonged to Dick Glenn. She called Lyle Farmer and he came to talk to her. A little time went by and then five people were murdered from the Kinney Fine Chicken, with my mother included. I'm just now putting this together, myself."

"Let's get back to Tina and Lyle and the rest of you."

"I started informing on several of those that came around the Severnsons. Lyle told me to make up stories if I didn't have anything to tell. I got paid, and I was on drugs. Bad combination. After they started stopping the others, the girls that were with the men were cut some slack if they cooperated with Lyle and DEA. Several were paid, Tina got furnished a car and lots of money. Some didn't get thrown in jail. They were after the men. They said for us to do or say anything to get, or set up, the Severnsons. We, us idiots, went before the federal grand Jury and told untrue stories you wouldn't believe. They put me up in a motel the night before I was to testify. The federal prosecutors were there to coach me on what to say in relation to the questions they would ask. I was nervous as could be. ....Lyle gave me marijuana to smoke to settle me down, and some other stuff to help me get through the questions the next day when I met the grand Jury. I have the grand Jury transcript. Would you like to read it?" She took a stack of papers from her purse. "I was going to give it to Kerrie, anyway."



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

327

He took the papers. and handed them to Kerrie. They slipped from her hand and Jinkx picked them up.

"Thanks. Maybe we can set up a meeting when I have more time. I have to get Marissa to work."

"We have to be going also," added Leona. "Here is a stack of notes I made. They will inform you of several things that are very interesting." She turned to Kerrie. "Do we still have that meeting Saturday morning?"

"Sure do. 9:00AM. I'll be here."

"We'll be here too. Tina will be with us also. See you later. Glad to have met you two." She left following Karnie.

"Likewise," responded Marissa.

Jinkx turned to Kerrie. "Let's look at these papers. We might come up with something." He glanced through them. "It looks like hand written notes and typed documents."

---

As written by  
Leona

Lyle (Married Officer) promised wedding rings. (To Tina) the ones he took on raid.

Karnie went to bed with Bernie Denmon. (Officer)

Karnie told laws she had venereal warts.

Lyle says he has motel receipts. (Him and Tina in motels)

Tina admitted how Lyle F. meets her alone whereas Karnie cannot meet law official's alone/supposedly.

Lyle tried to get me away from my husband, Weldon Jr., by causing problems.

Lyle bought 1 gr. of dope. \$100.00.

Admits that Karnie told Galen Kincaid (FBI, Tyler) a lie about Weldon Jr. beating her up (when she was married to him) for sympathy.

Bundy Marshall (Who is a reserve deputy-Waverly's good friend), & wife sleeping w/another couple/swapping & joking about it.

Admitting that Lyle F. licked his lips at Tina during execution of search warrant to aggravate Wylie & to flirt with Tina.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Lyle talking about benefits. Sex, drugs and excitement.

Richard Matlock, (Larkmount City Marshall) another reason taken off case-leaked out info.

Admitting Richard Matlock said he loved her (Tina) & he would take her anywhere she wanted to go-wanted to take her on a two week trip/buy her any kind of car desired.

Dana, Mackey Severnson's wife, says that she thinks Gene Perry likes Tina regardless of their play fighting

Lyle F. told Tina while eating lunch/dinner that the reason why they fight so much is because they are so much alike.

Tina has knowledge that if I do not plea then I can expect to go to jail-if I have two dirty urinalysis tests.

The laws have told Dana that she'll be indicted. (her baby is supposed to be involved.) (Law has threatened to take baby)

Tina said that in Wylie's plea agreement that the papers are drawn up to where she will not be indicted-confronted with whether or not she can admit to lawyers that this is a bunch of fictitious lies-she says no way.

She said the laws had surveillance set up when she supposedly bought 5 gr. from Weldon Jr., and Latch aided/abetted him.

Then she's admitting she did help on a set up.

She (Tina) does not want to testify on Weldon Jr. or really any other family member-but definitely refuses to testify on Wylie or me.

She (Tina) told Sheriff Billy Waverly that she did not see how his case could hold up due to witness (Karnie) is a drug addict & has a problem going to bed with some of the law officials that are involved in the same case as they were investigating.

The Larkmount City Marshal (Richard Matlock) throws parties at his house all the time. The girl informants (Karnie and Tina) go all the time. Karnie goes with anyone, mostly Perry now, but Lyle Farmer always goes with Tina.

Tina admitting that there is a picture floating around that was taken at an apartment, on a lake, on Juda Road. Lyle, Tina and others were lying in the floor in their underwear. Tina described Lyle's underwear as the "bikini" type with animal markings. (Tiger or something.)



Tina (referring back to page 1 on bottom of page) also has knowledge of a set up that was supposed to happen in which supposedly Lyle had to up \$100-What happened to Lyle's \$100? Did somebody rip him out of it? Because supposedly the set up was to take place at a Severnson's house-I think maybe the informant pocketed the \$100-due to the fact-there was nothing at the house to purchase.

Tina admitting she got pregnant by Lyle, and he took her to Shreveport and she got an abortion. Of course Lyle's wife, Penny, didn't know about it.

This is a statement by Leona Severnson. These are all supposedly dopers. Sheriff Billy Waverly is supposedly trying to get Tina to go with him. They meet so much at Matlock's parties.

## CHAPTER 12

Jinkx dropped Marissa off at the hospital, went back to his apartment to read the grand jury transcripts and other notes and papers. Jinkx studied the grand jury testimony of Lyle Farmer, and a certain paragraph got his attention on page 48. This article pertains to the female informants, and in part reads:

8	Then after that,
9	then they are under DEA protection
10	and we can take care of them. We
11	can send them off somewhere, you
12	know, just however we want to do it.
13	They will be protected witnesses
14	then. Right now, we are still-
15	like we just had to move Karnie to a
16	different place because of her ex-
17	husband, Weldon Severnson Jr., who
18	is now married to Leona, another
19	informant/witness, coming over. We
20	had moved her and now nobody knows



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

21 where she lives, we have got her off  
22 somewhere. Tina, she lives—  
23 believe it or not, she lives a  
24 little less than a block away from  
25 me, she lives with her parents. So,  
26 she is pretty much—we can keep an  
49-

1 eye on her at home, you know, when  
2 she is gone, we can't, but she is  
3 without a car right now, she wrecked  
4 her car and she is without a car  
5 right now and we haven't had time to  
6 go help her to take her to get one,  
7 so she is without. So, we are pretty  
8 much able to keep an eye on her.

"Isn't this interesting? Farmer has a wife and baby a block or so away from a dooper/whore informant. He screws her for a while, takes her home, and only a block from where his wife is, goes home and crawls in bed with his wife, and she gets seconds. Very convenient" ....He found another document that had been prepared by someone, no name on it.

1. Tina Godsend      Government informant. Has received approximately \$13,000.00 as DEA informant fee and may receive future payments.
2. Karnie Meeks      Government informant, has received approximately \$5,000.00 as DEA informant fee and may receive future payments.
3. Mimi Moses      Government informant. Has received approximately \$500.00 as DEA informant fee.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

331

4. Chena Rowen      Advised that Government will not prosecute her husband, Bobby Weems, in this case and that Government agents would advise State authorities of her husband's cooperation.
5. Kerrie Doan      Government officers have advised that they will inform the State Court in which she has pending charges of her cooperation in the Federal investigation.
6. Bobby Weems      Has pending State charges and has been advised by Federal agents that they will inform the State Court of his cooperation in this investigation.
7. Marti Hale      Has pending State charges and has been advised by Federal agents that they will inform the State Court of her cooperation in this investigation.
8. Demi Gerry      Government informant. No money paid.

"You can coerce, intimidate, bribe and buy anyone, if you use the right approach. It looks as if the right approach was used to get these dopers to inform. Sick. sick, sick." Jinkx looked through some more of the papers. "Somebody did their homework. Here is a readout on Tina Godsend. She has a little record started here." He read the teletype record.

SEARCH ON 12110692

GODSEND, TINA

WHITE F 022165 5-06 135 BRO/BRO

259 CINDERHALE ST. AZALE

DL 02004581 REST      EUDR CLASS C



332

HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

CURRENT STATUS  
CLEAR  
SPEEDING—LINVIEW  
SPEEDING—SIMS CO  
NO DRIVERS LICENSE—MESQUITE  
SPEEDING — SPRINGTOWN  
ACC-MOTOR FIXED OBJECT FT WORTH  
TOTAL ARRESTS- 4

CHARGES	CONVICTIONS	OFFENSE
1	0	ASSAULT
2	1	THEFT
1	1	DANGEROUS DRUGS

COURT STATUS (INCLUDED ABOVE)  
OFFENSE DANGEROUS DRUGS CONVICTED  
PROBATION/5Y

CUSTODY STATUS (INCLUDED ABOVE)  
TX11200000 SULPHUR SPRINGS SO HOPKIN  
0429— RECEIVED  
TX11200000 SULPHUR SPRINGS SO HOPKIN  
0703— PAROLED

LAST PAROLE STATUS  
PAROLED IN ABSTENTIA TO TARRANT COUNTY UNTIL 3-9—  
0703—

“Farmer can really pick his bed partners, and of course, so can our Federal Government. It looks like everyone is for sale. Regardless of whether it is true or not, dangle money in front of someone, especially the females, promise some reduction in a sentence and a few ‘words of cooperation,’ and have a female informant blow in a young law enforcement officer’s ear, and vice versa, and they forget who and what they are. ....It’s a helluva system.” Jinkx found an affidavit that was written, signed and notarized.



HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

333

STATE OF TEXAS

\*

KNOW ALL MEN BY  
THESE PRESENTS:

COUNTY OF GRABE

\*

BEFORE ME, the undersigned notary, appeared Karnie Meeks who testified under oath that the foregoing statements are true and correct.

1. "My name is Karnie Meeks.

2. I have not been threatened in any way or promised anything by anyone to give this statement. I am giving it because it is the truth. If called as a witness, I will testify under oath as to the facts stated herein.

.....  
3. This affidavit is in reference to my testimony given before the Grand Jury, taken at Tyler, Texas. This testimony was in reference to the Severnson Investigation. In reference to Line #9, Page #18, and the questions being: "Have you ever had any dealings or know of any dealings of an individual named Jake Fain may have with this organization?", and in reference to Line #12, Page #18, and the answer being: "Jake Fain tried to come and warn Weldon Jr., and them when he would hear something at the courthouse, you know, that he was—saying that he was going to get busted or something, but nothing ever come of it". I am stating at this time that I have no, I repeat, no, first hand knowledge of Jake Fain ever warning, or attempting to warn Weldon Jr., or Sr., or any member of the so-called "organization", that they were going to get "busted", or that anyone was being watched by Law Enforcement. Prior to my testimony this "idea" was more or less implanted into my mind by DEA officers Lyle Farmer and Gene Perry, and Lyle's girlfriend/informant, Tina Godsend, as they attempted to gain an indictment by any means, whatsoever, and I met with Law Enforcement officers and officer/officers of the Court the night before my testimony and was more or less prompted on what to say, and about whom, when I went before the Grand Jury. Mostly, my testimony concerning Jake Fain, was absolutely hearsay."

SIGNED this the       day of       , 19       .

Karnie Meeks



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

SUNSCRIBED AND SWORN TO by the said Karnie Meeks on this the \_\_\_\_\_ day of \_\_\_\_\_, 19\_\_\_\_.

H.K. HIGGINS

Notary Public GRABE County, TEXAS

“Looks like Karnie Meeks was going to give Kerrie some dynamite information. I wonder if she knows how explosive this really is? If I can make the meeting Saturday, I will find out more about this Jake Fain. Here are some notes by Karnie Meeks. This explains why Tina had no car for awhile. Lyle stated that Tina had wrecked her car, but it seems that someone else wrecked her car.”

On or about April 23<sup>rd</sup>, Rhoda Royal called the house me & Tina Godsend were at and told us she had wrecked Tina's 1983 Monte Carlo. Tina then panicked because she had no insurance, and then called Richard Matlock for advice. He told us that he could make out a police report if it had occurred in Grabe County. So we decided to say it happened on Springdale Cutoff in Linview.

Rhoda Royal said that her insurance could pay for the car being fixed, but they still had to have a police report. To my knowledge, Richard Matlock was going to fill out a report. I do not know if he did so, but he did promise Tina he was going to help.

“That sounds like something that coo-coo would do. Sounds like Tina was banging more than Lyle Farmer. And Sheriff Waverly wanted in her pants too? Boy, oh boy. What a crew. I think I'll save some of this till later.”

\*\*\*\*\*

....Wednesday finally arrived, and Jinkx walked into the Sheriffs Department briefing room, passing several deputies, and just nodding to them. Jinkx sat on the front row for the first time. Several of the deputies welcomed him back, which made him feel more comfortable.



Captain Finnegan and Sgt. Akers came into the briefing room. Sgt. Akers conducted the meeting. "We welcome Deputy Jinkx Finner back to our department. I don't have to elaborate on the circumstances as to why Deputy Finner was absent for a while. It is considered water under the bridge. If you have any questions, confer with Captain Finnegan."

Jinkx knew that there would be no questions, as it was as if everyone was programmed. He could see the smirk on Captain Finnegan's face. Jinkx had to say something. It wasn't in his nature to sit there and not respond. He raised his hand.

He was acknowledged by Sgt. Akers. "Yes, Deputy Finner."

He stood up. "Captain, supervision is not going to fuck with me are they? Because if they do, we will be back in the courtroom. ....I have to clarify supervision's intentions."

The smirk disappeared from Captain Finnegan's face, and also, Sgt. Akers looked like he fell through his ass. "I, ah-we."

"I'm glad to hear you say that, Sgt. Then we have an agreement." Jinkx sat down.

You could hear snickers from the rest of the deputies, but there were no more questions.

Captain Finnegan left the room, and the Sgt. continued with the briefing. "There is a rumor that the Police Department, or Marshal's Department, in Larkmount is going to be eliminated. There has been too much adverse publicity surrounding the officers down there. We don't know exactly when this is going to take place, but it will be soon. We need to expand our patrol efforts in that area, as the citizens in Larkmount and surrounding cities have requested our help. There has been a rash of burglaries in the rural areas, especially in the South section of Larkmount and on down towards Lake Chickaree. The unit in that area needs to keep his eyes open. That's all I have. Any questions or comments? No? There's one more thing. I have been accepted by the Department of Public Safety, so I will be leaving in two weeks to go to the DPS Academy. There will be an opening for a sergeant. The notice will be posted on the bulletin board shortly, so those wanting to take the test needs to sign up. Let's get on the streets. Your assignments are on the board. "



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Jinkx walked slowly to the board to get his assignment. He scanned the list and saw that he was in the south zone, unit 322, and that was to his liking.

He stopped at the Klimore PD and was talking to Sgt. Monroe when the local evening newspaper was brought into the coffee room by an officer.

"Anything new?" asked Sgt. Monroe.

"There is an article on the Kinney Fine Chicken murders."

"Let's see what it says." Sgt. Monroe spread the paper on the table.

### **New info may help solve the Kinney Fine Chicken murders By Ada Jergens**

New information in the field of genetics may make it possible to identify a possible suspect in the Kinney Fine Chicken murders from his fingernail, recovered from the body of one of the victims.

Evidence in the case will be presented to a Rashe County grand jury by the State Attorney General's office.

Dr. Ron Getty, supervisor of the forensic lab in Dallas, would not confirm testing on the fingernail at the lab, but he said Galavanscript, his lab, has made a number of advances in its DNA testing in the last 18 months.

A fingernail found in the body of Jamie Jenson, of Oleta, one of the victims of the slayings, was sent to Galavanscript by the forensic lab in Dallas, which performed autopsies on the five victims.

Getty said each test further improves the chances of identifying a suspect.

He said that recent improvements have upgraded the odds of identifying a suspect. Odds previously may have said one in 1,000 people had the same genetic makeup as the fingernail, but now his lab can narrow it down to possibly one in 40,000.

He added that the more genetic markers that can be tested, the greater the chance of not making a random match in the population.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

337

Gene Jenson, the Kinney Fine Chicken Manager, Lorna Klingler, former Senator John Mallory and his son, John Jr., were among those who received subpoenas from the Texas Attorney General's Office, according to reports.

Jenson, a ballistics expert with the Department of Public Safety, said he completed a number of ballistics tests on possible evidence in the case. He would not say whether he was able to match any evidence recovered from the murder scene in rural Rashe County or the bodies to weapons.

He added that he had received numerous submissions from the time the murders occurred until now.

Mrs. Klingler, manager of the Kinney Fine Chicken restaurant in Klimore when the murders occurred, said that she had waited a long time for the case to be presented to the grand jury. She was called by investigators to help identify the victims.

She described the victims as "very good people who did not deserve what happened to them."

The senior Mallory said he didn't know why he was summoned to appear before the grand jury.

Officer Donny Prince, who works for the Rashe County Sheriffs Department now but was an investigator for the Klimore PD when the robbery and murders occurred, said he was not subpoenaed by the Attorney General's office, but would be available if needed.

A forensic expert, Dr. I.C. Stein, who is with a forensic lab in Dallas, said he would appear at the session without a subpoena. He has possession of the fingernail, which does not belong to any of the victims, since the autopsies were done.

Other evidence was returned to the Texas Rangers.

Several of those that were/are investigating the murders confirmed they were subpoenaed to appear before the grand jury.

...."Well, well. They just might come up with something yet," remarked Sgt. Monroe.

"They might come up with something, but will the public be notified of it. This investigation has been a "green weenie" from the git go."

"How do you come up with those saying, Jinkx?" asked the Sgt.?



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"I sometimes don't think of what I might say. It just comes out. As I told you before, I am not a home boy. I've been around and listen and learn. I guess I better cover my area. And I'll see you later. Oh, by the way. How is Sgt. Benfelder?"

"In a bad way. He might not make it. That's about it."

"When you see him tell him that I am thinking of him, OK?"

....The shift was slowly winding down and there had been very little excitement on Jinkx's first day back. He saw a Grabe County unit parked at Old Glidding Highway and Highway 3 at the Sandy Dipper, a Mexican bar. He pulled in beside the unit. It was Falon Bowles. "Hello Falon. Slow night, huh?"

"Jinkx, glad to see you back. You sort of stung Captain Finnegan with your question, didn't you?"

"Well, they asked if there was any questions. I thought it was a simple question that demanded a simple answer, and a simple person gave me the answer. Us older guys don't take too much crap from the youngsters, as you should know by now."

"I think I'm going to leave this horse shit organization shortly. I have a job waiting in the private sector, and I think I'm going to take it."

"I think I'm going to start looking too. It's just a matter of time when they really nail me, and I won't have any defense."

"I'll tell you right now, Finnegan is really after your ass along with Waverly and Donner."

"Tell me something I don't already know."

"I can do that. Did you know that Lyle Farmer failed a piss test?"

...."That's not a surprise."

"I don't think it is his first time, from what I hear. I heard that his buddy, Gene Perry, failed one also."

"From what I hear, Farmer can't resist the temptation of drugs and a little pussy on the side. Probably a lot of pussy on the side. His wife, Penny, is so naive."

"This dope raid that they made a while back caused some of the defendants to insinuate that Farmer was a former dooper, and since he was so close to drugs now, and had access to whatever he may want, he may have rekindled his desire for the stuff. This Severnson that was arrested



contacted local Feds and even those in Washington, and said that Lyle and his task force officers were using dope and having sex with the young, underage girllies."

"I believe. I'm headed to the gas pumps. I'll see you at the courthouse."

\*\*\*\*\*

Friday had rolled around with very little excitement. He managed to avoid the Sheriff, Chief Deputy and the Patrol Captain, and also mind his own business. The phone rang early, but Jinkx had been up for a while. "Hello."

"Jinkx, Kerrie. There are a couple of articles in the morning paper you might want to read. Remember, I have a meeting with those girls tomorrow at 9:00AM. Be there if you can, and make a list of questions so that we can move right along, OK?"

"I'll see you there, kiddo. Thanks for calling."

Jinkx called Marissa and they arranged to meet in an hour at the Hot Biscuit for breakfast and read the paper.

They had ordered and Jinkx unfolded the paper. He glanced across the headlines. "Hell, I didn't know Severson went to court a couple of days ago." He scanned the front page. "Also something about the MADD group that met last night at the courthouse. Let me straighten this paper out so we can read it. Let's see what they say about the High Sheriff."

**MADD rally involving Waverly case  
draws 15; organizer not daunted**

**By John Zimenas and  
Kerrie Wintz  
Staff Writers**

A Mother's Against Drunk Driving rally held in Linview Thursday only attracted 15 people, but the organization, MADD, said the low turnout isn't discouraging and will not keep them from seeing the Grabe County Sheriff face driving while intoxicated charges.

Waverly is scheduled to appear in two weeks in county court to answer the charges.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

....The MADD supporters will be there too, said Kim Soloman, the organization's state chairwoman.

Soloman urged participants in last Thursday's rally to encourage the community to seek appropriate action in Waverly's case.

"I firmly believe he needs to get treated and not just five days in the hospital," Soloman said. "He needs a long-term treatment."

The rally participants said the charges against Waverly have undermined the integrity of the Grabe County Sheriffs Department.

"I'm not discouraged about our low turnout because I know a few people can make a difference," she said. She used MADD as an example. The organization started with three women working out of a kitchen about 15 years ago.'

"That's a good article, but in Grabe County, who will listen? They absolutely love this kind of guy in this county. Here's something about the Severnson trial."

### **ATTEMPT AT STING DETAILED**

#### **Attorney Confirms Efforts**

#### **In Probe of Kinney Fine**

#### **Chicken Murders**

**By Kerrie Wintz**  
**Staff Writer**

The attorney for Weldon Severnson Sr. confirmed in federal court that his client had been approached by law officers in Sims and Grabe counties about setting up a "sting" operation and supplying information on Klimore's Kinney Fine Chicken murders.

The testimony by attorney Bick Flores before U.S. District Judge Wallace Steiner came on motions by Severnson that he be allowed to withdraw his guilty plea and by Flores to be relieved of his appointment to represent Severnson.



After hearing testimony from Flores, Severnson and Assistant U.S. Attorney Raymond Moss, Steiner said he was taking the two motions under advisement and would render a decision "forthwith."

Severnson, the first to testify, told Steiner he wanted to withdraw his plea given earlier because 'I wasn't guilty then and I'm not guilty now.'

Severnson claimed in an affidavit to U.S. Probation Officer Bull Williams that he had worked with federal and state law officers in Tyler, Linview and Klimore to solve several murders in East Texas.

Among those, his affidavit had claimed, was the murder of five employees and customers of the Kinney Fine Chicken restaurant in Klimore.

Severnson's letter to Williams said he had worked with Texas Ranger Gene Ellis, Grabe County Sheriff Billy Waverly, (former) Sims County Sheriff Fern Blades, and FBI agents Lanny Trumble and Lanny Hawkins, among others.

Flores confirmed part of those claims while telling Steiner why he had decided not to subpoena any of the officers named.

...."There were officers that would testify that within the period of limitations,...they had had conversations with Mr. Severnson about setting up a drug lab in Sims County and also running what could be called a "sting" operation," Flores said.

"He said some of the Grabe County officers would also testify that they had conversations with Severnson 'to work with them on the Kinney Fine Chicken case.'"

Testimony about those conversations, Flores said, "would be enough to at least cloud the allegations in the (Severnson) case."

Attorneys later declined to speculate on what sort of time frame Steiner intended by saying his decision would be given "forthwith."

"I can hardly wait until they start questioning the witnesses about their activities with the DEA agents, sex, drugs and stuff. However, if the judge don't allow the right questions to be asked, and the defense not be allowed to call the right witnesses or question certain witnesses, this Mr. Severnson can kiss his ass goodbye, and just do the time. If they want you, they will get you, even if they have to fabricate evidence and give false testimony. When I attend that meeting with Kerrie and the girls



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

tomorrow, I will probably know more about how this was handled by those on loan from local agencies to the DEA. I studied some of the papers, especially the federal grand jury testimony of Lyle Farmer, and I can tell he lied. The thing about it is, he knows he lied to try to gain an indictment. You can't get sexually involved with informants, or any witnesses, and conduct an impartial investigation. Any mature person knows that. Of course, the task force officers we are dealing with there, is a different story."

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx entered the newspaper office at 8:45AM and saw Kerrie at her desk. "Good morning, Jinkx. We are the only ones here, so far."

"Good morning. I looked through the paper work we got from the girls the other day. I do have several questions. I'm curious about the testimony of Farmer, and I know he lied to the members of the grand jury. That grand jury must have been retarded if they couldn't see through his fabricated testimony. I hope one of the girls can shed some light on most of his testimony."

"Marissa didn't come with you?"

"No, she worked over last night and was tired. I had a slow night, as there wasn't very much happening for a Friday night. I think only two were jailed. One for DWI and one for a woman assaulting her husband. She caught him with another woman and thundered on his head. Took about ten stitches to close up a split in his head. She slugged him with a beer bottle. Lite beer too, but it wasn't light on his head."

Tina Godsend, Leona Severnson and Karnie Meeks appeared from around the corner and walked toward Jinkx and Kerrie.

"Are we on time?" asked Leona?"

"Right on time," replied Kerrie. "Let's go in the conference room where we can be comfortable."

When they sat down Jinkx took a folder from his brief case. "Want me to start this little inquiry?"

"Sure, go head," said Kerrie.

"I have looked though the grand jury testimony of Lyle Farmer, and there are a few questions about parts of his testimony. I'm on page 11 and he is talking about some methamphetamine distribution, giving in reference, tapes of recorded conversations. OK, page 11, line #20.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

343

20 Weldon Jr. went and got in Tina's car which was a  
21 Monte Carlo and they were on their way to meet Reena  
22 and when they were pulling out, Jake Fain shows up.  
23 Jake Fain pulls up to Tina's car and told Weldon Jr.

12-

1 that he needed to come back inside to his shop, and  
2 when they went inside, Tina went inside with them,  
3 and Jake Fain said that he had seen me and my  
4 partner, Gene Perry, across the street in some  
5 woods, and that he saw undercover narcotic officers  
6 on each end of the road and for Weldon Jr. not to go  
7 and do the deal because it was a set up. So Weldon  
8 Jr. said if that is the case, I am going to send  
9 Tina to this deal. So he gives the narcotics to  
10 Tina, and Tina goes and, of course, we are doing  
11 surveillance and working with it and she brings the  
12 narcotics to us and we give her the money for the  
13 narcotics and send her back and she paid Weldon Jr.

“Talking about your car, your Monte Carlo, Tina. A friend of yours wrecked your car, didn't she?” he asked Tina.

“Yes, she did. She wrecked it in another county, but we got a police report from City Marshal Richard Matlock, and his report stated that it happened in Grabe County. Her insurance paid for the car. You know Matlock, don't you?”

“Yes, I know him. Back to Farmers statement where he is talking about Jake Fain seeing him and his partner. Who is Jake Fain?”

“He was just a friend of Weldon Severnson Sr., and he knew all the Severnsons. He was just a man that came around once in awhile.”

“Now, Farmer is telling what you said and did. Did you also tell the grand jury this same story?”

“Yes, I did, but it wasn't quite true. Lyle told me to say what I did. This Jake Fain never told anyone that he saw police anywhere. He never warned or attempted to warn Weldon Jr., or anybody.”



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"Now, Tina, Farmer and his partner, Perry, never really hid from anyone, did they? Didn't they just sit around with their feet out the window kind of casual like?"

"They never did what you would say, undercover surveillance. They would sit among the trees, but anyone could see them up close, or from a distance."

"If Jake Fain had said that he saw undercover narcotic officers on each end of the road, they weren't actually. 'undercover,' were they?"

"The officers, most of the time, were in plain sight, not undercover."

"You told the grand jury, and Farmer told the grand jury, the same story, a story that he concocted, right?"

"Right."

.... "In other words, you and the DEA possibly fu—, excuse me, screwed up someone's life by giving the grand jury false testimony. Right?"

Tina looked down. "Right."

"You told the grand jury what Farmer wanted them to hear. Right?"

With her head still down she answered. "Right."

"Who was Reena?"

"A female DEA narc. She acted kind of gay. She told me once that she would like to see my bare ass. I was afraid to be around her, alone."

"In Farmer's testimony he tells the grand jury about you being held down and your face burned with cigarettes. Anything to that? Did you tell the grand jury, this along with Farmer also telling them, this story?"

"I told them this and Lyle also told them. But, I was never held down or burned. It was another of Lyle's little stories to sway the grand jury."

"I have a question for Karnie. I'm on page 12, line 7.

7

I

8

don't know if Karnie brought it up, but they thought

9

Karnie was a snitch, and Karnie is no longer out

10

there, we won't let her go back out there. Weldon

11

Jr. came to her house last week and held her down

12

and beat her up.

13

MEMBER OF THE GRAND JURY: Karnie?

14

THE WITNESS: Yeah, Karnie Meeks, the one that you saw.



- 15 MEMBER OF THE GRAND JURY: Beat up on her?  
16 THE WITNESS: Weldon Jr. was the one that did it. Galen  
17 Kincaid of the FBI is looking into that right now.

“Question. Did you get beat up by Weldon Jr. or anyone?”

“No, I did not. This was another fabrication by Lyle Farmer. I did tell the FBI what I told the grand jury. It was Lyle’s idea. I intend to make amends. In those papers you got the other day there should have been an affidavit about Jake Fain. I made this in hopes that I could straighten some of this out. A little too late, huh?

“I don’t know, Karnie. I’ll speak freely. This grand jury had to be a bunch of hicks to fall for bull shit like this. Hayseeds, turnip truck stow-ways. Now, Farmer says that the Severnsons have, and I am quoting from the grand jury transcript:

‘Five hundred and twelve acres of land in Sims and Grabe Counties, so many checking accounts, three airplanes, cars, twelve of which are Cadillacs and more.’ Since you three have been around the Severnsons for a period of time, now, how much of Farmer’s testimony is true?”

They looked at each other and mumbled a few numbers. Finally Leona spoke up. “I or we, would say about 10%. No more. They don’t have three airplanes. They might own about 25 acres in all. They don’t have safe deposit boxes and bank accounts like Lyle tried to convince the grand jury they do. The DEA run search warrants on some banks, or a bank, and found out Weldon Severnson Sr. owed a bank for some sandblasting equipment and materials or something. Lyle and his crew was really surprised when the bank advised them that they could wipe their, you know what, on their search warrants. Not only that, Lyle had already told the grand jury that they knew they had all this stuff. Of course he never went back to the grand jury and told them he fell flat on his ass on the search warrants, and also that their investigation didn’t find 500 plus acres of land, three airplanes and other things he said they had. He absolutely fooled them.”



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"No. All of you fooled them," stated Jinkx. .... "There is so much to this transcript that you could ask questions all day. I covered what I was curious about. I'm going to leave and let Kerrie ask some questions. I have several things I have to do." He pointed at the girls. "You three, and others, need to set the record straight." He looked at Tina. "A few more questions, for Tina. Did you and others, including Lyle Farmer, DEA agent deluxe, have a picture taken laying in the floor of an apartment, on a lake, on Juda Road, and in your underwear, and did you get pregnant by Mr. Lyle Farmer and go to Louisiana to have an abortion?"

"The answer is yes to all questions."

"Thank you." He waved to them. "I'll see you later."

\*\*\*\*\*

The day of Sheriff Waverly's arraignment had come and gone, and the newspaper carried an article about the arraignment and an article from the Linview Police Department.

Jinkx read the article on the arraignment first.

### WAVERLY ENTERS NOT GUILTY PLEA

By Jeb Grantham  
Staff Writer

A plea of not guilty was entered on behalf of Grabe County Sheriff Billy Waverly, and County Judge Manny Slocum said that he is now waiting for attorneys to file motions in the two misdemeanor cases against Waverly.

Slocum held the arraignment for Waverly on charges of driving while intoxicated and evading detention, and his defense attorney, Olin Hall, had previously arranged for pleas of not guilty to be entered in the cases.

Neither Waverly nor Hall attended the arraignment, and Slocum said the next step in the process is for attorneys to file motions, after which he will hold a hearing to decide the motions, and then set a date for trial in the case.



Slocum said he is sure the defense and perhaps the prosecution will be filing pretrial motions, but neither side has discussed that with him.

Waverly's name was on the regular docket along with 100 others accused of misdemeanor offenses.

The names were routinely called alphabetically, and when Slocum reached Waverly's name, Court Coordinator Demondra Watson said for each case. "Olin Hall announced not guilty for Mr. Waverly."

That same procedure was used for other defendants who had also hired attorneys before the hearing.

Jinkx turned to Marissa. "Not guilty, huh? Sure. I can tell you the next step. He will enter a "no contest" plea and that will be the end of it. A phony apology to the public and it's all over. Listen to what the Linview PD chief says.

## **POLICE TO ESTABLISH ON SCENE ARREST POLICY**

**By John Zimenas**  
**Staff Writer**

The Linview Police Department announced it would create a new policy as a result of an internal investigation into the incident involving Grabe County Sheriff Billy Waverly.

In the incident, officers failed to arrest Waverly after he was stopped on suspicion of driving while intoxicated. Instead, Waverly fled from the officer to his home about one-half mile where he was released to a captain from the Sheriff's office, according to police reports.

In a very brief statement released, Police Chief Upshaw said the investigation concluded no written policy governing the responsibility and accountability of supervisors to make a final decision on the scene existed.

"Again, I do want to apologize to the public for the concern and frustration this incident has caused in our community," Upshaw said in a prepared statement.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

"It is, and has been my philosophy that the enforcement of the laws be applied equally to all the people. Through policy development and training, I hope to ensure that this type of situation does not happen again and then the officers will gain the confidence they need to make the appropriate decisions when they are confronted by similar situations," the statement continued.

....Police spokeswoman Barbara Morse declined to say if any corrective measures were going to be taken against the officers involved, saying it was an internal affair.

The press release only said a written policy was being developed that clearly makes the ranking supervisor on the scene responsible and accountable for "decisions of this nature."

"That's right. Now that the horse is out, lets shut the gate. These country folk administrators are a kick in the ass. You don't need a policy to tell you that you arrest a drunk. With Waverly's reputation, I shouldn't think that you had to get permission to take a drunk into custody. I wonder what the other drunks think about the High Sheriff getting preferential treatment? This 'non action' gives the Sheriff more incentive to do it again, as he knows they will not arrest him. Anyway, that's what I think. It looks like they caught up with Richard Matlock. They did away with the Larkmount police force. Good for them. Matlock wanted publicity and this article gives it to him. Looks like the publicity given to the speed traps and such paid off. Look at this."

### **LARKMOUNT COUNCIL AXES POLICE FORCE**

**By Jeb Grantham**  
**Staff Writer**

Larkmount—There be no more speed traps in Larkmount because all of the officers have resigned and the Mayor has sold all the police cars.

The City Council, holding its first meeting since the tax rollback, have approved an amended city budget that anticipates city income of \$39,142, expenditures of \$38,830, and a year end balance of \$312.



Councilman Zerle Watson made the motion that the budget be approved, Councilman Buck Crawford seconded the motion, and the Mayor approved the budget.

Councilman Bob Tanner voted against the budget, citing the lack of funding for a police department.

For several years now, Larkmount has funded city operations from revenue generated by traffic fines, but that source has dried up recently when the Legislature reduced the amount small towns could keep from traffic fines.

The council recently responded by tripling the tax rate to 15 cents per \$100 evaluation to generate about \$20,000. Taxpayers revolted and voted for a tax rollback.

A standing-room-only crowd attended the meeting, and asked why the Mayor had been in such a hurry to sell the police cars. When the last officer quit, in less than five days later, the Mayor had disposed of all the police equipment, they said.

The Mayor said there was no money in the budget for anything related to a police department, and the city needed money from the sale to meet the burden of paying \$6,000 in vacation time to the departing officers, and \$3,250 for sewer systems.

He said when they were running short of funds at previous meetings, they had tapped the sewer fund, now they are trying to pay it back.

Councilman Tim Canter is sick and did not attend the meeting. His wife, Gwendolyn, wanted to know how many councilmen the mayor contacted before he sold the police equipment.

All but one, the Mayor said, and he assured her he had come by her home, but no one was there.

Ronnie Tidwell, one of the former officers, presented a four-page written proposal to the council in which he suggested the city continue the police department using volunteers as officers.

One woman said she would object to any volunteer officer coming onto her property. Turner said he was proposing the city use those who are already commissioned by the state as officers.

Municipal Judge Eli Thomas said he saw no problem with that, so long as the officers are state-certified.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

He said he, as a judge, would not accept any citation issued by anyone who was not certified.

A woman asked whether the Mayor was required by state law to advertise for bids before he sold the police equipment. The Mayor said the bid law does not apply if he sells to another municipality, which is what he said he did.

As for the volunteer police force, he said, the council should wait until after the next election to proceed.

A man asked whether the Mayor had ever sat down and talked to the taxpayers group to work out their differences. The Mayor said it wouldn't do any good because "they are against taxes, period."

A member of the taxpayers group said the Mayor was trying to make it appear as though all the problems were the fault of the taxpayers.

A citizen of Klimore attended the meeting and asked permission to address the council. He stated that it was the fault of the governing body of Larkmount, the City Council, that so much adverse publicity was given to Larkmount, because they failed to control Police Chief Richard Matlock and his officers. He said, "they looked the other way when articles started appearing in the newspapers, and segments were run on local television concerning the 'speed traps' within their city." He finished his speech by adding: "Hallelujah. There is no more police department in Larkmount anymore. I can now ride my Harley Davidson through here and not be pulled over by police officers. Well, me and my fellow riders will not have to hide behind the other vehicles so the Larkmount vice won't see us because they are no more.

I am sure there are other people that feel the same way too. A big thanks to the people involved in abolishing Boss Hogg and his piglets. It feels good to know that we can now travel safely through Larkmount without being probed.

This brought applause by the majority of the crowd, but the Mayor and the Councilmen had no response.



“The end of an era. Boss Hogg and his piglets. Pretty well describes ex City Marshal, Police Chief, Matlock. The Sheriff is looking for a few ‘bad’ men. Matlock fits right in to his program.”

\*\*\*\*\*

Jinkx met Marissa at the Whistle Stop after he finished his Sunday shift. “You know, I’ve been thinking. ....I haven’t been avoiding the Sheriff, Chief Deputy and Patrol Captain. They have been avoiding me. I realize this now. I’m just coasting. I try to look back, and I try to look ahead, but I seem to be in a place or condition of neglect or oblivion for unwanted things or persons. I know where I have been and I know where I’m going, but I’m going there too fast. You spend the first half of your life wishing you were older, and the second half wishing you could turn back the clock.”

“I’ve never heard you talk like that, Jinkx. I think you are looking for some excitement in your work. Before you had the run in with the Sheriff you were exhilarated, but lately you seem to be glum. I feel as though you are tired of me. Am I a bore, now?”

“Awe, no. Hey, I don’t want you to think that. It’s an inner thing. I just thought of a great idea.. Can you take off tomorrow and the next day? I’m serious.”

“One of the nurses owes me two days, as I worked for her. She said she would pay me back any time. I know she will work for me, as she just came off vacation yesterday and brought it to my attention that she owed me. What do you have in mind?”

“Two days in Dallas. A little wineing, a little dining, a little dancin’ and romancin’.”

The two days with Marissa in Dallas was like a miracle cure for the depressed. When they walked into his apartment at noon on Wednesday the phone was ringing. “Give me a break,” remarked Jinkx as he picked up the receiver. “Hello.”

“This is Kerrie. I’ve called you and Marissa a dozen times and left a dozen messages. Have you read or heard the news? “

“We, ah, just got back from Dallas. What’s going on?”



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

'I don't know where to start. First of all, the Sheriff pleaded no contest, just like you said he would. Do you have time to listen if I read it from the paper?'

"Yeah. Let me put on the speaker phone so Marissa can hear."

"Hello, Marissa," shouted Kerrie.

"Hello. You sound excited."

"I am. As I was telling Jinkx, there's so much going on I don't know where to start. I'll start with the Sheriff. Here is what was in the paper yesterday, Tuesday:

'Waverly pleads no contest. DWI charge against sheriff dropped. Grabe County Sheriff Billy Waverly pleaded no contest to a charge of evading detention and was sentenced to a \$500 dollar fine and six months probation with deferred adjudication.

As part of the plea agreement, County Judge Manny Slocum dismissed the charge of driving while intoxicated. Under the conditions of his probation, Waverly has agreed to testing and counseling for alcohol abuse.

Two hours after filing his plea, Waverly issued a public apology for his behavior to the police officers involved, to his friends and supporters and the people of Grabe County.

He says: 'I exercised poor judgement in prematurely leaving the scene and in failing to be more responsive to the officers involved,' he said in a prepared statement. He went on to say that the experience had focused his attention on his personal use of alcohol and his responsibility as a public official to set an example.

His purpose in filing the plea was to put the matter to rest, he said.

Waverly has already undergone testing, according to his attorney, Olin Hall.

'He's not what you would consider to be an alcoholic,' Hall said. 'He has used poor judgement with alcohol.'

Hall did not say how long Waverly would be required to have counseling, but said that whatever steps needed to be taken would be taken.

Under the terms of the deferred adjudication, the charges will be dismissed and the arrest record and charges may be removed from his record if Waverly completes the six months of probation without any



violations, Judge Slocum said after the court and Waverly agreed to the terms.

‘However,’ he added, ‘deferred adjudication can be a two-edged sword. If he violates his probation, he automatically gets the sentence.’

Officials that is with Mothers Against Drunk Driving expressed disappointment with the dismissal of the DWI charge.

‘The main thing I’m worried about is the message this gives to people,’ said Kim Soloman, chairperson for the Texas MADD. ‘The message people are getting is that drinking and driving is not a serious offense in Grabe County.’

The possibility that correct procedures were not followed is one reason for the plea agreement, Waverly’s attorney said.

‘One of the things we’re trying to do is bring closure is not pointing fingers as to whether procedures were followed or were not followed,’ Hall stated.”

“Didn’t I tell you that he would plead no contest and receive minimal punishment?” asked Jinkx.

“It happened just like you said. Before I forget. Leona, Karnie and Tina took a polygraph test Saturday and passed it, so it seems that Farmer and company persuaded them, and others, to lie to the grand jury. At least it looks that way at this point. They said they would retake the test next week, and if they pass it again we will see if we can’t get something in the paper about it. Also, Karnie said that when her and Tina accompanied Lyle Farmer and Gene Perry to a town in Louisiana where they were going to bust a lab, they stayed at a motel, with Tina and Lyle in one room and Karnie and Gene in the other. Karnie said that Lyle and Gene “loaned” her to a Louisiana State narcotics officer for a night. Karnie said that he took pictures of her naked body, especially her big breasts. She spent the night with him and went back to Perry the next day. How about that?”

“That’s not a surprise. Give them the publicity that they deserve. Anything else now?”

‘We, at the newspaper office, including our new editor, have found several articles about corruption in the past, here in Grabe County. It was touched over lightly at the time it happened, so we have decided to re-run



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

the articles and emphasize the corruption potential in this county. You will probably get more out of it when you read today's paper. It is entitled **"ANOTHER ERA"** It's very interesting. I think we have both been out of touch as events in the past could be precursory to something that's unfolding now with the 'Fortune Cookie Boys.' The newspaper has three stories going at this time. We just finished the Waverly DWI story, so our attention is now focused on the Severnson trial in Tyler, maybe a breaking story in the Kinney Fine Chicken murders, and the running of the Feds getting involved in the corruption in Grabe County in the past. I have an interview shortly and have to go to Klimore, so I have to be going. I'll keep you informed, OK"

"OK. Thanks for calling." Jinkx looked at Marissa. "Well, well. I felt that the impact of a federal investigation into corruption in Grabe County had been ignored, or forgotten. I'll go get a paper. I'm dying to see what the federal government had dug up. I vaguely remember what was in the paper about the corruption, There could have been more."

\*\*\*\*\*

**CORRUPTION HAS NO BOUNDS OR ANY TIME  
SCHEDULE: CORRUPTION IN GRABE COUNTY IN THE  
PAST ERA HAS PROMPTED US TO RE-RUN ARTICLES  
AND RUN UNPUBLISHED ARTICLES ON THIS MATTER  
IN A NEW SERIES, AND WILL BE ENTITLED  
"ANOTHER ERA".**

### **FBI AGENTS HIT TWO GAMBLING PLACES HERE**

**By Walt Hamby  
Kerrie Wintz  
Staff Writers**

#### **(ANOTHER ERA)**

As many as 50 subpoenas ordering persons to appear before a Tyler federal grand jury were issued a few days ago and executed last night as



more than 40 FBI agents raided two suspected gambling operations here in Linview.

The police chief said he knew nothing of the raids beforehand and the Grabe County Sheriff said he understands the FBI tried to contact him through his office-but did not reach him.

Texas Ranger Gene Ellis said three federal agents "invited" him but he did not join the raids because of illness.

**U.S. ATTORNEY** Jody Hopkins of Tyler said that the federal grand jury is investigating other Grabe County "illegal activities," but Hopkins declined to divulge their nature. ....Hopkins said 20 more subpoenas would be served on persons not at last night's game.

He did say paraphernalia confiscated at the Hanger-On Lounge on U.S. 25 South of Linview and a three-bed-room house on F.M. 220 a half-mile North of Loop 28 was taken to Tyler and Dallas-after the raids began about 9 p.m.

Ellis said he had helped the FBI keep an eye on the Northside house off and on for several years and said he had a complaint on the Hanger-On in December. The Ranger and Hopkins both said they were told the Northside location was moved "several months ago." Hopkins said he, 10 FBI agents from Tyler and 30 from Dallas found the largest crowd-about 40 men and women-at the Northside house.

He said a high-stakes dice game was under way at the house, but he would not say how much money was on the crap table, other than it was "several thousand dollars."

**Several men were** at a poker table in another room, he said, but no money, chips or cards were in sight.

Hopkins said federal agents had investigated operations here for several months before last night's raid.

And he said they are almost an exact copy of operations shut down in Fannin County. Sheriff Raymond Taylor of Fannin County pleaded guilty to federal racketeering charge last year and was handed a 10 year prison term.

Hopkins said 15-20 persons were at the Hanger-on when agents went in, but no gambling was underway.

He said a poker-type table and a "shoe", which is an instrument for dealing blackjack-were taken from the Hanger-on.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"We also confiscated some pretty good amounts of liquor," Hopkins said, "and some weapons-pistols and shotguns."

Agents photographed evidence and inventoried gambling devices, he said. They counted confiscated chips and money at the Northside location, he added.

A bedroom of the house bore a sign reading "office" and there was a parking lot behind it-filled with about 20 cars.

Hopkins did say that he called for the Sheriff through the sheriffs department "and I personally tried to get the District Attorney by phone, but I couldn't reach him, or the sheriff."

"I didn't get invited. I understand that possibly they did call by the office trying to contact me-but if they did I didn't know anything about it," the sheriff said.

**WHEN THE SHERIFF** was asked if he was aware of illegal gambling in the county, he replied, "No."

"Of course like I said, there's been street talk about it for years," the sheriff said, "but I've never been there and I didn't know anything about it."

The sheriff said none of his men participated in the raids and added, "I didn't know anything about it until I heard about on the news this morning."

The sheriff said he knows of no other illegal gambling in Grabe County, he said, "but if there are-if there are any illegal activities-we'll investigate them," he said.

The Sheriff added, "I don't appreciate someone comparing Grabe County, my county, to Fannin County."

"I don't know what this is going to amount to. If there's something going on here we want to do anything we can to correct it."

"I don't know whether the federal authorities will visit me about this or not. I will cooperate with federal authorities in any way I can," the sheriff said.

When the Linview police chief was queried about the two locations outside Linview city limits, he said:

"I don't know what you're talking about, really."



When asked if he was contacted by the FBI, the chief replied, "No sir. I sure haven't."

....And when he was asked if he knew anything about the gambling paraphernalia, or where it was taken, he answered: "No, I sure don't."

Ellis said three FBI agents came to his home door between 9p.m. and 9:30p.m. And asked if he wanted to go on the raids with them.

"I've got a real sore throat," Ellis said from his office the next morning. "I was sick and had gone to bed about 8:15p.m. I guess."

The FBI said they had plenty personnel and they just wanted to ask me if I wanted to go.

**(ANOTHER ERA)**

**...A "GOOD CLEAN CRAP GAME" INTERRUPTED**

**By Elmo Larkin  
and John Calvin  
Staff Writers**

A knock on the front door of an unoccupied house a quarter of a mile North of Loop 28 about 10p.m. last night interrupted what one participant described as a "good, clean crap game."

Moments later, when the door was opened, U.S. Attorney Jody Hopkins and 40 FBI agents entered and the game was over for the night.

"They were real, real nice. Everybody was processed and issued a subpoena. There was no trouble," explained a Linview man, who said, "all the chips used in the game and an old crap table were confiscated along with some money in his pocket." He declined to reveal the exact amount but said he was given a receipt by federal authorities.

**HOPKINS SAID** no arrests were made but 30 subpoenas were issued after double-barreled raids on two Linview area locations during the night. About forty persons, including a woman, were reported at the vacant house on FM 220, the old Jefferson road, across from a golf course.

...."It was a very, very unusually large crowd," said one participant, who declined to be named. Neither he nor others present was arrested.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"We usually shoot craps out there once or twice a week. It's an invitation-only affair, but I didn't know but about 10 or 12 of the people present. Some were spectators, some were playing."

**"WE'VE NEVER HAD** any trouble. It's just a good, friendly game. A lot of people like to shoot craps, and it's just a place to get together," he said.

The man, middle aged, said though he'd never seen some of the people there before, he thought they were all residents of the immediate Linview area.

'No, there weren't any people from Shreveport or Dallas,' he emphasized. "It was just local people."

**A NEARBY RESIDENT**, who declined to reveal her name, said a few cars had been noticed at the house during the daytime, but she said neither she nor her husband had seen an unusually large number there at any time.

"We're pretty old and we seldom go outside at night," she said. Last night, however, she said her son was home and saw a car with a revolving light on its roof outside the house about 11:30p.m.

"We've never heard any disturbances down there," she said.

The place where the raided house is located is under lease by a stockman who lives in the neighborhood. ....There is a vacant trailer house parked in a pasture immediately behind the residence.

"It's amazing what you can read in the papers. It looks as if somebody got caught up with. I liked the part where the Sheriff says: 'I don't like Grabe County being compared with Fannin County' and 'I've never been there and I don't know anything about it,' and the clincher, 'but if there are any illegal activities-we'll investigate them.'"

"Doesn't that Sheriff remind you of an ostrich, with his head in the sand until something happens, and then takes his head out of the sand and looks around like nothing has happened?" asked Marissa.

"That's exactly the way he was acting. Of course, I think that Texas Ranger had his head in the sand also."

"There is one more item in the paper that should be interesting. It's about the trial going on in Tyler concerning the Severnson drug trial."



**TEN SENTENCED ON DRUG CHARGES**

**Informant Testifies In ET Drug Traffic**

**By Jeb Grantham**

**Staff Writer**

Tyler-Ten people that were indicted on federal charges of operating a methamphetamine drug ring in the Klimore area were sentenced to prison terms ranging from six months to 15 years. The 11<sup>th</sup> defendant, Weldon Severnson Sr., was in another courtroom, in a separate trial after his first court appointed attorney, Bick Flores was "fired" by Severnson when Severnson discovered that he was passing on information to the prosecutors. Of course, Flores and the prosecutors denied this, but Severnson was appointed another attorney, Olin Hall, to defend him.

The sentences were handed down by federal judge Wally Stargell.

Weldon Severnson's case is being heard by federal judge Raymond Pasco.

In that trial, informants testified against Severnson. Defense attorney Olin Hall claims, however, that the defendant was entrapped by law officers and drug task force agents in retaliation for accusations of misconduct Severnson was lodging against them.

During cross-examination of a female witness, she confirmed that she had heard Weldon Severnson and his sister, and others, were gathering information on the killing of Severnson's nephew and the Kinney Fine Chicken murders.

She said she also heard Severnson's allegations that task force officers were drinking alcohol and using drugs with female informants, and his claims of sexual misconduct by the officers.

Hall told Judge Pasco that he was contending in Severnson's defense that law officers "attempted to set him up to completely discredit him" because of those allegations. Hall also claimed that the defendant was entrapped by government informants and overzealous law officers as revenge for accusations Severnson made against the officers.

After being recruited as an informant for the Drug Enforcement Administration, Ms. Karnie Meeks gave testimony that was not to the liking of the prosecution. Judge Pasco permitted the defense attorney to



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

call Karnie Meeks, daughter of Kinney Fine Chicken murder victim, Minnie Talley, to the witness stand.

As an informant for the Drug Enforcement Administration. Ms. Meeks said that she was paid more than \$5,000 to "set Weldon Severnson up."

"They had this thing about the Severnsons," she said. "They said no matter what it took to get him, they were going to do it to shut him up."

Ms. Meeks retracted testimony she gave to a federal grand jury earlier in which she said she saw Severnson pick up drugs and money from his son, Weldon Jr.

While clutching a transcript of her grand jury testimony, federal prosecutor Ruben Silas reminded Ms. Meeks of one passage in which she said Weldon Severnson "gave dope to Weldon Jr. to give to his little girls, he called them dope whores."

...."I remember reading that testimony," Ms. Meeks said, "and I was under the influence of drugs when I gave that testimony."

Pasco then interjected to ask her if she was saying she "testified falsely before the grand jury."

"You said things to the grand jury you knew at the time were not true, is that your testimony today?" the judge asked. "Yes sir," Ms. Meeks answered.

"Gene Perry and Lyle Farmer (drug task force officers) coached me," she continued. "They told me the questions they (grand jury) were going to ask me and they told me how to answer and what to say. The night before I was to appear before the grand jury, Farmer, Perry and two federal prosecutors visited me in a motel room, furnished by the federal government, and coached me. I was extremely nervous and was given some marijuana by DEA agent Farmer. That made me relax and they told me what would be asked, and how I should answer. I knew that I would have a tough time getting through the session with the grand jury, and so did Farmer, so he gave me some more drugs to help me through the next day. This wasn't the first time he had gave me drugs. He also told me he had access to any kind of drug that I might want."

After attorneys finished questioning Ms. Meeks, Pasco asked her if there was anything about her previous testimony that she "wished to change."



When she said there was nothing she wished to change, Pasco told deputy U.S. Marshal Bill Klecko, "Mr. Klecko, this witness is not excused." Ms. Meeks was then taken to the marshal's office where she was charged with perjury.

Following an immediate hearing before a federal magistrate, Ms. Meeks was released on \$5,000 unsecured bond. If convicted, she could be sentenced to a maximum five years in prison and fined \$2,000.

Despite surprise testimony in which a government witness said she lied to a grand jury while under the influence of drugs, a federal jury convicted a Klimore resident, Weldon Severnson, of conspiracy and drug charges. He will be sentenced later by judge Pasco, and face a maximum penalty of 20 years and a \$1 million fine on each of the three counts.

"How many times have you heard me say, "If they want you, they will get you, even if they have to fabricate evidence and give false testimony?"

## **CHAPTER 13**

It was tough going back to work after the days off. He was assigned to the south zone and decided to stop by the Klimore PD to catch up on the latest happenings, as no one at the Sheriffs Department volunteered information. He was talking to Sgt. Monroe when the local newspaper was brought in by an officer.

"There should be something in the paper about the Kinney Fine Chicken murders, as I heard that they, the news media, was summoned to a news conference." Sgt. Monroe handed the paper to Jinkx. "I have to go check on something in the field, so when you finish with the paper, leave it on the sergeant's desk, OK?"

"Sure will. You sure you don't want to read it first?"

"I'm sure. I'll see you later, Jinkx."

"OK, Sarge, see you later." He opened the paper. Yep, there was an article about the murders.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

### **DA Confident of Kinney Fine Chicken Indictment 20 Subpoenaed To Appear When Hearing Begins Tuesday on Klimore Slayings**

**By Ada Jensen  
Staff Writer**

....The Kinney Fine Chicken slaying case goes to the grand jury Tuesday, and District Attorney Kline Fortson is optimistic.

"I feel confident grand jurors will have the opportunity to return one or more indictments this time. And I think they will feel comfortable doing this," Fortson said.

The investigation stalled until Fortson asked the attorney general's office to enter the case.

Among those that have been subpoenaed are former Senator John Mallory and his son, John Mallory Jr. The senior Mallory has said that he will appear before the grand jury.

Jinkx thought to himself. "That's a start. I still say that there will be no convictions. Maybe not even an indictment." He looked at other headlines, and there was one concerning the Severnson conviction.

### **Minimum Term Assessed In Drug Trial**

**By Ada Jensen  
Staff Writer**

A Tyler federal judge sentenced Weldon Severnson Sr. to 12 years, seven months in prison on his conviction.

U.S. District Judge Raymond Pasco sentenced Severnson to the lowest number of months in the penalty range within the new sentencing guidelines. The range within the new guidelines was 151-188 months.

Pasco also placed Severnson on three years-supervised release after the sentence, another feature of the new guidelines.

....When asked by Pasco if he had anything to say to the court, Severnson replied, "The first thing is, I'm not guilty. I was set up."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

363

Severnson went on to describe how taped recordings were not played and witnesses were not called by Hall whom he said would have cleared him.

After the sentencing, this reporter talked to Olin Hall, Severnson's court appointed attorney. He stated that he intended to appeal and stated that the recommendation for an oral argument before the Appellate court is that: "This is a hotly contested drug conspiracy case involving some factually complex allegations of governmental misconduct relating to the case agents' motives for seeking arrest, indictment, and conviction of Weldon Severnson Sr.; the case agents; alleged motives; and then the government's bad faith indictment with the effect of dramatically expanding the scope of uncharged misconduct of Weldon Severnson Sr. to be introduced by the government.

In addition, the complexity of the defensive theories in highly unusual factual circumstances and the wholesale admission of numerous acts of uncharged misconduct call for a close reevaluation of Circuit precedents to the peculiar facts of this case. That is the reason for an oral argument in the appeal process."

"Questions to be examined are: ....A. Did the district court abuse its discretion in admitting numerous, repeated instances of prior uncharged misconduct against Weldon Severnson Sr. where the probative value was substantially outweighed by the prejudicial impact? B. Did the district court deny Weldon Severnson Sr.'s right to confrontation by refusing to allow the cross-examination of some of the DEA agents concerning their personal misconduct, where the misconduct was relevant to the agents' bias and motive for testifying falsely and inducing others to testify falsely? C. Did the district court err in admitting copies of tape recordings and transcripts of the tape recordings over defense objection, where the government failed to lay proper foundation for the original microcassette tape recordings? D. Did the court err in applying the sentencing guidelines by incorrectly assessing criminal history points for a conviction outside the relevant time period?"

....Weldon Severnson Sr.'s defensive theory was that the law enforcement officers set out to involve him in a drug conspiracy in order to discredit allegations that he (Severnson) had made publicly concerning some improprieties committed by various East Texas law enforcement



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

officials, some of whom were in charge of or actively involved in this investigation. Severson also urged that agents' methods in setting up the investigation, using informants, and procuring his arrest constituted governmental misconduct and thereby violated Severson's due process of law.

Evidence from law enforcement officials called by the government and also defense witnesses showed that Severson and his sister had become actively involved in investigating the as-yet-unsolved murder of the sister's son. Although not conceded, it was uncontradicted that Severson and his sister had subsequently begun to investigate the still-unsolved multiple murders at the Kinney Fine Chicken Restaurant in East Texas, as well as other unsolved crimes.

Furthermore, a sheriff's deputy confirmed that Severson bonded out several individuals arrested for crimes, and the defense then suggested that Severson then took some of those individuals to the Sheriff's office to give information regarding various offenses.

Lead case agents Farmer and Perry were aware that Severson and his sister had made many complaints to their superiors in Washington, and had accused agent Perry, and his partner agent Farmer, of numerous improprieties with female informants. More specifically, the preferred examination of witnesses concerned allegations made by Severson that agents Perry and Farmer had engaged in sexual relations with female informants, and that they had allowed those informants, who were minors, to drink alcohol and smoke marijuana in their presence. Indeed, the accusations, if proved and made public, would likely embarrass the agents and the agencies employing them; perhaps subject the agents to disciplinary action or prosecution, and then arguably jeopardize the investigations in which the agents and the offending informants were involved. And, accordingly, the probability that the agents would be motivated to act against their accuser by setting him up, testifying falsely against him, and inducing informants to do so as well would be increased too.

Pursuant to the district court's order granting the government's motion in limine with respect to references to the alleged personal involvement of DEA Task Force officers with informants, Severson's



counsel made and offer of proof in chambers of the expected substance of the testimony of defense witness Karnie Meeks.

Specifically, witness Meeks was prepared to testify that she had been a paid informant for law enforcement; that she became an informant under threat of having charges filed against her; that she had seen another informant have several sexual relationships with agent Farmer; that she herself had had sex with agents Perry and Farmer; that agents Perry and Farmer allowed her to drink alcohol and smoke marijuana in their presence; that the agents told her they would do anything they could to protect their bosses from charges made by Severnson and would do anything to get a case on Severnson; that agents Perry and Farmer told her how to testify before the grand Jury; and that agents Perry and Farmer had told her numerous times that they would do anything they could to set him up because he had been making accusations against them.

Following the offer of proof, the district court permitted witness Meeks to testify about the statements made by the agents that they were going to set up Severnson and about being told how to make statements up against the people the agents needed a witness to testify about. However, the district court excluded any testimony about the agents' alleged personal misconduct with the female informants.

During the appeal process we will contend that the direct testimony of the agents' personal misconduct should have been admitted, either as evidence of the agents' bias, or as evidence of prior acts relevant to motive.

For the same reasons as with the refused cross-examination of the agents concerning their alleged misconduct, Ms. Karnie Meeks direct testimony about such conduct would establish the genuineness, the validity, of the agents' bias towards Severnson, their motive to testify falsely about whether they set Severnson up, and their motive to induce others to testify falsely. Moreover, such evidence would have seriously undermined the agents' posture that they did not take Severnson's accusation of misconduct seriously, by revealing the seriousness of the misconduct alleged and providing direct (rather than secondhand) evidence of the truth of those allegations.

"There are other factors that will be in the appeal, but I elaborated on the most significant factor, the misconduct of agents Farmer and Perry,



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

which to me is sickening. And I want the public to know how some, and I say some, police officers gain an indictment and conviction," said the defense attorney.

....At that instant Sgt. Monroe came back and approached Jinkx. "Anything interesting in the paper?"

"A couple of articles. Your man, Gene Perry, on loan to the DEA and involved with Lyle Farmer from the Sheriffs Department, have their names in the paper concerning the Severnson drug investigation. Looks like they may have gone a little too far in their investigation. Sex with the informants, giving them drugs and alcohol. Real good publicity, don't you think?"

"Something else I heard and will add to the speculation. I heard that both of them failed a urinalysis for drugs. They got a little carried away, didn't they?" asked the Sgt.

"I think it's routine now, Sgt.. Pretty good publicity for the Klimore PD and Grabe County Sheriffs Department, isn't it? I had heard earlier that they had flunked the piss test. What does your chief have to say about it, or does he know?"

"I heard that he was pondering the thought of whether to let Perry go, or not. I really haven't heard what his decision is."

"Well, I'm going to hit the streets and see what I can run into. Maybe it will be quiet the rest of the night. I'll see you later."

\*\*\*\*\*

The Linview newspaper carried about the same story of the Severnson drug trial, with the exception of the transcript of Karnie Meek's.

### KLIMORE MAN CONVICTED ON DRUG CHARGES

By Jeb Grantham  
Staff Writer

Tyler-----A Klimore man was convicted on three counts of an indictment arising from a drug raid.

HUSH L

Weldon Sever  
four days of testin  
Severnson ha  
investigating the  
Restaurant in K  
complains about  
He claimed t  
him to discredit  
paid in excess o  
stand and gave  
testimony, and  
DEA agent Lyl  
the Kinney Fi  
testimony of K

1 THE  
2 briefly fo  
3 and then  
4 Mr.  
5 Mr.  
6  
7 (W  
8  
9  
10 after bo  
11 truth a  
12  
13  
14 BY M  
15 Q W  
16 and th



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

367

Weldon Severnson Sr. was convicted by jurors after hearing almost four days of testimony.

Severnson has built his defense around his claim that he was investigating the slayings of five people in the Kinney Fine Chicken Restaurant in Klimore, and officers are upset because he frequently complains about them.

He claimed they filed drug charges against him to wrongfully convict him to discredit him. A surprise witness, Karnie Meeks, who had been paid in excess of \$5000 as an informant, turned around on the witness stand and gave conflicting testimony about her previous grand jury testimony, and added a little spice to her testimony when she said that DEA agent Lyle Farmer was partly responsible for her mother's death in the Kinney Fine Chicken murders in Klimore. I have obtained sealed testimony of Karnie Meeks and offer her testimony, in part, in this article.

**SEALED TESTIMONY OF KARNIE MEEKS  
TAKEN FROM VOL. VIII, PP 1100-1123  
TY-()-5-CR**

1100

1 THE COURT: I have decided to reopen the evidence  
2 briefly for you to hear some short additional testimony  
3 and then we'll proceed with the arguments.

4 Mr. Hall, do you wish to question this witness?

5 Mr. Hall: Yes.

6  
7 (Witness previously testified.)

8  
9 Karnie Meeks

10 after being duly sworn to tell the truth, the whole  
11 truth and nothing but the truth, testified as follows:

12  
13 DIRECT EXAMINATION

14 BY MR. HALL:

15 Q Will you state your name for the court, the jury  
16 and the record please, ma'am?



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

17 A My name is Karnie Meeks.

18 Q Where do you live or reside?

19 A In Klimore, Texas.

20

21

22

23 Q Do you know Gene Perry, the gentlemen seated  
24 here (indicating) to my right?

25 A Yes, sir.

1101

1 Q And do you know Lyle Farmer who works for the  
2 Grabe County Sheriff's Department and also with Mr.  
3 Perry?

4 A Yes, sir, I do.

5 Q Ms. Meeks, it's my understanding that you  
6 became an informant working with Mr. Perry and Mr.  
7 Farmer, is that correct?

8 A Yes, sir.

9 Q Since that time have they paid you in excess of  
10 \$5000?

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q Did you have few or many occasions to be  
13 traveling around with Perry and Mr. Farmer?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q Well, would you say few or many?

16 A Many.

17 Q Did you ever hear them in your presence discuss  
18 Weldon Severnson Sr.?

19 A Yes, sir, many times.

20 Q And did they ever in your presence discuss that  
21 they would like to set Weldon Severnson up?

22 A Yes, sir.

23 Q And did they from time to time request your  
24 attendance in attempting to do that?

25 A Yes, sir.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

369

1102

1 Q Did they ever call upon you to testify in any  
2 proceedings?

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q And did they ever discuss with you as to how you  
5 should testify and what you should testify about?

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q Did they ever ask you or request that you tell  
8 things other than the truth?

9 A Yes, sir.

**CROSS EXAMINATION**

1107

11 Q You would want our police officers to do their  
12 job and get after drug dealers, I would hope.

13 A Yes, sir, I would. Because of that reason—

14 because my mother was killed over a drug—over drugs,  
15 and I want my mama's murder cleared up because Weldon,  
16 when I first met him, he approached me and told me, he  
17 said, "I want to find out who killed your Mama,  
18 Karnie," and I said "I want to," that's what this  
19 whole deal was about.

1108

12 Q And they're not picking on these people just  
13 because they're innocent people who are minding their  
14 own business. But rather picking on them because  
15 they're drug dealers.

16 A Well, the particular officers that were  
17 investigating this organization was—they were no  
18 better than the Severnson's themselves.

1112

11 THE COURT: Are you telling me that you  
12 testified falsely in front of the Grand Jury?

13 THE WITNESS: At the time I was told what to say



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

14 and how to say it in front of the Grand Jury.

15 THE COURT: Did you make statements to the Grand  
16 Jury that you knew at the time were not true? Is that  
17 your testimony today?

18 THE WITNESS: Yes, sir.

1113

1 Well, Ron, (Federal Prosecutor) Gene Perry and  
2 Lyle Farmer had coached me. They asked me—I asked  
3 them what they were going to ask me in there. They  
4 told me what the questions they were going to ask me.  
5 They discussed them with another man—

6 Q Haley Pines, Grand Jury Foreman?

7 A —Haley Pines, and they told me what they were  
8 going to ask me and how I should answer it and what to say.

1119

3 Q Ruben Silas (Federal Prosecutor) Well, the  
4 reason I asked you about fear, Ms. Meeks, is do you  
5 remember being asked by the Grand Jury, or I think a  
6 Grand Juror asked you, well, no, actually I think it  
7 was Mr. Pines on page 44. "Are you scared of the  
8 Severnsons," in which you replied—originally replied,  
9 "well, no, I know they ain't going to do nothing to  
10 me," and then you said, "they might, I don't know.  
11 They might have somebody else do something to me,"

12 Do you remember telling the Grand Jury that?

13 A No, sir, I don't.

14 Q Could you have told the Grand Jury that?

15 A I probably could have. I told you before that I  
16 was under the influence of drugs when I appeared  
17 before the Grand Jury. Thanks to DEA agents Perry and  
18 Farmer.

19 MR. SILAS: I have no further questions, Your  
20 Honor.

21 THE COURT: Any questions, Mr. Hall?



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

371

22 MR. HALL: No, sir, Your Honor, but my associate  
23 has some questions for this witness.

24 MR. BOLGER: Just one, Your Honor.

25

**CROSS EXAMINATION**

1120

1 BY MR. BOLGER

2 Q Ms. Meeks, if you fear anybody right now, who  
3 would you fear?

4 A The Federal Government.

5 Q Why?

6 A Because I know for a fact—well, I'm not—I  
7 know they were involved in having my mom killed,  
8 because my mother took a recipe that belonged to Skoe  
9 Sams, (Allie Sams) my best friend, brought to her  
10 while I was locked up in that girl's home and wanted  
11 her to make copies of it. Okay, Lyle Farmer—my mother  
12 brought that to Lyle Farmer and she found it—well,  
13 after she made copies of it, she brought it to Lyle  
14 Farmer and they were supposed to be investigating it  
15 and everything, okay, and it came from Dick Glen's  
16 house and he's involved with the Federal Government,  
17 and that got my mother killed. And I don't want them  
18 to do the same to me. I'm scared if I went to jail  
19 right now they would kill me because I know certain  
20 things about them.

21 MR. BOLGER: I have no further questions

22 MR. SILAS: Just a couple, Your Honor.

23 RECROSS EXAMINATION

24 BY MR SILAS:

25 Q Your mother was killed in the Kinney Fine

1121

1 Chicken killings?

2 A Yes, sir, she was.

3 Q Are you trying to tell us that the Federal



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

4 Government killed your mother.

5 A Well, I know Dick Glen was working for them, and  
6 he had this recipe, okay-

7 Q Who is Dick Glen? I heard the whisper. I mean,  
8 do you know who Dick Glen is?

9 A Everybody knows who Dick Glen is.

10 Q I'm sorry. I don't know. Is he a Federal Agent?

11 A I'm not sure what kind of agent he is, but I do  
12 know he does work for the Federal Government.

13 Q Well, I can tell you I don't know. But the  
14 question is: Are you saying that the Federal Agents  
15 went in and shot the people at the Kinney Fine—

16 A No, I'm saying that they had it done.

17 Q You're saying that the Federal Government hired  
18 people to have that done?

19 A That's what it all comes down to. They had my  
20 mama killed and if they get me in the jail house,  
21 they're going to do the same to me..

22 Q Okay. So, I mean, that's the way you feel right  
23 now?

24 A That's right.

25 Q Ms. Meeks, have you got back on drugs since—

(Last entry)

1122

1 A No, sir.

2 Q You're not on drugs at all?

3 A You've seen me when I was here before. I didn't

4 look nothing like this. See what drugs does to you. Thank you, Lyle.

At this time the judge questioned Karnie Meeks about her perjured testimony to the grand jury under the guidance of federal prosecutors and DEA agents Gene Perry and Lyle Farmer. She was remanded into the custody of the U.S. Marshal's Service, and after a brief appearance before a U.S. Magistrate, she was released from custody under a \$5000 unsecured bond.



A week had passed and there were more articles in the newspaper concerning the Kinney Fine Chicken murders, the FBI and Grabe County, and an article about Karnie Meeks and her arrest for perjury before the federal grand jury. Jinkx and Marissa read the news at the Whistle Stop where they were having breakfast. "When you get the news in episodes it makes you wonder what the next event will be. It's getting pretty heavy with the FBI and the bad guys of Grabe County."

**FBI HITS KLIMORE MOTEL  
HOPKINS DENIES SEEKING INDICTMENTS**

**By Kerrie Wintz  
Staff Writer**

**(ANOTHER ERA)**

This reporter has learned that federal agents had served two subpoenas at Klimore's Pinwheel Motel as they converged on two of the suspected gambling houses near Linview.

When U.S. Attorney Jody Hopkins was asked if agents also served two subpoenas at a Klimore motel, the Pinwheel, Hopkins answered: "Right—at approximately the same time as the raids. "

Hopkins was asked how many and he said "two". He was asked for what and he replied "just asking them to appear before the (federal) grand jury."

The U.S. Attorney was asked if he could reveal any specific charges. He said: "No."

Both the District Attorney and the Sheriff said they were not aware of who was subpoenaed at the Pinwheel or for what.

"I do not know who the subpoenas were issued to, or how that ties into their (FBI) investigation," the District Attorney said.—and the Sheriff added: "I'm not aware of that at all. That hasn't been called to my attention."

When asked if there were any illegal activities now at the Pinwheel, the District Attorney said: "We have received confirming information from witnesses in other cases concerning illegal aliens there." He said those witnesses spoke of other illegal activities.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

The Sheriff said his department had trouble in the past and "we used to answer a good many calls of aliens over there at one time."

Hopkins also said that a local radio station had broadcast that the U.S. Attorney's office would seek multiple indictments against several well-known public figures in Grabe County is "without basis for fact"

The broadcast said: U.S. attorney's office will seek multiple indictments against several well-known public figures in Grabe County during a three-month-long grand jury (federal) investigation. The grand jury will hear testimony from the subpoenaed witnesses not only on gambling in the county but also about drug trafficking, prostitution and racketeering. The investigation will ultimately involve not only FBI agents, but also agents from DEA and Internal Revenue.

The radio station operations director stated: "I can assure you that everything broadcast was accurate—but I'm not surprised the U.S. Attorney would not confirm."

"There is nothing that's came out of this office as to who, or what, indictments will be sought" Hopkins said.

The District Attorney or Sheriff said their offices have no county or state investigation under way at the Pinwheel or the suspected gambling houses—but both insisted they would work with the FBI and U.S. Attorney's office if asked.

### **GRABE COUNTY SHERIFF AND COUNTY JUDGE CLAIM NO WRONG**

**By Jeb Grantham**  
**Staff Writer**

#### **(ANOTHER ERA)**

The Grabe County Sheriff and County Judge, in statements issued, said they are unaware of the full extent of federal investigator's probes into alleged illegal activities in the county.

Both have said they have done nothing wrong, nor have they been subpoenaed to appear before a federal grand jury.



But financial records of the Sheriff and County Judge —along with some other high-ranking county figures—have been subpoenaed, an FBI master list shows. This does contradict a statement by U.S. Attorney Jody Hopkins in which he had denied county public figures were under investigation.

The FBI subpoenaed those records late yesterday after Hopkins made his statement.

The Sheriff spoke late yesterday of “false allegations,” and added:

“As the result of the recent coverage by the news media concerning alleged crime in our county, the statements by federal authorities of an investigation and the conversation that naturally follows, I have decided it is in the best interest of all concerned—especially the many who have offered me support and encouragement over the past few weeks—that I make a public response within the near future.”

The Sheriff also said: “I do not know the extent of the current investigation or its purposes, but I assure the people of Grabe County that I have never—nor shall I ever—be a party to any wrong doing.”

“I have never been offered a pay-off for any purpose and I would not tolerate it by anyone in my department. I have responded to every complaint filed with my office and shall continue to do so.”

The Sheriff says he assures the public that his personal and public records and acts “are open to all who wish to investigate them.”

“A subpoena is not now, nor will it be necessary,” the Sheriff said. “I have long held the FBI in high esteem and know that upon completion of its gathering the truth, it will issue a statement that my records are proper and I have conducted myself, as your Sheriff, with a high sense of responsibility and without wrongdoing.”

The Sheriff said he has not been served with a subpoena and I’ll notify you within 10 minutes if they do.”

The County Judge also responded to questions of his financial records being subpoenaed.

“I have no idea what they have in mind or what they (federal authorities) are seeking. I will be happy to cooperate with them in any way. I haven’t been (personally) asked for my records and will be glad to furnish any information they need at any time.”



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

### HOPKINS SAYS LID ON GRABE PROBE

By Ben Hines  
Staff Writer

#### (ANOTHER ERA)

TYLER— In effect what U.S. Attorney Jody Hopkins told a contingent of media representatives here at a press conference was that as far as his office was concerned, the lid on the Grabe County corruption probe—a probe that likely will take several months—was being nailed down.

Hopkins stressed that while the Constitution protects the right of the press to know what is happening, it also protects the rights of the accused.

“The government of the United States obviously cannot be a party to making public what later turn out to be a false accusation and as a result be a party to damaging the reputation of a good citizen” Hopkins said. ....“On occasion, totally innocent records may be given a subpoena. To be served a subpoena is absolutely no indication of guilt of anything. Other than my concern, and it’s a large concern, that the reputation of an innocent citizen does not get tarnished.”

“I’ll just don’t have the time, nor does my staff, to handle all the questions,” he added. “We cannot be put into position of verifying what seems to be true, but later turns out to be untrue and denying what seems to be false and later turns out true,” he said.

Hopkins said the probe, which surfaced with two raids by FBI agents on Grabe County illegal gambling operations will probably continue for a period of time. Hopkins added the government, in its investigation of gambling, drug trafficking and racketeering in Grabe County, will get all information concerning many citizens accused of violations.

He added it would be some time before investigators could determine what information was true and what information was false.

“To an energetic reporter, the real story is not what is going on in my office, but what’s going on in the entire area,” Hopkins said. “When you see something or hear something from one of the media, check with that media if you have any questions about it.”

“In checking, I urge each of you to do it closely since I have been quoted making statements that I absolutely did not make.” he added.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

377

Hopkins told the media that government regulations prohibited him from making public anything more about the investigation until after the grand jury convenes later.

**CHARGES AGAINST INFORMANT IN  
DRUG TRIAL DISMISSED**

**By Jeb Grantham**  
Staff writer

Karnie Meeks, daughter of one of the victims that was killed in the Kinney Fine Chicken murders, Minnie Tally, and who then testified at Severnson's trial that she had lied to the grand jury about drug use among members of the Severnson family. She was charged with perjury after she said she had lied under oath.

Federal prosecutor Raymond Moss said the charges against her had been dismissed because of the difficulty the prosecution would have in proving perjury. This reporter has obtained a copy of the dismissal for public viewing.

**IN THE UNITED STATES DISTRICT COURT  
FOR THE EASTERN DISTRICT OF TEXAS  
TYLER, DIVISION**

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA	~	
VS	~	NO. TY-()-521-M
KARNIE MEEKS	~	

**ORDER FOR DISMISSAL**

Pursuant to Rule 48 (a) of the Federal Rules of Criminal Procedure and by leave of Court endorsed hereon the United States Attorney for the Eastern District of Texas hereby dismisses the complaint against Karnie Meeks, defendant herein.

Respectfully submitted,



# HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

BUBBA WILKINS  
UNITED STATES ATTORNEY

Raymond L. Moss

Assistant U.S. Attorney

Leave of Court is granted for the filing of the foregoing dismissal.

( ) - ( ) - ( ) HARLEY MC KINNON

DATE

UNITED STATES MAGISTRATE

In a telephone interview with Karnie Meeks she stated that it was not a surprise that the charge was dropped because she told the court and the federal prosecutors that she would gladly get on the witness stand and disclose to the federal government and the public that: Federal agents Lyle Farmer, Gene Perry, and others, did lie to the grand jury and the trial court; and did provide drugs and alcohol to her and others, who were minors; and was obsessed with "setting up" the Severnson family and others; and did indeed have sex with some of the female informants; and induced informants to also give false testimony to the federal grand jury and trial jury.

She said she overheard federal authorities saying "they didn't want her on the witness stand running her mouth about how this case was mishandled altogether and the activities of the agents' becoming public knowledge," so they said the dismissal was because it would be hard to prosecute.

Jinkx looked at Marissa. "This is a shame that sworn peace officers, and federal authorities, would stoop this low, but as you can see, it happens. Strictly individualism.

\*\*\*\*\*

....Over two weeks had passed and Jinkx had tiptoed around supervision, and they in turn had not bothered him. He did his job and what he was told to do. More articles appeared in the Linview and Klimore newspapers. One article caught his eye, and it pertained to Grabe County Commissioner Dane McBree, and was in the Klimore paper.



**County Road Error Corrected**

**By Sarah Watson**

Part of a road that was on a list of roads to be worked by the county has now been taken off the list, thanks to a concerned citizen's bringing the matter to the attention of the District Attorney's office.

....Jake Fain said that Commissioner Dane McBree's road crew laid driveways on part of Hadley and Perkview Roads in North Klimore.

McBree worked only on connecting parts, not on driveways or roads for a total of \$500 or less, the Grabe County Assistant District Attorney said.

"Commissioner McBree was doing what Commissioner McBree said he was doing, working on county roads, pursuant to his list at the time," she said.

However, the county was inadvertently but not illegally doing work on city property.

"We're grateful to Jake Fain for pointing out the mistake, but it's not anything that will be prosecuted criminally at all," Ms. Jewel said.

Even the maps that the Precinct, County Engineer and the district attorney's office had to go by were definitely in error, maps prepared by professional draftsmen.

"Yes, we'll change it, cause the way I read this, there's going to be 250 feet perpendicular from Perkview Road that's going to be that particular section Hadley Road that we'll take off but from that point on out for the rest of the 2/10 of the road, we'll still work on it and if we work on Hadley Road from now on, it will take the City of Klimore making a request to do," Ms. Jewel said. "And yes, we'll ask them to pay for the materials until and if any of our contracts are changed, unless the commissioners make a special court change for some reason."

The county officials have since learned differently.

After researching the records at the county auditors office, McBree used county materials (asphalt) in the paving of several driveways and even onto private property, an electrical firm, and did not bill the city of Klimore for the materials. The Grabe County regulations states that "cities shall pay for the materials, and that the county shall furnish only the equipment and labor." However, Commissioner McBree furnished everything. That was the complaint of Jake Fain.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

"I'm glad that Jake Fain brought it to our attention, because it helps us to correct a mistake, but it still doesn't make it illegal," Ms. Jewel said.

"When Klimore annexed the area in question, somehow, all of the proper officials were not notified," Ms. Jewel said. "It wasn't an illegal act, it was a mistake," she added.

Ms. Jewel failed to mention that the changes that were mentioned happened over 14 years ago.

### **JURY BEGINS KINNEY FINE CHICKEN PROBE WITNESSES RETURN TODAY**

**By Jeb Grantham**  
**Staff Writer**

John Mallory Jr. played hide and seek with reporters, but would say little except that he will return today to testify as a Rashe County grand jury begins the second day of looking into the Kinney Fine Chicken murders .

Mallory and his father, former State Sen. John Mallory, have both appeared at the Rashe County Courthouse, but neither was called to testify yesterday.

Yesterday was the first time a grand jury has heard testimony about the killing of five people who were kidnapped and shot.

The front door to the district attorney's office was covered with pages from the Wall Street Journal to provide witnesses with some privacy from more than a score of reporters.

But the media caught glimpses of witnesses as they left the area of the grand jury room, and the junior Mallory appeared uncomfortable with all the attention he was getting.

At one point, he left the district attorney's office and headed for the elevator, only to go back inside when a television reporter equipped with a two way radio alerted cameramen that Mallory was coming down .

He soon headed to the elevator again, only to duck into a nearby restroom when again confronted with the reporter with the radio.



He got some respite when District Judge Dan Rogers ordered all cameras off the third floor of the courthouse while he was holding court.

At the end of the day he strode quickly out of the district attorney's office and told photographers, "Y'all come on. You're going to follow me anyway."

He hurriedly descended three floors of stairs, went to his vehicle in the parking lot and declined to answer questions.

More talkative was Lana Yanskia (now Lana Rowan) of Klimore, who at the time of the slayings was known as "The Tiger Lady" because of the tiger cub she raised as a pet.

She said in an interview that at the time of the slayings she was selling the drug methamphetamine and had traded drugs in exchange for jewelry which had been taken from the Kinney Fine Chicken victims.

Rowan said she turned the jewelry over to Texas Ranger Gene Ellis, who was also called to testify.

She said she was arrested and sentenced to prison after federal authorities intercepted telephone calls she made to her supplier, Wake Samples, who was sentenced to 18 years in prison. She said she has since gotten out of the drug business.

The Texas Attorney General met in Tyler with the relatives of the victims to brief them on the investigation, said his spokesman.

The relatives spoke highly of the attorney general's office for taking over the case at the request of the Rashe County District Attorney.

One surviving relative said, "I place full confidence in the attorney general's office."



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

*The rest of this book is dedicated to those who have tried so hard, and professionally, to bring justice to those that have been/are corruptive, and who have brought shame and humiliation to the undeserving.*

### EPILOGUE THE GRABE COUNTY FBI INVESTIGATION CHRONICLES AND THE KINNEY FINE CHICKEN MURDERS CHRONICLES

#### Federal Grand Jury Opens Hearing On Grabe County

By Ben Hines  
Staff Writer

#### (ANOTHER ERA)

More than 50 witnesses crowded the fourth-floor hallway of the Tyler Federal Building as grand jury testimony began into alleged illegal activities in Grabe County.

The 26-member grand jury is expected to hear testimony the rest of this week into possible illegal gambling, drug trafficking, prostitution and racketeering in the county.

The federal investigation of Grabe County surfaced following late-night raids on two gambling establishments by FBI agents.

Those present were mainly persons subpoenaed by FBI agents at a North Linview location.

No high-ranking Grabe County public officials or figures were present at this session.

The alleged operator of the North Linview location, Robby Costas, was present and was expected to testify. The owner of the Hanger-on Lounge, Vinney Tolbert, was absent at this session.

The Hanger-on located four miles South of Linview on U.S. 25, was the second location raided by federal agents.

Assistant U.S. Attorney Jobe Bickman said the grand jury would probably continue hearing testimony the remainder of this week. He said

## HUSH LITTLE (REWIND)

a possibility existed that through next week.

Bickman, in an early special grand jury session

Bickman seemed very indictments would be returned the week. However, he told

Sources in Tyler speculated might result in additional

In a session earlier, testimony stemming from bad checks illegal alien transportation

These indictments will

SHERIFF  
HAD

By Walt Hamby  
Staff Writer

The U.S. Attorney said he had bank records but his testimony learned.

And the U.S. Attorney said he had records for eight months

The U.S. attorney said he had the federal grand jury records on corruption.

But the sheriff said he had an audit—and without

He said he would like to

I received a notice that records of my long absence late last year.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

383

a possibility existed that the grand jury would also continue its hearings through next week.

Bickman, in an earlier interview, alluded to the probability of a special grand jury session later followed by another session.

Bickman seemed very confident at the outset of this session that indictments would be returned against some of the gamblers by the end of the week. However, he took a wait-and-see approach to the proceedings.

Sources in Tyler speculated the testimony expected in this session might result in additional witnesses being subpoenaed.

In a session earlier, the grand jury returned 24 indictments on charges stemming from bad checks, illegal liquor sales, income tax evasion and illegal alien transportation.

These indictments were not connected with the Grabe County probe.

### **SHERIFF SAYS GOVERNMENT'S HAD RECORDS FOR MONTHS**

**By Walt Hamby  
Staff Writer**

The U.S. Attorney's Office not only has the Grabe County Sheriff's bank records but his telephone records have been subpoenaed, it was learned.

And the U.S. Internal Revenue Service has had the Sheriff's bank records for eight months, the sheriff revealed.

The U.S. attorney's hold on bank records and phone calls is part of the federal grand jury investigation into some alleged Grabe County corruption.

But the sheriff said the IRS asked for his bank records last spring for an audit—and without subpoenaing them.

He said he would have done the same for federal investigators.

I received a notice from my phone carrier yesterday in my mailbox that records of my long distance phone calls had been subpoenaed as of late last year.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

The sheriff had said earlier he would have signed over his bank records if asked by the U.S. Attorney's Office, and he said of phone records also.

"They would not have had to subpoena those. I would have signed a waiver for those too."

"The U.S. attorney's office and FBI did not have to subpoena my bank records. I had signed a waiver last spring for the IRS and all of my bank records."

The sheriff was asked if he has a reply to a televised broadcast several days ago in which a silhouetted blackout man told reporters the sheriff would accept \$150 a week to let the man run a game (gambling) wide open.

"I don't want to get into any of that," said the sheriff. That business in not going to hold any water. I have no other comments on that."

....The sheriff did label the federal grand jury investigation as "political."

"This is just politics—just plain old politics that instigated this."

When asked to specify what kind of politics, the sheriff said: "I don't want to get into any of that right now. My life's an open book. I have nothing to hide, whatsoever."

....The sheriff said, as earlier, "I will still work with any federal agency, upon their request, to forward any investigation here in Grabe County, as I have done in the past."

----Assistant U.S. Attorney Jobe Bickman has said the grand jury is expected to adjourn at the end of this week until a special session is called later.

The jury has heard testimony from about 30 witnesses this week. About the same number are expected to testify by the time the session ends late Friday.

Bickman said he doesn't expect any indictments against persons from Grabe County by the time the panel adjourns this week.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

385

It was divulged earlier, bank records, land deals, and phone records of some Grabe County public figures and officials are in evidence the grand jury is hearing.

### **GRABE OFFICIALS ASKED TO APPEAR BEFORE PANEL PROBING CORRUPTION**

**By Kerrie Wintz**  
**Staff Reporter**

Several Grabe County citizens and top elected county officials may receive letters today requesting they voluntarily appear before the federal grand jury in Tyler that is investigating prostitution, bribery, extortion, drug trafficking and misuse of public office, this newspaper learned today.

Sources indicate two of the county's top officials, and as many as four, have been asked to testify before the federal panel. Those receiving letters are targets of the investigation that has been on going since federal agents raided two gambling operations, sources say.

The letters invite each recipient to appear before the grand jury beginning the next session. However, according to sources close to the investigation, before any indictments are handed down, they all will be hand-delivered to the Justice Department, in Washington for review.

More than 100 persons have already testified before the grand jury in three sessions of the federal panel.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

### **NO REASON GIVEN SHERIFF SKIPS FEDERAL GRAND JURY SESSION**

**By Ben Hines**  
**Staff Writer**

Tyler—Apparently the Grabe County Sheriff decided to stay home Monday as the federal grand jury continued probing Grabe County affairs reconvened for its fourth session.

The sheriff was unavailable this morning for comment

The sheriff two weeks ago received a letter from the federal panel inviting him to meet with the grand jury to discuss alleged Grabe County corruption, however, an investigator for the Grabe County department, and a prominent local night club owner, were present for the session.

Testimony, if any, given by the two men to the panel is, by law, secret.

Assistant U.S. Attorney Jobe Bickman said the panel will meet for two more weeks, closing this session.

U.S. Attorney Jody Hopkins said indictments should be returned by this session, by the session's ending deadline.

Sources have told this newspaper indictments against a number of Grabe County public officials and they could be returned near month's end or shortly thereafter.

Hopkins said if the indictments are returned, he would expect them to be open.

----Although the sheriff has previously voiced a desire, if not a willingness to meet with the grand jury, the sheriff was not present for sessions Monday.

The sheriff, who was the only Grabe County public official or figure to acknowledge he received one of several letters, had no comment concerning whether he will meet the panel.



**SHERIFF, 16 OTHERS INDICTED**

**By Ben Hines**  
**Staff Writer**

TYLER—The Grabe County Sheriff, two other elected officials and 13 Grabe County residents were indicted Friday as the federal grand jury probed alleged corruption in Grabe County, and will be tried early next month.

Also indicted were Precinct 1 County Commissioner Body Sandifer, Precinct 1 Justice of the Peace Chip Collins, Sheriffs Captain Bubba Rich, former Grabe County Chief Deputy John Callahan, and former Sheriff's Lt. Bubba Bailey.

Others indicted include Hanger-on Lounge owner Vinney Tolbert, Robby Costas, Jake Bonner, Wiley Hines, Chubby Hale, Wiley Sinus, Jim Jefferies, Haley Hobbs and Barbara Temple. Also Marty Haley and Cass Mills.

All persons indicted, with the exception of Rich and Hines, appeared before U.S. District Judge Wallace Steiner, who has set \$5000 personal recognizance bonds on recommendations of the government, Rich, who is presently in Baylor Hospital in Dallas suffering from a pulmonary disorder, and Hines, who is reported ill, will be arraigned at a later date, according to Steiner.

Those present for arraignment signed bond papers in the district clerk's office and were free to leave.

The Sheriff was indicted on four counts. He now faces charges of conspiracy to commit murder, civil rights violations and two counts of facilitating illegal gambling.

Sandifer was indicted on two counts. He faces charges of conspiracy to commit murder and facilitating illegal gambling.

Justice of the Peace Collins was indicted on two counts: Facilitating illegal gambling and racketeering which includes obstruction of justice.

In the conspiracy to commit murder indictment, the Sheriff, Sandifer and Callahan are alleged to have "solicited, devised and implemented the scheme to murder Lenny Barnes, Johnny Mazewsky and Don Amerage several years ago.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

The indictment further states "that the Sheriff met with Dren Holt, a Grabe County Deputy and together they selected a Grabe County Precinct Barn where the killing would take place. The Sheriff instructed Bull Conley and Dirk Silvano, both Grabe County Deputies, that no one was to leave alive from the Grabe County Precinct Barn after Amerage and Mazewsky entered.

"Sandifer did assist Dren Holt, Silvano and Conley in arranging hay bales at the barn after personally taking Bolt, Silvano and Conley to the county barn in his precinct," the indictment further stated.

"The Sheriff did go, pick up, and transport Grover Aikens, another Grabe County Deputy, Silvano and Conley from the Grabe County Barn back to the Grabe County Sheriff's Office after the attempted shooting."

All being acts or threats involving murder, all in violation of Texas Penal Codes," the indictment continues.

The indictment involving Collins, states, ...."Chip Collins did patrol and guard the illegal gambling facilities on the midway at the Grabe County Fair.

...."Sevvy Schiller did pay Bubba Rich and Chip Collins \$300 each as compensation for their services in guarding and patrolling the midway area of the Grabe County Fair, where illegal gambling facilities were located."

...."Collins, an elected Justice of the Peace in Grabe County, did knowingly/willingly accept pecuniary benefits of \$300 from Schiller as consideration that would exercise his discretion as a public servant to allow illegal gambling activities on the midway at the fair" the indictment continues.

...."Also, on a later date Collins did patrol and guard the illegal gambling facilities on the midway at the yearly Grabe County Fair," the indictment continues.

....Callahan is listed on indictments alleging conspiracy to commit murder and to facilitate an illegal gambling business with the Sheriff, Costas and Sandifer.

The indictment reads, "Callahan, as chief deputy sheriff of Grabe County, did knowingly/willingly accept \$300 or more from J.D. Sifford in



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

389

consideration that he would then allow Sifford's business, being the Palaway Motel or the motels club to operate in an unlawful manner."

The indictment against Rich states, "As a deputy sheriff of Grabe County, did knowingly accept a pecuniary benefit of a pistol worth in excess of \$100 from Bubba Jester in consideration that Rich would help Jester obtain a release from the Grabe County Jail."

Also, "On an earlier date, Rich did patrol and guard the illegal gambling facilities at the fair."

Also, "Schiller did pay \$350 as compensation for the services in guarding/patrolling the midway at the fair, where the illegal gambling facilities were located," the indictment continued.

The indictments were the first wave of proceedings culminating a portion of the more that a year-long investigation into Grabe County corruption.

U.S. Attorney Jody Hopkins stressed Friday's indictments were "just he beginning and not the end of the probe."

Hopkins said at least two more phases could be expected with the grand Jury hearing new evidence in the probe later.

The next two phases could also involve other Grabe County elected officials and public figures, sources say.

Members of the so-called shotgun squad that turned government witnesses.

The probe surfaced when approximately 40 federal agents raided the Grabe County establishments in which gambling was allegedly taking place.

Forty persons were at Costa's game the night of the raids.

Informed sources close to the investigation has claimed "on any given evening more that \$500,000 could have changed hands."

When the FBI did eventually raided Costa's game, \$6,300 of the \$10,000 confiscated was retrieved from Costa's pocket.

Had the agents cleaned out all of the patrons, it's estimated nearly \$70,000 could have been confiscated, a source claimed.

Following the raids, the probe was later expanded to include not only the illegal gambling aspect, but prostitution, drug trafficking and racketeering as well, informed sources said.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Throughout the investigation the sheriff has maintained a confidence that he has done nothing wrong. During the investigation, an attorney for the sheriff reportedly discussed with federal prosecutors the possibility of a meeting with the sheriff.

However, the matter was later dropped.

### **INDICTMENT REACTIONS MIXED DISTRICT ATTORNEY CHECKING ON LAW ABOUT ACCUSED KEEPING OFFICE**

**By Walt Hostler  
Staff Writer**

A survey Monday reflected mixed opinions on whether three indicted Grabe County officials should step a-side until federal action against them is completed.

Only one of five persons contacted in a spot survey said he believes the three officials should step down. Some feel they are innocent until proven guilty.

The three officials claim they are innocent and will stay in office.

When the district attorney was contacted on the matter, he said there is a state law concerning elected officials indicted while in office. He said, "I'm doing research on the law and I'll probably be in a position to comment on it later"

### **STATUS OF GRABE DEPUTY TO BE CLEARED**

**By Malt Hostler and  
Ben Hines  
Staff Writers**

A Grabe County sheriff's deputy indicted by a Tyler federal grand jury remained on the job though state law says he should be removed.

The district attorney said that he is "trying to straighten the matter out," and that clarification will come at a news conference tomorrow.



....Meanwhile Deputy Bubba Bailey of the Rashe County Sheriff's Department, a former lieutenant under Rich in the CID unit here, was suspended without pay.

Sheriff Mel Strange in Rashe County suspended Bailey.

The Captain, (Rich) when contacted at his home, said he intends to stay with the department until further notified. "There's no other way to do it-I've got my family to think about"

### **DISTRICT ATTORNEY WON'T TAKE ACTION AGAINST INDICTED OFFICIALS**

**By Walt Hostler  
Staff Writer**

The Grabe County District Attorney said that he will not take steps to remove from office three Grabe County officials indicted by a federal grand jury.

He made it clear his office will withhold removal action unless U.S. Attorney Jody Hopkins provides some harder evidence that indictments charging the three elected officials with varying counts of conspiracy to commit murder, facilitating a gambling business and racketeering.

The district attorney also said state law dictates a county official's removal is automatic if he is convicted of a felony.

"Because an indictment is no evidence of an individual's guilt—and every individual accused of a crime is presumed by the law to be innocent until proven guilty."

....The district attorney said Hopkins told him earlier that at the conclusion of the federal investigation—which Hopkins said last week will continue—any state violations would be turned over to the district attorney's office for prosecution.

....The former Grabe Sheriff's Capt. Bubba Rich, head of the sheriff's criminal investigation division and who was also indicted, resigned from his post today, effective last Friday at 5:00PM.

State law says a deputy, upon indictment, is automatically removed from his job.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

But Frank Talley, the director of the Texas Commission on Law Enforcement and Education, said the removal does not bar the officer from working for other law enforcement agencies.

The sheriff's one page statement says, "At approximately 10:00AM, this day, the district attorney for Grabe County, advised me that in accordance with Article 6869, Vernon's Civil Statutes of the State of Texas, which was enacted in 1929 by the 41<sup>st</sup> Legislature, an indictment for a felony of any deputy sheriff appointed shall operate as a revocation of his appointment. That was my first knowledge of the article and its requirements," the sheriff said.

"I immediately contacted Capt. Rich, who has served as a faithful, dedicated and trustworthy law officer and deputy in this department for approximately seven years, advising him of Article 6869. He at that time gave me notice of his resignation effective last Friday."

When reached, the former deputy, Bubba Bailey, although refusing comment on the indictment, says he feels the suspension law violates his civil rights.

"That law took away my livelihood without due process. It gives the appearance of my being guilty until I can prove I'm innocent," Bailey added.

### **COLLINS WILL RESTRICT JUSTICE OF THE PEACE DUTIES**

**By Ben Hines**  
**Staff Writer**

Justice of the Peace Chip Collins will not perform duties as a JP or magistrate until "he is exonerated on the charges filed against him" in a federal indictment, he said in a prepared statement. In a letter sent to the Grabe County Judge, Collins said, "As you know, I am presently under indictment by a federal grand jury. I am not guilty of any wrong doing with reference to those charges.

"However, because there may exist in the minds of some people who appear before me doubt as to whether I could be fair and impartial in



making a decision concerning their case, and because of my concern about respect for our judicial system, I will not perform any of the duties of Justice of the Peace, or magistrate. until such time as I am exonerated of those charges.

“This action is not in any way intended to reflect my opinion as to the course of action the other elected officials who have been indicted should take.

“I speak only for myself and because of the nature of my duties as a judge and magistrate.”

Larry Wilkins, Collin's attorney in Linview, said the letter was not to be interpreted as Collins stepping down from office.

Collin's responsibilities will be handled by the county's three other justices of the peace.

Sources told this newspaper a complaint was voiced by a Dallas-area judge who saw Collin's alleged gesture during the newscast of a Dallas station covering the arraignments. ....This newspaper also learned the council contacted Wilkins last week concerning the proposed indiscretion, but as yet, neither Collins nor Wilkins would comment concerning the report.

When pressed further about the council's query, Wilkins, who with Collins, met with this reporter, closed the interview stating it was in the best interest of his client not to discuss that particular matter at this time.

The district attorney and county judge issued a joint statement saying that the county will pay Collins pending trial's outcome. The district attorney said in an opinion that state law provides neither the authority to suspend Collin's pay, or appoint a “pro tem” justice of the peace.

The justice of the peace said the day he was indicted, he would not step down because he is not guilty and “I haven't been convicted.”

The county judge said that he will abide by the opinion of the district attorney that the county will pay the JP's salary until the outcome of the trial.

The district attorney says the office of the justice of the peace “is a constitutional one with a constitutionally prescribed term of four years.

“As such, its holder may be removed from his office only with constitutional provisions.”



"Therefore, at the present time, Justice of the Peace Chip Collins, by law, is entitled to the emoluments of that office."

## **CHAPTER 14**

### **GRABE COUNTY CORRUPTION TRIAL GETS UNDERWAY JUDGE WILL CONSIDER MOTION**

**By Ben Hines**  
**Staff Writer**

**TYLER**—After almost 90 minutes of testimony Federal Judge Wiley Watson Jimpson said he would take under advisement a motion to suppress evidence seized in gambling raids in Grabe County.

Jimpson made the statement in a hearing today on a motion filed by Linview Attorney Larry Wilkins, who represents five persons indicted for alleged illegal gambling.

The motion to suppress evidence was made on the basis of a claim that an FBI agent falsely and recklessly made untrue statements in an affidavit for a search warrant for Hanger-on Lounge located on U.S. 25 near Linview.

The motion contends that statements made by FBI agent Norm Dilley, which alleged illegal gambling was being conducted at the Hanger-on Lounge, are false.

Attorneys for both sides argued the applicability of several U.S. Supreme Court rulings including the "staleness doctrine" as it applies to the execution time span from the issuance of a search warrant.

In taking the motion under advisement Judge Jimpson claimed he was unfamiliar with the various points of law, telling the attorneys he would study the cases and make a ruling as to the validity of the motion as soon as possible.

Gambling paraphernalia from the Hanger-on Lounge in the raid is being held by the U.S. Marshals as evidence.



The false part of the affidavit, the motion contends, is a statement which reads: "Affiant (Dilley) has now determined upon informant information received, information supplied by Special Agents Daniel Isopsome, Samuel Soames, Timmy Korrigan, Supervisory Special Agent Wiley Handley and the even affiant's own observations that an illegal gambling game has been conducted on a continuing basis at manger-on Lounge, U.S. 25, Grabe County, Texas."

However, in the motion, Wilkins contend that, according to the affidavit filed by Dilley, the last time a confidential informant told agents alleged illegal gambling was being conducted at the lounge some 43 days prior to the seeking of a search warrant.

"Vinney Tolbert has signed an affidavit contending that he knew Dilley was at the lounge on a particular date, and no gambling of any kind was being conducted." He added, "With that in mind, how could the agent personally witness illegal gambling?"

"The false part, we contend, is that he said alleged illegal gambling was conducted during that period, when there is some question as to whether gambling was conducted on the premises at that particular time period," Wilkins said.

"So, in a case titled Frank vs. Delaware. the U.S. Supreme Court held that if a false or reckless statement was included in an affidavit, the search warrant would be valid if there was probable cause for the warrants issuance after the false statement was removed," the attorney explained.

"In this case, if you remove the false statement-the part about gambling being conducted in that particular time period—and examine the affidavit, you will find that the last report of illegal gambling on that particular date...was 43 days old," Wilkins pointed out.

## **GUILTY PLEA TAKEN IN GRABE PROBE**

**By Lonmie Dean  
Staff Writer**

Glenn Tibbs, of Grabe County, pleaded guilty to one count of perjury in U.S. Federal Court in Tyler, becoming the first to be indicted and convicted in the Grabe County Probe by the U.S. Attorney's Office.

The plea came in Judge Wiley Watson Jimpson's court at 9:00AM.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Tibbs pleaded guilty to the indictment that he lied before the grand jury, when asked "did you ever have any law enforcement personnel present when one of the dice games was going on?"

Tibbs, before the grand jury, said "No sir."

What law enforcement was present was not brought out in the trial court today.

Judge Jimpson told Tibbs that by entering a plea of guilty he would lose certain rights and the maximum punishment could be five years in prison or a \$2000 fine or both.

Jimpson ordered a pre-sentence investigation and told the court he would notify Tibbs attorney and U.S. Attorney Jody Hopkins when he set a date for sentencing.

### **JURY SELECTION UNDER WAY IN GRABE GAMBLING TRIALS**

**By Ben Hines**  
**Staff Writer**

TYLER—Jury selection began today in Federal District Court here for five persons accused of alleged illegal gambling in Grabe County.

Two people had already been excused as lawyers began interviewing the 62 prospective jurors polled in the trials of Vinney Tolbert, Marty Haley, Jim Jefferies, Haley Hobbs and Barbara Temple.

The jury selections are being made for the first trial to arise from the more than year long federal probe into Grabe County corruption.

....Most of the questioning was being directed by Federal Judge Wiley Watson Jimpson in whose court the case is being heard.

Prosecutors were hopeful a jury could be selected by noon Monday, with the possibility of the trial getting underway Monday afternoon.

The trial is expected to last through Wednesday.



**GRABE OFFICIALS ON TRIAL**

**By Ben Hines  
Staff Writer**

TYLER—More than 60 persons appeared here early today, Monday, to be polled as prospective jurors for the trials of the Grabe County Sheriff and four others accused of alleged misconduct in office.

Appearance with the Sheriff were Justice of the Peace Chip Collins, County Commissioner Body Sandifer and former Grabe County deputies John Callahan and Bubba Rich, all of whom were indicted by a federal grand jury.

Missing from the courtroom was the former Grabe deputy Bubba Bailey, who although indicted along with the other defendants, will be tried later since his attorney is in the hospital.

Federal Judge Wiley Watson Jimpson, before whom the cases will be heard, recessed court at 10:15a.m., telling the prospective jurors that attorneys for both sides would make their selections and reappear in the court at 11a.m.

Prior to the recess, attorneys for both sides began at 9a.m. to poll the prospective jurors concerning their opinions and attitudes about the upcoming cases.

Thirty-five persons were interviewed by the attorneys while the remainder looked on.

Those not being polled directly were being used as replacements for persons called during the preliminary interviews. Of the 35, only one man was dismissed during the 75 minutes the polling took place.

The group of prospective jurors represented a diverse cross-section of East Texans with only a few from the Linview-Grabe County area.

....More than 50 witnesses are expected to be called on the government's behalf during the trial. Which is expected to last as long as—and possibly longer than—two weeks. Many of the prospective witnesses lined the halls.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

### AGENT SAYS SHERIFF IN VICINITY IF ILLEGAL GAMBLING

By Ben Hines  
Staff Writer

TYLER—An FBI agent testified today that the Grabe County Sheriff was seen in the vicinity of an illegal gambling game during the federal probe into Grabe County corruption.

According to FBI agent Galen Kincaid, the Sheriff's vehicle was seen in the vicinity of a game operated by Robby Costas while the games were under surveillance by FBI agents.

Kincaid's testimony came in the second day of trials of five persons including the sheriff and two of the other elected officials accused of racketeering in Grabe County.

Kincaid was the first witness to be called Tuesday as the trial resumed before Federal District Judge Wallace Steiner. Kincaid testified, "I had responsibility to maintain an awareness of what was going on in Grabe County."

Kincaid said, "On the night of the raid, I had a sledge hammer with me when we first knocked on the door at the location. I was to use it to gain entry if the door was not opened or if (FBI agent Eli) Smart, who was already inside the building, got in trouble.

We subsequently had to use the hammer to gain entry into the building."

Two former Grabe County Deputies testified that the Grabe County Sheriff told two men who attempted to rob an illegal gambling operation to "get out of his county and never come back."

Mackey Patton and Chubby Stone were taken to the county line on orders by the sheriff and released, according to former Deputy Jimbo Malloy.

Testimony by the officers revealed the Grabe County Sheriff's office had received a disturbance call from the gambling location and the deputies, while they were en route, picked the men up.

"They didn't have any ID or a good reason for being in the area, so we put them in the car and took them to the sheriff's house," Malloy testified.



According to Patton, who now lives in Arlington, the Sheriff told him and Stone that Linview was his town and that he didn't want their kind in Grabe County.

And Stone testified the sheriff said if he found out they had caused any problems at the game, he'd come looking for them.

"The sheriff told us the people in the poker game were friends of his and that he didn't want us messing with them." Stone added.

"He told us the game was for the convenience of the rich people in "his" county and that he didn't want us around there," Stone testified.

In some of the other testimony today, a former Grabe County employee employed by Sandifer testified that on direct orders from Sandifer, more than 40 yards of slag was dumped at the North Linview gambling location with the intent purpose being the construction of a parking lot and driveway on private land, which later became the illegal gambling location.

Also today, FBI agents Norm Dilley and Timmy Kromer testified at least eight games of illegal gambling was operated at the Grabe County Fair.

Kromer testified at one game known as "Chinese Numbers" or "Razzle Dazzle," he lost almost \$200 in a 30-minute period. When he approached former sheriff's deputy Bubba Rich to register a complaint, Rich told the undercover agent that if the game was illegal, he would also have to be arrested since he took part in the game, Kromer testified.

Dilley testified that Grabe County District Attorney's Investigator Farley Ogden, Collins, Rich and former Grabe County Deputy Bubba Bailey patrolled the fair as security guards.

Testimony by other former—and possibly present—Grabe County deputies was expected later today.

## **DEFENSE UNABLE TO SHAKE AGENT'S TESTIMONY ABOUT GRABE COUNTY SHERIFF**

**By Ben Hines  
Staff Writer**

TYLER—Defense attorneys in federal court today were unable to shake the testimony of an undercover FBI agent who has rendered the



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

most damaging testimony heard against the Grabe County Sheriff during his trial on corruption charges.

FBI agent Loren Wooley—during cross examination by the sheriff's co-attorney Dave Ludlow, had coolly repeated his testimony given Wednesday that the sheriff gave his apparent approval of a proposed illegal gambling operation in the county.

Records show Wooley approached the sheriff directly and discussed with him the operation of a casino, a first class Las Vegas-style casino, near the Grabe County airport.

During the cross-examination, Ludlow attempted to show Wooley "entrapped" the sheriff, but the Assistant U.S. Attorney Jobe Bickman objected to the use of the word "entrapped."

Federal District Judge Wallace Steiner then sustained the objection and instructed Ludlow to refrain from using the word "entrapped."

Steiner also admonished Wooley for giving lengthy answers, saying they bordered on dissertations, rather than short, concise responses.

Following the judge's admonishment, Ludlow tried to show that the sheriff had not given his approval of the games.

...."Agent Norm Dilley has testified that the Linview operation (involving the sheriff) was a failure. Do you agree?" Ludlow asked.

"No sir," Wooley said.

"What it appeared to be was that the sheriff was simply trying to gain information about your proposal and not necessarily approving it," Ludlow questioned.

"Sir, based on my some 15 years experience in law enforcement, if the sheriff was working on gaining info for future arrests, he would have asked more detailed questions concerning the operation. This he did not do," Wooley replied.

"In your report, you said you were uncomfortable about going to the sheriff's office. Why was this?" Ludlow queried.

Wooley replied, "I was uncomfortable because knowing I was going to the offices of the highest law enforcement officer of the county. I would have been arrested immediately if the man would have been totally honest."



"In your experience as a Detective in California, if a man you did not know came to you from Texas and proposed an illegal game in your area, would you have arrested him right then?" Ludlow continued.

"Perhaps not. I would have wanted to find out as much as I could about the man and his operations," Wooley said. "This was not the case with the Grabe County Sheriff... He did not go into details."

"But covering the direct discussion of murder, you and the sheriff did not go into that at all, did you?" Ludlow charged.

"When he referred to making sure the bodies were not dumped in his county, I felt that to be sufficient," Wooley replied.

Wooley was referring to statements allegedly made by the sheriff that should anyone be killed for causing trouble at the proposed casino, their bodies were not to be found in his county.

In other testimony this morning, FBI agent Wiley Handley, under cross-examination by the sheriff's co-attorney Jim Sims, said Texas Ranger Gene Ellis entered the Hanger-on Lounge—one of the two places raided—and told club personnel that if gambling was being conducted, it had better stop.

Handley also testified one reason the sheriff was not contacted prior to the raids was because the FBI had some information the sheriff was receiving approximately \$200 per night to protect the Hanger-on Lounge games.

"You don't contact the sheriff because you had information in your file the sheriff was involved in the gambling, didn't you?" Bickman asked.

"Yes sir," Handley replied.

"And the FBI isn't in the habit of telling persons believed involved in something which is being investigated about FBI activities?" Bickman asked.

"It's not too sound a practice," Handley replied.

The prosecution was expected to pursue obstructions of justice involved in Grabe County corruption in further testimony.

Under questioning from Assistant U.S. Attorney Jobe Bickman, FBI agent Wooley testified he approached the Grabe County Sheriff over a



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

year ago and asked what the sheriff would require to allow the operation in his county.

"When I first entered the county I began to contact certain criminal elements in the county. I moved into the county and took an apartment—at FBI expense—in Linview and continued my relationship with Oslo Morgan who I met in a bar," Wooley added.

"Morgan was street-wise in that he knew all the comings and goings of persons in Grabe County both in the criminal element and out," the agent added.

"Morgan had told me that the sheriff said he wanted to meet with me to discuss an enterprise I had mentioned to Morgan earlier," Wooley said.

The agent testified, "I'd like to set up a first class Las Vegas style casino in Grabe County."

"I met with the sheriff, and after he asked Morgan any myself to sit down in his office, we then began discussing the planned game," he said.

"The sheriff asked me what type game I intended to set up and again I told him it was to be a first-class Las Vegas casino for a very limited clientele," he said.

He said, "the sheriff said he didn't see how an operation that size could work in Grabe County since it would take quite a bit of money to stay open.

"I told him the cost did not necessarily represent a problem since it was my habit and custom to set such operations up around the country," Wooley said.

...."I told the sheriff that I had some contacts who would supply the equipment and the paraphernalia with which to operate the game," he continued.

"The sheriff asked—rather made the statement—would I mind his checking me out and I told him to go right ahead," Wooley testified.

"He took my name and birth date and relayed the information over the phone to someone," he added.

Wooley, while working undercover, used an assumed name for which the FBI had created a fictitious background.



"The sheriff asked me if the game would be crooked since most of the games in Grabe County used crooked techniques," Wooley said, referring to loaded dice and marked cards.

"I told him the game would be straight—rather everyone would have equal and fair chances at winning—and again stressed the operation would be a high-class affair," he added.

Wooley testified the sheriff, Morgan and he continued talking about the game and details while awaiting the return of the sheriff's check on the agent.

The Assistant U.S. Attorney, Jobe Bickman, who was questioning Wooley, asked the agent if the sheriff had talked about any insurance concerning the games.

"After the sheriff received the check on me, he told me the operation sounded good, but that he wanted no heat or pressure brought on him by the games operation," Wooley said.

"He told me the FBI would investigate the game if I wasn't careful and he said he wanted nothing to interfere with a possible re-election in the future," Wooley said.

He told me he wanted no trouble out at the game, but if there was trouble, he wanted the bodies dumped across the county line," Wooley told the court.

The agent testified the sheriff was told the game would be located near the Grabe County airport, close to the Rashe County line.

Bickman asked Wooley if the sheriff inquired whether food and drinks would be served at the game.

"The sheriff asked if food and alcohol would be served at the game and I told him a complimentary buffet and free liquor would be supplied patrons of the casino," Wooley added.

"The sheriff told me—and I believe the quote was:— "That's good because that ole boy down at the ABC (the Texas Alcoholic Beverage Commission) is greedy and (will) make you pay," Wooley added.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Bickman asked the agent if it was his impression he had the sheriff's approval to operate the game.

At this point, the defense, which had remained silent throughout Wooley's testimony, objected to Bickman's question on grounds the prosecution asked the witness to base a statement on his opinion.

Wooley then replied, "My impression was that I had the sheriff's okay, since he said it sounded good as long as he had no heat and no problems with his future re-election.

Federal District Judge Wallace Steiner, who is hearing the case, overruled the objection.

Throughout the proceedings, Steiner has overruled objections from both sides, informing attorneys to limit their objections to the cross-examination phase in an effort to speed the trial.

**IN OTHER COURT** action, FBI agent Eli Smart testified Collins, after hearing a poker game had recently been raided in Grabe County, remarked, "Those guys are going to have to learn that if they want to keep from getting raided, they are going to have to pay the insurance."

Smart testified the statement was made at an illegal poker game which Collins regularly attended at an apartment complex in Linview.

Smart, who said he was assigned to take part in illegal gaming operations in Grabe County in order to collect evidence, said he moved into the apartment complex after determining the game was played there.

Under questioning by Bickman, Smart said the apartment game took a house cut and players payed apartment owner, Buck Mullins, \$10 for a seat.

An FBI gambling expert, Paul Hammond, testified this was usual procedure for conducting house games.

Hammond, who said he was generally familiar with some Texas laws pertaining to types of gambling, said a gambling game, under certain limitations, could be played for recreation in one's home.



However, when the house—or place where the games took place—receives a portion of the winnings or “pots” and when players pay a fee to take part in the game, the game is not classified as a “friendly” game.

Smart—after he was accepted by the players of the apartment game—would use those players as references in gaining admittance to a gaming operation conducted by Robby Costas, court records show.

....“I finally got into Costa’s game at what was known as “Old Flannigan Furrows,” Smart told the court.

“However, no games were being conducted at that time and Costas told me the reason was the city had annexed the land and he was having to move,” Smart said.

“I then told Costas I knew the men at the apartment game and mentioned Collins name,” Smart said.

“When I said that, Costas told me to check with Collins later and he would be able to tell me where the game would be set up,” the agent said.

“But Costas did tell me that Collins never gambled at any of the games because of his position as justice of the peace,” he concluded.

After Wooley finished his testimony at 4:40p.m., Steiner said there was no use interrupting the defense’s cross-examination of the witness and dismissed court until 9a.m. Thursday.

In testimony Tuesday, a witness said that the sheriff knew illegal gambling was being conducted in his county, but failed to do anything about it.

Doby “Hill Slider” McSellers, who was one of more than seven persons assisting in the operation of an illegal gaming operation in Grabe County, testified that the sheriff, earlier, came to a location where the game was conducted to talk to Costas

McSellers, who worked as a stickman for Costa’s game on Angel Road in Linview, said the sheriff entered the residence where the game was conducted, walked past a dice table to a back room where he talked briefly with Costas.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

The former employee told the court the game was not being conducted at the time of the sheriff's visit.

Further testimony revealed the illegal gambling has been going on for an extended period.

"When did you first go to the games operated by Costas at a place known as Flannigan Furrows?" Assistant U.S. Attorney Bickman asked witness Barney Eggars Tuesday afternoon.

"Oh, about 13, maybe 14 years ago," Eggars replied.

"Another sheriff was in office then, Sheriff Nigel Carson, wasn't it?" asked Bickman.

"Yes sir, that's about right," Eggars replied.

"Do you know who operated the game then?" asked Bickman.

"Yes, sir, it was operated by Robby Costas and Sonny McShane," Eggars told the prosecutor.

...."And what was the most you ever won while playing Costa's game?" Bickman asked.

"I'd say, \$5000," Eggars replied, and then surprised the court by offering that years income tax return as proof since he claimed the winnings that year.

....During the course of establishing the Costas game had been conducted over a period of years, Steiner then interrupted Bickman's presentation, telling the prosecutor he was beginning to go over the same ground.

"I've heard enough repetition of these persons you claim operated the game," Steiner tersely told the Prosecutor. "I believe you have established that Costas and these other men were the ones running this game, so please proceed with your case." Steiner said.

The other men to whom Steiner referred to were Jake Bonner, Wiley Hines, Chubby Hale, Cass Mills and Wesley Sims as well as McSellers.

Along with Costas, these men will be tried at a later date on charges they operated an illegal gambling business in Grabe County.

With the exception of McSellers, who won't be tried, these individuals were indicted by a federal grand jury.



**JUDGE DENIES ANY "GAG" ON TRIAL COVERAGE**

**By Ben Hines  
Staff Writer**

TYLER—Federal District Judge Wallace Steiner stopped court proceeding briefly today and denied reports he had put a gag order per se on attorneys trying the case of five Grabe Countians accused of corruption while in office.

Steiner referred to newspaper accounts he apparently ordered attorneys not to discuss the case pertaining to the Grabe County Sheriff, Grabe County Commissioner, Grabe County Justice of the Peace and two former Grabe County Sheriff's Deputies with the media.

"This is an open courtroom, and all forms of the media have the right to come in and write what they hear from the witness box." Steiner said.

"I've always had good experience with the media and most of the time their reports are exactly what they hear presented in court.

"However, judicial canons of ethics state that attorneys shall not discuss any lawsuits which are in progress," Steiner explained. .... "I simply reminded the attorneys not to discuss the case outside the courtroom."

Attorneys for both sides remained tight-lipped about any questions posed them by reporters regardless whether the questions asked were trial related or simply procedural queries.

Steiner made no references to a motion for mistrial filed Thursday on behalf of defendant Collins.

....The motion was filed on what the defense attorneys said were published prejudicial accounts of the proceedings.

In other testimony today, former Grabe County Deputy Drew Holt, testified he had known of a disturbance at Flannigan Furrows which former Chief Deputy John Callahan answered.

Former Grabe County Deputy Isiah Wedge Silas testified Thursday that Callahan arrived at the scene, telling the deputies everything was all right, that only a little game was being conducted there that night.

In Thursday's proceedings, former Grabe County Deputy Jimbo Malloy testified jail inmates on more than one occasion were taken in a county vehicle to the sheriff's farm to work at the ranch.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Malloy said he took prisoners to the sheriff's farm on several occasions while a deputy.

Previous testimony by FBI agent Galen Kincaid alleged jail inmates at one time had been extensively used by the sheriff for a monthly campaign project at his farm.

Turning to the gambling phase of the trial, the government called former Grabe County Deputy Will Hoyt, who testified he investigated a gambling complaint at the Grabe County Fair. Hoyt said he stopped by then Sheriff's Capt. Bubba Rich, who also worked security guard at the fair.

"What brought the complaint about?" Hopkins asked Hoyt, now a Linview wrecker operator.

"A man told me, while I was working at the beer garden, that he lost \$270 at a midway game," Hoyt said.

"Just as I got to the midway, Capt. Rich stopped me and asked what I was doing and I related to him what the man at the beer garden had said," the ex-deputy continued.

Hopkins asked Hoyt to recite exactly what Rich had said.

Hoyt asked the prosecutor if he wanted profanity included in the recitation.

Hopkins acknowledged he wanted the exact comment made by Rich as best Hoyt could remember.

"Capt. Rich told me to get my (expletive deleted) ass off the midway and do not come back, that they were handling the midway," Hoyt testified.

"After that I never went back to the midway during the fair," Hoyt concluded.

### DA'S INVESTIGATOR ADMITS TAKING BRIBE

By Ben Hines  
Staff Writer

TYLER—....Grabe County District Attorney's Investigator Farley Ogden recanted his earlier testimony, admitting he had taken a bribe at the Grabe County Fair ostensibly to allow illegal gambling at the fair's midway.



**HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD  
(REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

409

Ogden, who testified earlier he'd not taken a bribe from the fair's operators, testified he had been made aware the money he accepted as payment for security service was, under law, a bribe.

The testimony was heard as the second week of the trial of five Grabe Countians accused of corrupting the oath of their public office, got underway.

Ogden said at the time he was paid, he was unaware he was accepting a bribe when Sevvv Schiller, fair concessionaire, gave him \$300 for his services. However, Ogden testified, after talking with U.S. Attorney Jody Hopkins, the law, as was explained to him, defines the payment he received as a bribe.

Ogden further testified that Collins, Rich and former Grabe County deputy Bubba Bailey had also received similar payments from Schiller.

Ogden admitted under cross-examination from the sheriff's co-attorney Dave Alvin Ludlow, that he'd been granted immunity from prosecution in exchange for his testimony.

Things got off to a rough start Monday as the jury was sent out of the courtroom twice In the first fifteen minutes; first as Federal District Judge Wallace Steiner pronounced sentence on two defendants in another non-related case and again when defense and prosecuting attorneys discussed a point of law with Steiner.

The discussion centered on whether defense counsel has justifiable access to certain evidence held by the prosecution.

Assistant U.S. Attorney Jobe Bickman objected, under case law, to the defense's request for production of Ogden's statement given to FBI agent Norm Dilley.

However, Steiner overruled the objection, ordering the requested material delivered to the defense.

Further testimony by Ogden showed that he participated—while accompanied by Rich—in several illegal gambling games at the fair. Ogden testified he was aware of the odds on payoffs at several games, but said toy prizes as well as cash was available to the few winners at the various games.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

### FBI SAYS SHERIFF'S OFFICE GAVE LITTLE COOPERATION

By Ben Hines  
Staff Writer

TYLER—FBI agent Galen Kincaid testified today that it was 15 days after being first contacted about a proposed gambling casino in Grabe County before anyone at the sheriff's department told him about the incident.

Kincaid also testified that while working in Grabe County for the past eight years, any help he received from the sheriff's department in any of his investigations "was minimal."

When the sheriff's co-attorney Jim Sims cross-examined the agent about assistance he had received in the past, from the sheriff's department, Kincaid referred to one incident of cooperation, but quickly added, "I wish I could say something (else) we've accomplished in the past eight years."

Kincaid—while under cross-examination by defense attorney Lane Potter—said although marginal assistance had been extended the FBI by the sheriff on several matters, when it came to the apprehension of a well known equipment thief in Grabe County, the sheriff offered no help in the arrest.

"The FBI had to eventually arrest the thief on our own," Kincaid said. In previous testimony, Kincaid mentioned the FBI's mistrust of the sheriff, stating earlier FBI investigations in Grabe County had been hindered by the sheriff.

In other testimony, Kincaid recalled an interview earlier this year with Sandifer when the agent handed the commissioner a subpoena for a portion of his work records.

Kincaid said the records sought purportedly dealt with work done at a private residence on Angel Road in Linview.

Sandifer, according to records, asked the agent what portion of his records he was interested in. Kincaid told Sandifer about the interest in the installation of a parking lot driveway using county equipment, time and personnel at the old Pam Sims residence.



Tuesday, four former Grabe County deputies testified they formed a "shotgun squad" under orders from the Grabe County Sheriff to kill an informant turned murderer.

Dirk Silvano, Bull S. Conley, Grover C. Aikens and Drew Holt all testified they went to a county barn on orders to kill three individuals entering the barn to burglarize a safe.

According to previous testimony, targets of the alleged shotgun squad were Lenny Barnes, a former sheriff's dispatcher now serving a life sentence for capital murder; Johnny Mazewsky and Don Amerage, who are now, both on parole for bank robbery in Tennessee.

Bickman asked Silvano when his first involvement with the alleged county barn incident occurred.

"Drew Holt approached me and asked me what I would do if I found someone burglarizing a building," Silvano said.

"I told him that I would blow him away and that was the extent of the conversation," Silvano said.

Earlier, Holt testified he approached Silvano and Conley for what it was originally to be a three-man team since both deputies had proven trustworthy and accomplished with firearms.

Bickman referred to an incident years earlier when a woman was killed and another severely wounded in a Klimore motel.

"How long was it after the incident at the Pinwheel Motel when Holt approached you about the barn?" Bickman asked.

"Not very long...I had fired about 3,200 rounds of ammunition in practice that week and reloaded most of it when he asked me what I would do in a burglary situation, Silvano said.

"I had chosen three-inch magnum buckshot shells for my shotgun and had bullets in my pistol that would cut a man in half when it hit him," Silvano said. "With the shotgun all I had to do was get in the general direction and there would be no way to get away from it."

Holt testified earlier that shortly after the murder of the Klimore woman, he went to a wooded area in Rashe County and talked with Lenny Barnes about the incident.

While Holt was talking with Barnes, Silvano was perched atop a small hill 250-yards away with a high-powered rifle and orders to kill Barnes if the informant pulled a gun, Holt said.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

It was then Barnes confessed to Holt he had killed the woman at the motel, Holt testified.

Under cross-examination by the sheriff's co-attorney Jim Sims, Silvano said the nights the deputies stayed at the barn awaiting their prey, their major concern was remaining hidden from the men entering the building.

"Didn't you consider this intent to kill the suspects to be murder?" Sims asked.

"No, sir, I didn't-not at the time," Silvano said. "And if the men had lowered themselves to the inside of the building, what would you have done?" Sims asked.

"I would have killed them," Silvano responded.

Former deputy Bill Conley testified Holt approached him and asked if Conley would go on a stakeout.

"Drew Holt, then my superior officer, asked me if I would go on a stakeout and I told him I would," Conley told Bickman.

Bickman asked the former officer if he and the others practiced before going to the barn in Sandifer's Precinct 1 and asked if Conley knew what was exactly required of him.

"Yes, sir, we went out and fired about 15 or 20 rounds apiece from shotguns and Holt told me about (the barn) Conley testified.

"At the time, though, I thought it was just a stakeout (to catch somebody), but I was told we were to stop whoever tried to rob the safe after getting to the barn," Conley said.

"Who told you who the victims were to be?" Bickman asked.

...."Holt did...(they) were to be Barnes, Mazewsky and Amerage," Conley replied.

"Do you recall what happened the nights you and the officers stayed at the barn?" Bickman asked.

"Nothing much the first night...the second night we heard a motorcycle approach and we all ran to our places," Conley continued.

"We could hear people climbing upon the roof and two people appeared at the window," Conley told the prosecutor. "They looked around with a light and saw Silvano's leg and took off."



Conley testified Silvano ran out the front door and fired his pistol at least once at the fleeing men.

At that point in the proceedings, Bickman supplied the court with a grant of immunity for Conley as he had done with Holt and Silvano and did later for the fourth member of the squad.

When Bickman passed the witness to cross-examination by Dave Ludlow, the defense attorney approached the former officer, as he had done with Silvano, with an August clipping of a Linview newspaper article outlining alleged activities of the shotgun squad.

When asked by Ludlow if he was the source referred to in the article, Conley denied he was interviewed per se by the Linview paper, but admitted talking with media representatives about the story.

Shortly after 4p.m. Grover Aikens, also a former deputy, took the stand and testified he once believed in the sheriff so strongly he would have killed for the sheriff.

Aikens said the sheriff told him the sheriff's department was run like a family, and that the sheriff would take care of Aiken's family.

Silvano had testified earlier that the sheriff told him as long as he worked for the department he'd never have to worry about going to prison or getting in trouble.

## **FORMER COLLINS OFFICE CLERK TESTIFIES**

**By Ben Hines  
Staff Writer**

**TYLER**—County equipment, time and money was apparently used to fund a private operation by which Grabe County Justice of the Peace Chip Collins ran drivers license checks for at least two private industries in East Texas, according to testimony in federal court here today.

Tonya Miller, a Braniff Airlines employee and formerly Collin's office clerk for five years, testified this morning she took orders for the various firms over the phone, ran the checks through the sheriff's department computer and later mailed photocopies of the reports to the companies.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Mrs. Miller said county envelopes were used to mail the reports, which were stamped through the county's postage meter.

Under questioning by Assistant U.S. Attorney Jobe Bickman, Mrs. Miller said the drivers license checks were called in on a daily basis.

"How often did these calls come in?" Bickman asked.

"It's hard to say...guess maybe 10 or 15 times a week," Mrs. Miller answered.

"Would Mr. Collins check with you to determine if the checks had been paid for?" Bickman asked.

"Yes sir." Mrs. Miller said.

"Would Mr. Collins pay you for doing this?" the prosecutor asked.

"Yes sir...about \$20 per month," the former clerk said.

....Under further questioning, Mrs. Miller said she also ran—on her own—drivers license checks for two Linview insurance companies. She said she charged the companies \$2 a piece for the service.

"Did Collins and you talk about this (activity)?" Bickman asked.

"Yes sir, he said he didn't think I should do it," she said.

In other testimony today, A Gliddings man said he agreed to give a gun to former sheriff's Captain Bubba Rich if Rich would just help him get out of jail.

Benny Jim Jester testified he was arrested for auto theft several years ago following a misunderstanding with a Linview auto dealership.

Jester—suffering from a medical problem at the time of his arrest—said it took his wife three days to find him although she had called the Grabe County Sheriffs Department and was told her husband was not in jail.

Under questioning by Bickman, Jester said he agreed to give Rich the pistol if Rich would call his Glidding attorney. Jester said he gave the former deputy a receipt for the weapon, but was, on two later occasions turned down by Rich when he asked for payment for the gun.

----A former Grabe County hotel/motel and club operator testified Wednesday he had given the Grabe County Sheriff \$100 years earlier, thinking to end harassment of his customers.



J.D. Sifford said the sheriff didn't solicit payment, but neither did he refuse it.

"Why did you give this payment to the sheriff?" asked U.S. Attorney Jody Hopkins.

.... "Maybe I was broke all my life and never gave anything to anybody (before)," Sifford quipped.

"Wasn't it because you might want a favor later?" Hopkins asked.

"That might be true," Sifford said.

"What did the sheriff have to say when you gave the money to him?" Hopkins asked.

"He never asked for it and never said thanks," Sifford said. "I gave it to him without telling him why or what I might want for it in return."

At that point Sifford interrupted Hopkin's questioning, stating it was his "interpretation" that he was only going to be asked two questions under the conditions by which the government granted him immunity from prosecution.

Judge Steiner told the witness he would answer questions posed to him by Hopkins until the U.S. Attorney finished his interview.

"Didn't you discuss with another man about bringing prostitutes to the club and motel?" Hopkins asked.

"If I did I was drunk," Sifford said.

"But the \$100 you gave the sheriff was so you could keep your club open later, much later, than what the law allowed and would be freed from harassment?" Hopkins queried.

"That was my thinking on it," Sifford replied.

"Mr. Sifford, did you know Chief Deputy John Callahan?" Hopkins continued.

"Yes, sir," Sifford said.

"And did you give money to Callahan?" the prosecutor asked.

"Yes, sir, on three occasions," Sifford testified.

"And how much did you give him each time?" Hopkins asked.

"Exactly \$100 each time, over a nine month period," the former motel manager said.

"Why did you pay Callahan?" Hopkins asked.

"They had a badge and I didn't," Sifford replied.

"You gave it to him for future favors, didn't you?" Hopkins asked.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

"That was my intention," the club operator said. Hopkins talked with Sifford concerning a conversation Sifford had at a Dallas location at which Sifford reportedly told those present that he had the sheriff in his hip pocket.

"Did you make a comment like that you had the sheriff in your hip pocket, at a Dallas location?" Hopkins asked.

"I had that conversation in Dallas while I was in a room that was illegally bugged," Sifford said.

....Under cross-examination by the sheriff's co-attorney Jim Sims, Sifford said that he was later told the room had been bugged by the metropolitan division of the Dallas Police Department, which he accused of calling the Grabe County Sheriff to tell of the conversation.

"And shortly after that you had a conversation with the sheriff. What did the sheriff tell you then?" Sims questioned.

"He told me I was out of business," Sifford said.

"So that was just a braggart remark you made about having the sheriff in your hip pocket, wasn't it?" Sims asked.

"Evidently," Sifford said.

....In other testimony Wednesday, five former Grabe County jail inmates said they had worked on the sheriff's ranch either baling hay, building or mending fences, or working cattle in exchange for special favors.

....Larry Ellison, Jamie Jenson, both of Linview, Mackey Belmont of Midlothian, John Norman of Easton and Henry Hackley of Gilmer testified they were all allowed by the sheriff to serve portions of their prison sentences at the Grabe County jail.

All five said they volunteered to work on the Sheriff's ranch in an effort to get "fresh air and exercise," but all added they were paid less than the \$10 per day for labor.

Under questioning by Hopkins, the former inmates said they were allowed to drink beer before going back to the jail.

They also testified that Grabe County deputies took them to the ranch and returned them at night.



The inmates also said that the sheriff allowed them to eat at Grabe County restaurants and allowed them to take three-to-four hour leaves from jail to go home.

Belmont testified he received beer, special food, visits home and \$50 a week in return for working with cattle at the sheriff's ranch.

Norman testified there was a pattern to when he wound up in jail.

"Mr. Norman, did you ever, at any time, have occasion to be placed in the Grabe County jail?" Hopkins asked.

..."Yes, sir,...many more times (than) I can remember and mainly for being drunk," Norman said.

"Sir, did you ever work on the sheriff's farm while in the jail?" Hopkins asked.

"Yes sir," Norman replied.

"And what did you do at the ranch?" the prosecutor questioned.

"Mainly hauled hay...it seemed every time I was arrested it was time to haul hay," Norman answered.

## **DEFENSE CALLS LAW ENFORCEMENT OFFICERS**

**By Ben Hines  
Staff Writer**

TYLER—....A Texas Ranger, a police chief and a police lieutenant all testified Friday they had no direct knowledge and had no complaints of the illegal gambling in Grabe County.

The testimony offered by Ranger Gene Ellis, the Linview Police Chief and a police Lieutenant was heard as the second week of the trial of five Gregg Countians accused of corrupting their oath of public office began to draw to a close.

Although a report filed several years ago by Ellis stated activities at Flannigan Furrows were pretty common knowledge among the law enforcement personnel, he testified he never discussed the illegal Grabe County gambling with the Grabe County Sheriff in a period spanning several years.

....Defense attorney Dave Ludlow's interrogation of Ellis was brief concerning the alleged illegal gambling, but tension rose between Ellis and Assistant U.S. Attorney Jobe Bickman when Bickman admitted he



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

was indeed insinuating Ellis purposely delayed the arrest of a murder suspect in the past.

"I've been a criminal investigator for 18 years, but I don't know much about prosecuting," Ellis charged. "But if you are insinuating I purposely delayed arresting Barnes, then you are wrong."

"That's exactly what I'm insinuating," Bickman said loudly. "But, according to Dirk Silvano (a former Grabe County deputy) you were with the sheriff the day he picked up the deputies from the barn."

"That's a lie!" Ellis said.

The heated exchange between Bickman and Ellis took place during Bickman's cross-examination of Ellis concerning the murder of a woman at the Pinwheel Motel in Klimore earlier by former Grabe dispatcher Lenny Barnes.

....Thursday's last two government witnesses—deputies Bubba Hadaway and Mark Gibson—testified they stood four-hour watches over former Grabe Sheriff's Capt. Bubba Rich, who was placed in Linview's Grand Samaratin Hospital for recovery from a recurring bout of pneumonia.

"The (expletive deleted) Feds then came in and (expletive deleted) everything up," Rich told him at the hospital.

Hadaway said he asked Rich, "Bubba, didn't you really know they were coming?"

----And, according to Hadaway's testimony, Rich replied, "no, they didn't give us time to get ready."

Defense attorneys are Chip Centers of Tyler and Kiley Riggins of Linview representing Sandifer; Jim Sims of Linview and Dave Ludlow of Tyler are representing the Grabe County Sheriff; Lundy Pelligrew of Linview representing Rich and Callahan, and Larry Wilkins of Linview representing Collins.

Following opening statements on Thursday afternoon, four defense witnesses took the stand.

Three of them included the intended victims of an alleged botched earlier murder attempt, reported to have been staged by the Grabe County Sheriff at Sandifer's Precinct 1 County barn.



Convicted murderer and state penitentiary inmate Lenny Barnes, and convicted bank robbers Johnny Mazewsky and Don Amerage, both on parole from the Tennessee state prison, were called by the defense.

Barnes, under questioning by Sims, testified he told former deputy Drew Holt—one of his alleged intended assassins—he was going to rob the Pinwheel Motel near Klimore.

He testified the plan went sour when Barnes stabbed, then shot one woman and severely wounded a second woman at the motel.

Barnes said he contacted Holt the day of the murder. He had been working undercover for Holt after leaving the Grabe County Sheriffs department as dispatcher, he said.

"I offered to surrender myself to Holt, but he told me he would check back and see," Barnes told the court. "Holt later told me if the second woman died, the case would be set aside as unsolved."

Barnes testified Holt told him a short time after the murder at the motel about the alleged \$50,000 that would be in Sandifer's safe.

Barnes said he missed the rendezvous he was to make with Amerage and Mazewsky and was not with the men when they went to the county barn to "case the place."

Mazewsky said he and Amerage went to the county barn to look it over before robbing it while Barnes was assigned to monitor the police radio because they didn't trust him to be with them at the barn.

....When Sims—who directed most of the defense questioning late Thursday—asked the witness, Johnny Mazewsky, his opinion of Barnes, Mazewsky described the convict as "untrustworthy."

Mazewsky testified he went to the barn at varying times to determine the routine at the barn and who was there regularly.

"The night you and Amerage went to the barn, was it your intention then to rob it?" Sims queried.

"No, sir, it was just to see if it was guarded." Mazewsky said.

"And did you find it guarded?" Sims continued.

...."Yes, sir," Mazewsky replied.

"You left there fast?" Sims asked.

"Yes, sir," Mazewsky responded.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Mazewsky said shots were fired as they fled the scene on a motorcycle.

"Did Barnes know where you and Amerage were going when you left the house?" Sims asked.

"He knew we were going to go somewhere, but he didn't know where," Mazewsky said.

"Why didn't you take Barnes with you to look the place over that night?" Sims asked.

"Because none of us trusted him at all Mazewsky replied. Following Sim's questioning, the Assistant U.S. Attorney, Jobe Bickman, cross-examined Mazewsky about the effect the barn visit had on him.

"Did you jump on Barnes after you had found out the barn was guarded?" Bickman asked.

"Probably something to that effect," Mazewsky said.

"And did you think they (the deputies) had the right to kill you?" Bickman asked.

"When you go to a place you sort of risk running into it," Mazewsky said.

"Do you think the Grabe County Sheriff had that right?" Bickman asked.

"I wouldn't have liked it," Mazewsky said.

Defense attorneys, Ludlow, Sims, Riggins, Centers, Pelligrew and Wilkins, attorneys for the indicted Grabe County officials and deputies, presented motions for acquittal on behalf of all defendants, today.

### DEFENSE ATTORNEYS DENIED ACQUITTAL MOTIONS

TYLER—Defense attorneys for five Grabe Countians on trial in federal court for corruption in public office offenses were denied motions for acquittal Thursday.

Federal Judge Wallace Steiner denied the motions, directing the defense to proceed with the case.

The motions requested Steiner to instruct the jury to acquit defendants: ...The Grabe County Sheriff, a Justice of the Peace, Chip Collins, County Commissioner Body Sandifer and former deputies Bubba Rich and John Callahan.



Ludlow asked for acquittal on grounds of insufficient evidence as a matter of law presented by the prosecution in order to convict the sheriff.

Ludlow contended the offenses involving various items presented by the prosecution might constitute official misconduct, but not the charges leveled against the sheriff.

Centers requested acquittal for Sandifer on grounds no evidence had been produced that showed the commissioner conspired to obstruct enforcement of gambling laws.

Also, Centers said there was insufficient evidence to show Sandifer conspired in a murder plot since when he took three deputies to his precinct barn it was under the belief he was helping in a normal, legal stakeout.

Pelligrew sought mistrial on grounds insufficient evidence was presented to tie either of his clients—Rich and Callahan—into any federal violations.

Wilkins sought acquittal for Collins on the grounds of the sixth count—which includes a civil rights violation against the sheriff—was not severed from the trial before a jury was empanelled.

This, Wilkins contends, formed irrevocable prejudice.

Wilkins also sought severance of charges against Collins from cases involving the other defendants.

Defense attorneys expect their presentations to extend through a portion of next week.

## **SHERIFF CALLS PROSECUTION WITNESSES LIARS**

**By Ben Hines  
Staff Writer**

**TYLER**—The Grabe County Sheriff called some 15 prosecution witnesses liars whose previous testimony has alluded to improprieties by the sheriff while he has been in office.

The sheriff's cross-examination by U.S. Attorneys continued today as the third week of his and four Grabe Countians trial in federal court here on charges they corrupted their oaths of office got under way.

The sheriff remained on the stand 20 minutes today after taking the stand Friday in his own defense.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Assistant U.S. Attorney Jobe Bickman read portions of previous testimony which alleged the sheriff either took part in or had knowledge of specific illegal activities in his county.

After Bickman read each portion, the sheriff did, except in two instances, deny the allegations against him.

Then Bickman read a list of names including present and former Grabe County deputies, private citizens and FBI agents who testified. Bickman then asked the sheriff if it was his contention the earlier testimony was false.

The sheriff replied that that was exactly his contention.

Sandifer also took to the stand today in his own behalf.

Sandifer testified he told county employees to use county time and equipment to widen a driveway and install a culvert at the old Pam Sims residence after Robby Costas agreed to pay for the work.

Previous testimony showed Sandifer's employees had installed the culvert, widened the drive and laid down a parking lot at a Grabe County residence which was raided by FBI agents who shut down the two alleged illegal gambling operations in Grabe County.

Sandifer also testified that the sheriff had approached him earlier and asked if it would be all right for the sheriffs department to use his barn to catch some thieves.

Under direct testimony by his co-attorney, Chip Centers, Sandifer, said he never had any motive to kill someone nor did he ever conspire to kill anyone.

According to previous testimony, Sandifer, along with the sheriff, Callahan and former Grabe deputy Drew Holt conspired to kill three other Grabe county men as they had attempted to rob \$50,000 from the barn's safe.

The defense has called several character witnesses on behalf of the sheriff and Sandifer.

The trial is expected to continue at least through the middle of the week.



**GRABE TRIAL MAY GO TO JURY THIS AFTERNOON**

**By Ben Hines  
Staff Writer**

TYLER—More that 110 witnesses, 11 days of testimony and more than 200 pieces of evidence, the corruption trial of five Grabe Countians moved into rebuttal phase this morning and may go to the jury this afternoon.

Proceedings bogged down shortly before 10a.m. today when, at the last minute, the prosecution gave previous grand jury testimony and copies of FBI interviews with its expected 15 rebuttal witnesses to the defense .

Bickman said this was done to prevent premature discovery as to who the government would call for rebuttal of defense testimony.

Admonishing the government for causing an unreasonable delay in the trial, Federal Judge Wallace Steiner tersely told Bickman, "We'll be here until New Year's if you keep pulling this."

Steiner strongly advised Bickman to hand over any such testimony or reports of prospective witnesses as to prevent other delays.

FBI agent Galen Kincaid returned to the stand today and discounted previous testimony by Sheriff's Reserve Captain John Mullentree.

Mullentree testified last week that he and former deputy Jimbo Malloy took two attempted robbery suspects to the sheriff's house several years ago. Neither he nor Malloy, he said, stood more than an arm's length from the sheriff while he talked to the two men who were later run out of Grabe County.

However, according to Kincaid, in an interview held with Mullentree prior to the trial, Mullentree told the agent that part of the time the sheriff talked to the two men, some of what the sheriff had said was out of earshot of the two officers.

More rebuttal witnesses are expected to be called today, and following a charge by Steiner the case may go to the jury Tuesday afternoon.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

### Collins, 2 former deputies testify

In court proceedings Monday, Sandifer's attorney, Chip Centers asked the commissioner if he remembered being approached by the sheriff's department in earlier years about using his barn for catching some thieves.

Sandifer replied he did and said, "The sheriff and I were visiting one day and he asked me if it would be alright to use the barn to catch some thieves."

"After that, the next thing I recall was I came to the office one day and Drew Holt and the sheriff were there looking at the facilities and a safe which originally had come from the Grand Samaratin Hospital," Sandifer said.

"Did you have any contact with anyone the day you were to haul the deputies to the barn?" Centers asked.

"I believe I had a telephone call from the sheriff," Sandifer said.

Sandifer testified he picked the deputies up at his house on a Friday, drove them to the barn and left shortly thereafter.

It was the following Monday before he saw the Sheriff again and testified he asked if the sheriff's plan to catch the thieves had worked, Sandifer added.

"When was the next time you heard about the incident?" Centers asked.

"When I was indicted over here," Sandifer said.

....Under further questioning by Center, Sandifer said although he was unfamiliar with two of the intended victims—Johnny Mazewsky and Don Amerage—he knew Lenny Barnes since Barnes was, at one time, a sheriff's department dispatcher.

According to previous testimony, a shotgun squad of three Grabe deputies were instructed by the sheriff to lie in wait for the three men and kill them when they attempted to burglarize a safe at the county barn.

Under cross-examination by Bickman, Sandifer denied previous testimony he pointed out where the deputies' guns were and other features about the barn area after driving the officers to the barn. He said he stayed only a short time after taking the officers to the facility in the back of a dump truck.



When former chief deputy Callahan was placed on the stand by his attorney Lundy Pelligrew, Callahan said he had heard street talk for several years that gambling was being conducted at the Old Flannigan Furrows Farm, but said he never had talked about the rumors with the Sheriff.

Callahan said once he went to the Old Flannigan Furrows in answer to a disturbance call, but denied knowledge the game being conducted inside the structure was illegal.

Callahan related how he investigated the earlier murder of a woman at the Pinwheel Motel near Klimore and the events leading to the arrest of Barnes, later convicted on capital murder charges and sentenced to life imprisonment.

Callahan said he never knew—for a majority of the investigation—who the informant that was being used by then Sheriff's Capt. Drew Holt or that the informant—later identified as Barnes—was involved in the incident.

The former chief deputy said he later became aware that Barnes was the prime suspect in the slayings after a second woman who was severely injured in the attack leading to the first woman's death, picked his picture from a photographic line-up while hospitalized with stab and gunshot wounds.

Under cross-examination by Bickman, Callahan denied he ever took three payments of \$100 from J.D. Sifford, who, several years ago, ran the Palaway Motel.

However, Callahan related Sifford, on one occasion, gave him \$100 and told him to give it to the sheriff as a belated campaign contribution which could possibly be applied to the sheriff's barbecue fund.

Although the sheriff admitted to having accepted the \$100 from Sifford, the sheriff denied having ever received another such amount.

Callahan's testimony Monday showed the former deputy as having given the sheriff the additional \$100 and Sifford's message about the money and its possible use.

....Callahan also denied he ever took part in a murder plot to kill Barnes, Amerage and Mazewsky.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Regarding his hospital stay for pneumonia, Rich said it was the only time he was ever hospitalized, and that he was given antibiotics and intravenous fluids and that he did not remember portions of his stay due to the medication being given him.

"Why would you have guards?" Bickman asked the former sheriff's captain.

"The doctors had requested my wife that I have someone to help me while I was recouping in the hospital," Rich replied, adding he was having problems taking care of himself while under medication.

.... "So, if the guards had said you made certain statements, you couldn't necessarily disagree (or agree) with them," Bickman said.

"I really don't remember," Rich said.

According to previous testimony by Grabe deputies Bubba Hadaway and Mark Gibson, Rich had made disparaging remarks concerning the federal raids staged on two illegal gambling games in Grabe County.

Rich testified Monday he bought a pistol from a jail inmate for \$40, but that the transaction did not take place until after the inmate—identified as Benny Jim Jester—had been released.

Rich testified he bought the gun after Jester was released, denying previous testimony by the former inmate that he helped him get out of jail in exchange for the weapon.

Rich said he later sold the gun to a man in Naples for \$60.

Rich also has denied previous testimony by Linview Jaycee Hal Dawkins that he drew and pointed his pistol at Dawkins one night of the fair after Dawkins saw the former deputy, DA investigator Farley Ogden and Collins in Sevvly Schiller's trailer. Schiller was fair concessionaire at the Grabe County Fair.

Under both direct and cross-examination, Rich denied he ever accepted a bribe to allow illegal gambling at the Grabe County Fair.

However, the former deputy said he had played a dart game, previously described by an FBI gambling expert as an illegal gambling game, and that he played the game money-for-money.

"Did you then know that the game was an illegal gambling game?" Bickman asked.

"I know it now, but I didn't know it at the time," Rich replied.



“When Linview attorney, Larry Wilkins, placed his client, Collins, on the stand, the JP testified he had either been in or had been associated with law enforcement for the past 21 years.

Collins testified during all that time he has held part-time jobs in order to supplement his income. One was his own private dirt company which went bankrupt.

“I later got interested in politics and talked with the incumbent,” Collins said, adding he decided to run when the incumbent she was not interested in being re-elected.

Collins has run unopposed since.

“Have you had any part-time jobs while JP?” asked Wilkins.

....“Yes, I’ve worked for several retail credit companies, done some investigating for some insurance companies, some private investigating and worked security at sporting events,” Collins said.

“Your office is audited monthly?” Wilkins asked.

“Yes, sir,” Collins replied.

“Have you ever come up short?” Wilkins asked.

“No, sir,” Collins answered.

Collins, when asked why he went to the Grabe County Fair, said, “The fair is a good place to meet people who elected you and you can be of some service to them.” Collins said to his knowledge he had never been paid by the Jaycees for the work he had done there.

Wilkins asked Collins to relate the time when Schiller gave him some money for having worked the fair in a previous year.

“He come up to me late the last night and asked me to come to his office,” Collins said. “He said he wanted to thank me and gave me a white envelope.”

“I tried to give it back, but he insisted and I put it in my coat pocket and went home.” Collins continued. “And, it was after I got home that I learned how much money was in it.”

“Did you pay the income tax on the money he gave you?” Wilkins asked.

“Yes, sir,” Collins said.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

According to previous testimony, Dawkins said he saw Collins, while standing in Schiller's trailer, put a paper sack in his hip pocket.

"What was in the paper sack you put in your pocket?" Wilkins asked.

"A pint of Jack Daniels," Collins said. "I just didn't want the whole world seeing me take a little nip."

### GRABE CASE GOES TO JURY

**By Ben Hines**  
**Staff Writer**

TYLER—The federal government's case against the five Grabe Countians on charges of corruption was turned over to the jury at 12:20p.m. today.

The panel was to elect a foreman and to decide how long it would break for lunch before beginning deliberations.

In closing defense arguments earlier in the day, the Sheriff of Grabe County was described as a "country boy" who wouldn't operate the way the FBI wanted him to.

When court convened for the 13<sup>th</sup> day, Federal Judge Wallace Steiner told the jury two-and-a-half hours had been set aside for closing arguments.

Testimony concluded Tuesday morning in the corruption trial of the five from Grabe County.

In the government's closing—which will be split between defense closings—Assistant U.S. Attorney Jobe Bickman urged the seven-man, five-woman jury to use its common sense in considering previous testimony.

Bickman asked the jury to consider:

\* ....How a Department of Public Safety trooper had quit law enforcement because he became very disillusioned with the profession because of the total lack of Law Enforcement in Grabe County.

\* ....How more than one law enforcement officer testified to the bad reputation of the Grabe County Sheriff, all of his department, Rich, and several of the other former officers of the department pertaining to their enforcement of laws in Grabe County.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

429

\* ....How, although the sheriff denied any direct personal knowledge of illegal gambling in Grabe County, he specifically instructed former deputy Jimbo Malloy to run many drivers license checks of cars at the Flannigan Furrows Farm so he could keep up with who played at the games.

\* ....How \$6 million in gross wagers which was bet annually at a Grabe County gambling game which, and according to much previous testimony, has been common knowledge among county law enforcement officers for approximately 14 years.

\* ....How FBI gambling experts testified \$90,000 in gross wagers was bet during a Grabe County Fair.

\* ....How the Grabe County inmates have been "the Grabe County Sheriff's private hand maidens" who exchanged labor for special favors from the sheriff.

### **GRABE COUNTY OFFICIALS CONVICTED**

**By Ben Hines  
Staff Writer**

It seemed to be business as usual today for the Grabe County Sheriff as he returned to his office the day after his federal conviction for having facilitated illegal gambling, accepting a bribe and conspiracy to commit murder.

....Four other Grabe Countians were also convicted of all charges against them in the federal case tried in Tyler.

The sheriff told this reporter he would make a statement later after he had an opportunity to talk with the Grabe County District Attorney.

The district attorney told this reporter, "The DA's office will do whatever the law requires us to do, and our office will comply in taking the necessary steps in this particular situation."

....The sheriff faces a possible maximum sentence of 30 years imprisonment and a \$65,000 fine.

Collins resigned his office today thus heading off possible removal actions against him by the State Commission on Judicial Conduct.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Collin's attorney, Larry Wilkins, said appeals would be deferred until after the sentencing before Federal Judge Wallace Steiner.

....Collins, Sandifer, Rich and Callahan face possible 25 years imprisonment and \$45,000 fines each.

Also, the defendants, all of whom were now convicted under the Racketeering Influenced Corrupt Organization Act, and are each liable to forfeit to the government all interest in properties or claims against properties they might have had while involved in corruption.

The verdict came after more than four hours of deliberations by the jury who set through 13 days of trial.

As the verdicts were read at 5:45p.m., each defendant faced the bench, listening without expression to the jury's findings.

Many family members and friends of the defendants sobbed softly after the verdicts were pronounced.

The counts of a federal indictment upon which the defendants were convicted include:

- \* ....Grabe County Sheriff, three counts; conspiracy to murder and two counts of facilitating gambling.

- \* ....Peace Justice Collins, two counts; facilitating illegal gambling and racketeering.

- Rich, two counts; facilitating illegal gambling and conspiracy to murder.

- \* ....Chief Callahan, two counts; facilitating illegal gambling and conspiracy to murder.

- \* ....Sandifer, two counts; conspiracy to murder and facilitating illegal gambling.

Wednesday's convictions ended the second trial arising out of the federal probe of Grabe County corruption.

Trials scheduled later include the Grabe County Sheriff's trial on a civil rights violation pertaining to the alleged beating of an inmate, the trial of Robby Costas and several others reportedly involved in an illegal gambling operation in Grabe County and the trial of former Grabe County deputy Bubba Bailey who is charged with facilitating illegal gambling at the Grabe County Fair.



In the first trial, Vinney Tolbert, Jim Jefferies, Haley Hobbs and Marty Haley were convicted of operating an illegal gambling game at the Hanger-on Lounge near Linview.

Their sentencing is pending, according to the U.S. Attorney's office.

Defense attorneys had no comment concerning the verdict.

Also, Steiner would not comment and Hopkins and Bickman, both of whom led the prosecution, remained silent concerning their apparent victory.

### **GRABE COUNTY SHERIFF QUIT DA to File Action Against Sandifer**

**By Ben Hines  
Staff Writer**

The Grabe County Sheriff resigned today and the Grabe County Judge said that it would be either Monday or Tuesday before county commissioners would meet to select his replacement.

Also the Grabe County District Attorney announced his office would file sometime next week to remove Commissioner Sandifer from office on grounds of official misconduct.

The county judge stressed that only highly qualified persons are selected to fill the vacancies left behind by the Sheriff and JP.

....The Grabe County Chief Deputy will assume command of the sheriffs department until a sheriff is appointed by the Grabe County Commissioners Court.

The chief deputy, meeting media members in the hallway outside the sheriff's office after the announcement that he would be in command, handed out a three paragraph statement by the sheriff, who did not appear.

In part, the sheriff's letter reads: "I have never knowingly participated in, nor allowed anyone else to be part of any wrongful act. I feel that the best interest of law enforcement is served and the necessary confidence restored by my resignation as Sheriff of Grabe County.

The attorneys of those convicted will file appeals.

The commissioners will name an interim sheriff next week.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

### **SHERIFF DENIED SENTENCE STAY**

**By Ben Hines**  
**Staff Writer**

WASHINGTON (AP)—A Supreme Court justice has rejected an attempt by the former Sheriff of Grabe County, Texas, to stay out of prison while he appeals his racketeering-related conviction.

Justice Byron White on Tuesday turned down the former sheriff's request for a stay until the Supreme Court can review his appeal. The former sheriff was convicted on two counts of conspiracy to obstruct the enforcement of Texas State criminal laws and one count charging a violation of federal anti-racketeering laws.

A federal judge in Tyler, Texas, sentenced the sheriff to ten years in prison.

....The 5<sup>th</sup> U.S. Circuit Court of Appeals has recently affirmed his conviction.

### **FBI SEEKS SWEATBOX INFORMATION**

**By Ben Hines**  
**Staff Writer**

The FBI office in Tyler is interested in obtaining information about a "sweatbox" reportedly used in the Grabe County jail, according to Wiley Handley, senior resident agent in Tyler.

Persons who were placed in the box or who knew about it are asked to contact the FBI in Tyler.

The FBI has received information that until years earlier, some prisoners in the Grabe County jail were placed in a box measuring four or five feet square and kept there.



## **CHAPTER 15**

### **KINNEY FINE CHICKEN PANEL HEARS FROM 5 WITNESSES**

**By Jeb Grantham  
Staff Writer**

A grand jury could return an indictment Thursday in the Kinney Fine Chicken slaying case, but a prosecutor remained mum about the matter.

"I hope we conclude at least part of the matters before this grand jury on Thursday," Assistant Attorney General Sam Philpot said when the panel recessed Tuesday after hearing five more witnesses.

"I am not going to comment on what the grand jury is going to do or not do," he said, when asked if an indictment is likely Thursday.

Grand jurors have two main functions—listen to witness testimony, and then deliberate on whether to return an indictment in a case.

"I don't anticipate we will hear any more witnesses on Thursday," Philpot said.

He said the current phase of the investigation has been concluded and "we will sit down with the grand jury on Thursday and ask them what they want to do."

The grand jury's term will end in a few days, and Philpot said, "in all likelihood" he would ask Judge Dan Rogers to extend the panel's term by the maximum limit of 90 days.

Philpot would not comment on whether the Texas Attorney General will attend the Thursday session.

"I know the Attorney General would like to be here to talk to the (victims) family again but he is not a part of the grand jury presentation in and of itself," he said.

"He has been kept abreast on everything so far, and has had significant input on the evidence we have done," he added.

And Philpot would not confirm that John Mallory Jr. had testified before the panel. Investigators have named John Mallory Jr. as a suspect in the case. Grand jurors are meeting inside the district attorney's office



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

beyond the view of the spectators, and Mallory was inside the district attorney's office from 2 p.m. until about 4:45 p.m. Tuesday.

Philpot then told reporters to "draw your own conclusions" about whether Mallory had also been in the grand jury room.

"I am not going to comment about what happened in the grand jury at all. You will have to basically draw your own conclusions about when he went in that door and when he came out," Philpot said.

The grand jury is investigating the slayings of Jamie Jenson, Dale Masters, Minnie Talley, Odella Howell and Morey Lane who were kidnapped from the Kinney Fine Chicken Restaurant in Klimore.

....Katrina Hobson of Tyler, the mother of Jenson, attended the Tuesday session and said that she would remain in attendance until something is done in the case.

The crime was committed "a long time ago, and she never thought any action would be taken in the case," she said.

"I had figured that it pretty much had been buried," said her daughter, Jonie Masters of Klimore.

Within days after the murders, officers said they "had identified five persons as suspects," and have said those five continue to be the primary suspects.

Philpot's statement that he is hoping for a partial conclusion in the case Thursday does not discourage Masters.

"One is better than none. We have got further now than I ever thought we would. I am starting to believe in the justice system again," Masters said.

"I have not smiled on the inside in awhile the way I am feeling like smiling now," she said.

She said that she attended a vigil Saturday in which carnations were handed out to crime victims and members of their families in observation of National Victim's Rights Week. She said she put two of the carnations in her freezer.

"The day when an indictment comes down, I will go to my brother's grave in Oleta and put one carnation on his grave. And the other will go on his grave when there is a sentence," Masters said.



**MALLORY INDICTED IN  
KINNEY FINE CHICKEN CASE**

**By Jeb Grantham  
Staff Writer**

John Mallory Jr. was indicted Thursday on capital murder charges in the slayings of five people kidnapped from the Kinney Fine Chicken restaurant in Klimore.

If Mallory is convicted on a charge of capital murder, he could face either the death penalty or a life sentence.

Mallory surrendered to the Rashe County Sheriff's Office Thursday afternoon before the indictments were returned and he was arraigned before District Judge Dan Rogers.

Rogers set bail at \$500,000 on each indictment for a total of \$2.5 million.

Mallory walked into court with his hands handcuffed in front of him, holding a handwritten note addressed to Rogers.

"At this time I have no attorney, and I am charged with five counts of capital murder, and I need an attorney quickly," he said, adding he wanted the judge to appoint an attorney to represent him.

Mallory, son of former state Sen. John Mallory Sr., explained to the Judge that he requested a court appointed attorney because he did not have enough property to sell to raise money to hire an attorney if it would "cost as much as the last one."

Before Thursday, Mallory had been represented by a local attorney, Phil Neeland, who had accompanied him to the courthouse each day he was subpoenaed to testify before the grand jury.

Rogers said he would call lawyers, appoint one and then have the attorney contact Mallory in jail.

Mallory appeared calm and relaxed when he was escorted to court by the Rashe County Sheriff. Dressed in blue jeans, black cowboy boots and western-style shirt, Mallory would hold his arms up to the sheriff to have the cuffs unlocked every time court personnel would present another set of routine, legal documents for him to sign.

The sheriff would unlock the cuff on his right wrist to free one hand, and would lock it back after Mallory had finished signing.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

There was one indictment returned against Mallory for each of the five victims. Each indictment contained two counts, one for alleging he committed the murders during a robbery, and the other alleging the murders were committed during a kidnapping.

Although Mallory has been publicly identified for weeks as a target in the investigation, he complied with a subpoena which required him to appear at the courthouse each day the grand jury was in session.

And during his arraignment Thursday, he made it a point to tell Rogers that he had voluntarily surrendered to officers in the case.

Leona Masters, (now Correy) whose husband was among one of the victims, said other suspects have reason to worry now that Mallory has been arrested.

When asked directly whether prosecutors would seek the death penalty against Mallory, the Attorney General said it was premature to announce that decision now. "I believe that the nature of the crimes that were perpetrated here speak for themselves," he said. "It is my intention that the grand jury will have all necessary evidence to come to the proper conclusion," he said.

### **PROSECUTOR IN KINNEY FINE CHICKEN CASE TO STEP DOWN**

**By Paul Watson  
Staff Writer**

AUSTIN—Texas Assistant Attorney General Sam Philpot, who has headed the investigation of two high profile cases in East Texas, is resigning to run for Travis County district attorney.

The Texas Attorney General has confirmed that Philpot has resigned as chief AG's prosecutor assistance division.

....A successor to the prosecution role will be named later by the attorney general's office.



**LAW OFFICERS WON'T SPECULATE ON  
MORE KINNEY FINE CHICKEN CHARGES**

**By Jeb Grantham  
Staff Writer**

Local law enforcement officers say, "I hate to speculate on more charges in the Kinney Fine Chicken murders." They state, "They have some figures in their heads but hate to speculate" on the total number of people who potentially could be indicted.

They said, "In the past years we have looked at the possibility that there could be charges against some who were not at the crime scene proper," but were believed to have been involved," they said.

Asked if they felt the indictment against Mallory might encourage witnesses to come forward against those not at the scene, they said, "We can't comment on that. We had a specific instruction about that particular situation."

"We think returning of the indictments will certainly catch some people's attention. We'll put it that way."

One grand jury witness who lives in Grabe County reported she was visited by other witness, and later received a telephone threat from a man.

A spokesman for the Grabe County Sheriffs Department said the threat was investigated, and the file was turned over to the attorney general's office.

"They requested it be handled straight through just to keep the continuity of the case, and to make sure there wasn't some side issue come up that might interfere with what they are doing in Rashe County," he said.

The Grabe County District Attorney announced that he would not pursue any charges in the case, even though he had jurisdiction in the robbery and kidnapping offenses.

He said, "If he pursued robbery or kidnapping charges in Grabe County, that would have created problems with the constitutional prohibition against double jeopardy, which provides that a person cannot be tried twice for the same crime".

"And no one would have ever been able to seek the death penalty after that," he said.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

"We obviously thought a very serious penalty should be involved. I am not going to suggest what the attorney general's office should seek, but we considered it a very serious matter and that capital murder would be the way to go," he said.

"I do not regret making this decision. I think it is the right thing to do."

"It needed to be done in Rashe County whenever the Rashe County authorities "felt like" there was enough evidence," he said.

"I think the right thing has now happened. I am happy to see it, and hope they go forward, and I wish them a successful prosecution."

Reporter's Note: A consensus taken in the decision of the district attorney was negative. Those contacted expressed their disappointment in the DA's decision, saying that if there was no conviction in Rashe County this time, the Grabe County District Attorney missed his chance to at least bring someone to trial on the robbery/kidnapping charge. In other words, every suspect "goes free" at this stage.

### **MALLORY GETS COURT APPOINTED ATTORNEY IN CASE**

**By Morey Bentley**

**Linview News Correspondent**

District Judge Dan Rogers appointed Linview attorney Darnell Bently to represent John Mallory who has been indicted on five counts of capital murder in connection with the slayings of five people taken from the Kinney Fine Chicken restaurant in Klimore.

Bently, who was in Roger's chambers mid-morning, stopped at the Rashe County District Clerk's office for copies of the indictments a grand jury handed down Thursday.

Bently said he was not surprised at Roger's appointment because he thought he was next in line to be called from one of the judge's lists of attorneys to represent indigent clients.

After visiting his client at the Rashe County jail, Bentley said he had no plans for any pretrial hearings, saying, "we'll just play it by ear."



**MALLORY FREED**

**AG'S OFFICE: TESTS SHOW NAIL NOT SUSPECT'S**

**By Jeb Grantham  
Staff Writer**

The prosecution's Kinney Fine Chicken case against John Mallory Jr. hung by a fingernail, and Monday the capital murder indictment was dismissed when a scientific test proved the nail did not come from Mallory. ....The Texas Attorney General announced Monday that prosecutors had filed a motion to dismiss the case because they no longer had sufficient evidence to tie Mallory to the Kinney Fine Chicken murders.

Mallory was released Monday afternoon from the Rashe County jail, where he had been held under a \$2.5 million bond since he had been indicted seven months ago on five counts of capital murder.

The attorney general said the case had been dismissed "without prejudice," which means that Mallory again could be indicted in the case if investigators find more evidence.

Defense attorney Darnell Bently said Monday he was not surprised by the dismissal, "because I have been predicting it for a month. ....I knew it had to come."

Texas Ranger Stan Denny, one of the officers investigating the case, testified during a hearing that he was present for the autopsy on the five victims, and when victim Jamie Jenson's belt was unbuckled, a torn fingernail fell onto the gurney upon which he lay.

The nail was not torn from the finger of Jenson or any of the other victims, and it was kept as potential evidence on the theory it may have been torn from the finger of one of the assailants, Denny said.

Eight days after the murders, he was interviewing Mallory in the Rashe County Courthouse and he said he was reminded of the torn fingernail when he noticed that Mallory was chewing on his finger and appeared to bite off the remainder of the nail.

He said the nail was torn deeply, down into the quick. When questioned about it, Mallory told him he had torn the nail off while sitting in the courthouse lobby, but found no fingernail.



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

Denny said he then made a mold and cast of the third finger on Mallory's right hand, and the nail recovered from the autopsy definitely "matched" the torn area on Mallory's fingernail.

That became the core of the prosecution's case against Mallory until last week, when the prosecution obtained a report on a DNA test which showed the autopsy nail did not match a sample of blood obtained from Mallory.

Bently said the prosecution received the test results Friday from a U.S. Army laboratory near Washington D.C.

Bently said the latest procedure is called a mitochondrial DNA test "which is a DNA test on who the mother is—a gene marker from the mother".

If there had been a positive match, it would have shown that the person who submitted the blood sample and the person from whom the nail was torn both had the same mother, Bently said.

"The testing facility has reported to my office that the portion of the fingernail submitted for testing does not belong to Mr. Mallory," the Attorney General said Monday.

"Although we were surprised at the findings, we have the highest regard and confidence in the testing facility, as well as the science involved," he said.

"The information from the testing facility is inconsistent with other evidence in the case. So therefore, in the interest in bringing all of the perpetrators of this heinous crime to justice, ....we must dismiss the charges against Mallory," the Attorney General said.

"Our investigation is continuing," he added.

Leona Masters Correy, whose husband, Dale Masters, was one of the victims, was not discouraged that the prosecution had dismissed the case against Mallory.

She said although the charges had been dropped, he, Mallory, can be indicted again.

"The fact that he has not been exonerated is fine with me because at any time in the future he can be tried," she said.



"I want them to have their facts in line (before they go into court)," she said.

Investigators in the case admitted they were frustrated and upset by the turn of events.

"Words cannot express," said Klimore Police Chief Ramey Mann.

Other law enforcement officers working the case, also said, "We're going to continue investigating the case. We're not going to slack up," they said. "We are not going to quit now."

The Rashe County DA said that although the fingernail didn't belong to Mallory, "It is an indication that the fingernail belongs to another suspect." He also said the investigation is far from being closed, and evidence will be presented to another grand jury, and said that investigators have more evidence in the case, but he declined to reveal what it might be.

Mallory's attorney, Darnell Bently, said that although four other persons were identified in rumors as suspects in the case, he said those were just rumors and law enforcement does not have any other suspects.

Officers had obtained a sample of Mallory's blood under authority of a search warrant, which they obtained in part based on the Texas Rangers noticing Mallory had a torn fingernail eight days after the murders.

Bently said he doubted officers would be able to use a search warrant from anyone else because, as I see it, "they don't have anything on anybody."

Asked whether the investigation had reached a dead end, Bently said, "I don't know whether it is or not. But I don't see anything they have got to even go on."

**(YEAR LATER) MALLORY  
ARRESTED ON DRUG CHARGE**

**By Jeb Grantham  
and Gene Engle  
Staff Writers**

John Mallory Jr., who was once a capital murder suspect in the Kinney Fine Chicken case, goes to court today for a detention hearing on



## HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)

federal drug charges after the officers said they found 2 ounces of methamphetamine during a traffic stop.

Mallory has been charged with possession of methamphetamine with intent to distribute and with conspiracy to possess, said Glade Miller, resident agent in charge of the Drug enforcement Administration Task Force.

....Miller said Donna Holley (Yantis) of Linview also was arrested and charged with the same offenses as Mallory.

....Mallory faces a detention hearing at 1:30 p.m. today before U.S. Magistrate Harley McKinnon, to determine whether Mallory will be granted a bond or held until a trial.

....Mallory was driving Holley's Chrysler when it was stopped by Klimore Police Officer Daniel Freeman, according to a federal affidavit detailing the pair's arrests.

Officers found an additional one-eighth ounce of methamphetamine after they searched her home in Linview, Miller said.

Miller said Mallory's latest arrest had no connection to the Kinney Fine Chicken investigation. He said the arrest had stemmed from an investigation that began over a year prior to Mallory's indictment in the Klimore murders.

Miller said the seized methamphetamine would have a street value of about \$2,000 to \$3,000.

According to an affidavit filed by DEA Agent Paul Ranier, DEA agents and officers with the Grabe County CODE Unit, known as County Organized Drug Enforcement had staked out Holley's residence from about 8:15 a.m. to 11:50 p.m. Wednesday.

While there, agents observed "numerous vehicles arrive..., stay for a very short period of time and depart," which is consistent with drug trafficking activity, Ranier said in the affidavit.

He said Mallory and Holley had left the residence shortly before midnight, drove to a parking lot in the 2100 block of Gallo Road, and talked to a person in a Chevrolet pickup truck for about two minutes.

They left, the pickup was pulled over minutes later and 2 ½ grams of methamphetamine were seized by agents, Ranier said in the affidavit.



Meanwhile, agents followed Mallory on a round about route to Klimore, and the agents requested help from Klimore Police.

Freeman responded to the request, along with his drug-sniffing dog. He pulled Mallory over on Road near Texas 13, and the dog found a bag containing about 2 ounces of speed in the compartment housing the Chrysler's convertible top, the affidavit continues.

Mallory and Holley were then arrested, and a subsequent search of the residence yielded about one-eighth ounce of a white powder, believed to be methamphetamine, along with speed paraphernalia such as scales, plastic bags and a substance used to dilute methamphetamine for resale, the affidavit says.

**MALLORY REMAINS A SUSPECT IN  
KINNEY FINE CHICKEN CASE  
TESTIMONY COMES AT FEDERAL  
COURT HEARING ON DRUG CHARGE**

**By Jeb Grantham  
Staff Writer**

....John Mallory Jr. remains a "prime suspect" in the Kinney Fine Chicken slayings, witnesses testified in an unrelated case in Federal court Friday.

The comments came during a hearing in which U.S. Magistrate Harley McKinnon had denied bond to both Mallory and Donna Yantis Holley in two drug cases.

Mallory was indicted last year on five charges of capital murder of the slayings of five persons who were kidnapped from the Kinney Fine Chicken restaurant in Klimore.

All of the charges were dismissed after the Texas Attorney General announced that the prosecution did not have sufficient evidence against Mallory.

Mallory and Holley were arrested early Thursday on federal charges of possessing methamphetamine with intent to distribute, and conspiracy to possess with intent to distribute.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Attorney Darnell Bently, who represented Mallory in the murder cases, said Friday that officers filed drug charges as revenge because they could not prove the murder cases.

Technically, the hearing Friday was to discuss whether Mallory would be a threat to society and whether he could be trusted to appear in court if he should be released on bond.

But attorneys from both sides repeatedly steered the testimony back to the slayings, with which Mallory can still be charged.

Bently called Rashe County Attorney Kline Fortson to testify that Mallory voluntarily appeared, without subpoena, at several grand jury sessions over a two-month period last year.

He appeared and testified before the grand jury even though media accounts had reported he was being investigated for the murders, and he surrendered to the Rashe County Sheriff's Office the day he was indicted, Bently said. Fortson agreed.

And Fortson agreed that during the time he has been in office, he has not charged Mallory with any offense involving violence.

But under questioning by Assistant U.S. Attorney Raymond Moss, Fortson added. "I consider the five homicides to be violent, and I still consider him to be the prime suspect."

Galen Kincaid, who was an agent of the FBI when the Kinney Fine Chicken slayings were committed, said Mallory was being investigated at that time for his part in a methamphetamine drug ring headed by Wake Samples, and Mallory voluntarily pleaded guilty a year later to a federal drug charge.

Kincaid has since retired from the FBI, and was hired recently by the attorney general's office as to assist in the state probe into the Kinney Fine Chicken case.

He said he has talked several times to Mallory about his drug activity and the Kinney Fine Chicken case, and Mallory told him that on the night of the murders, he was in the old Pinwheel Motel in Klimore, and was



trying to "chase off" all his customers because he was getting out of the drug business.

At the time of the slayings, Mallory was associated in the drug business with Holley, who at that time was known as Donna Yantis.

He said he asked Holley about her activities on the night of the slayings, and she told him that ordinarily she and Mallory would have been selling methamphetamine, but Mallory was hard to find that night.

The next day, she went out and bought some methamphetamine, but she said Mallory was not interested.

Kincaid said that a year or so ago, he talked to the man who, at the time of the slayings, was the terminal manager of Electra Trucking Co., a Klimore firm owned by the defendant's father, state Sen. John Mallory Sr.

The manager said the defendant at the time was staying in Laredo, adjacent to the Mexican border, and that information was being relayed to the defendant through connections with Electra Trucking, the Austin state office of the senior Mallory and a Laredo trucking company.

Kincaid said the manager confirmed he was "part of the smoke screen signal corps that was to let the defendant know if he needed to slip across the border."

At the time, officers already had evidence against Mallory from wiretaps they had installed on telephones during the investigation of the Samples drug network, and Mallory "made a sweetheart of a deal" and then pleaded guilty to using a telephone to facilitate a drug transaction, Kincaid said.

"The most he was facing was three years," he told Bently on cross examination. Mallory was released from federal custody in a very short time.

....Bently contended that throughout the Kinney Fine Chicken investigation Mallory continued living in East Texas, he cooperated with investigators and he never tried to hide from officers.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Kincaid said Mallory hid from investigators last year, when he failed to show up at a hospital to have a blood sample taken to compare his DNA to that of the torn fingernail found on the victim.

Bently countered that Mallory at the time was in the office of the attorney who was then representing him, and that Mallory was waiting for officers to serve him with a legal paper.

Lab workers also testified the blood sample for drugs, and the test showed the presence of methamphetamine, Kincaid said.

Kincaid denied Bently's accusation that officers had asked drug investigators to place Mallory under surveillance just so they could get something on him after the murder indictments were dismissed.

The drug investigation began almost two years before Mallory was indicted in the Klimore murders, Kincaid said.

Mack Kiner, special agent for the DEA, testified officers watched while several confidential informants made three or more purchases of methamphetamine from Mallory. He said that he had viewed videotape made during the transaction.

Kiner had said about a month ago, officers withdrew one of their confidential informants from participating in the investigation after a second informant told officers that Mallory had said he suspected the person was an informant.

The second informant reported Mallory said, "if that is the case, some bad things will happen."

### **MALLORY GETS PRISON TERM ON DRUG CHARGE JUDGE HANDS DOWN 10-YEAR SENTENCE: APPEAL PLANNED**

**By Jeb Grantham  
Staff Writer**

**TYLER**—John Mallory Jr. was sentenced Monday to 10 years on a drug charge after a federal judge ruled against him on every point he raised in a sentencing report.



Mallory, of Klimore, pleaded guilty to conspiracy to possess and distribute methamphetamine and was then sentenced Monday by U.S. District Judge Jody Hopkins.

....Judge Hopkins was formerly a U.S. Attorney, prosecuting high profile cases for the U.S. Attorney General's office, and was appointed a federal judge by the governor of Texas.

Defense attorney Darnell Bently said there is no parole in federal prison, but an inmate can get a 15 per cent reduction for good behavior.

Mallory can get a year off for enrolling in a drug rehabilitation program and will get credit for the time he spent in jail since his arrest, Bently said.

He always has been a good prisoner who causes no problems, so he could easily be released in 6 ½ to 7 years, Bently said.

Holley pleaded guilty earlier and was sentenced to 27 months in prison. She married Mallory recently, but testified Monday for the prosecution.

....At issue in the sentence phase of the hearing was the amount of methamphetamine Mallory possessed. An amount less than 100 grams would result in one term under federal sentencing guidelines, while an amount of more than 100 grams would raise the potential sentence to as much as life in prison.

Assistant U.S. Attorney Tina Graham contended the amount was 177.7 grams. Bently contended it was no more than 93.7.

Mrs. Mallory and Mallory were sentenced three years earlier to federal prison on charges related to dealing methamphetamine.

She testified she had stayed off the drug until a Rashe County grand jury a few years ago began investigating Mallory on capital murder charges arising from the Kinney Fine Chicken murders.

Mrs. Mallory said she began using and dealing methamphetamine again and found a dealer in another East Texas town who would sell or front the drug to her at \$1,400 per ounce.

After capital murder charges were dropped on Mallory, she met him that night at a Linview mote, and within days, Mallory was getting methamphetamine from her, she said.



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Mallory also was getting the drug from another man in another town, and Mallory accompanied her three or four times when she would go to her supplier and get 1 or 2 ounces of methamphetamine.

Graham said because Mallory pleaded guilty to a conspiracy count, the amount of drug he possessed should include not only the amount he had when arrested and the amounts he sold to informants, but also the amount Mrs. Mallory obtained from her supplier.

Bently objected to that rendition as counting Mrs. Mallory's drug twice for sentencing purposes, but Hopkins ruled it would be counted.

The defense objected to considering Mallory's earlier conviction as a drug-related conviction. The charge was using a telephone to facilitate the commission of a felony, but the felony was drug dealing, and Hopkins said it would be classified as a drug conviction.

Bently objected to Mallory being considered an organizer of a drug ring. Graham responded a witness said Mallory had told him to put a soft drink can at a certain location in a yard, and the witness later realized the pickup of the can by a different person was related to a drug buy.

Hopkins allowed that be considered as an aggravating factor in the sentencing. Bently said he would appeal.

### **MEANING OF MALLORY'S COURT APPEARANCE NOT LOST ON PAIR**

**By Jeb Grantham**  
**Staff Writer**

**TYLER**—The conviction was for drugs, not five murders, but John Mallory Jr. looked across the courtroom at his nemesis and said, I know why I am here." He did not elaborate, but the meaning was not lost on Leona Masters Correy and Katrina Hobson, the widow and sister of Dale Masters.

Masters was one of five victims kidnapped and murdered in the Kinney Fine Chicken slayings.

Correy and Hobson were instrumental in getting the Texas Attorney General to take over the investigation. When U.S. District Judge Jody Hopkins gave Mr. Mallory a chance to make a statement before he was



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

449

sentenced on the drug charge, Mr. Mallory noted the audience in the courtroom.

Among those present were Correy, Hobson and Galen Kincaid, who investigated the murders first as an agent for the FBI and later as a special investigator for the attorney general.

"There are a lot of things I would like to say. And, I know what is going to happen," Mallory said.

After commenting that he knew why he was there, he chose to say no more and sat down.

Outside the courtroom, Correy responded to Mallory's innuendo with, "It is preposterous for him to say we had anything to do with this."

"He put this one on himself," she said, adding that after he was released from the jail on the capital murder charges, he then went back to dealing methamphetamine.

Correy and Hobson were upset at the sentence of 10 years and said it was too lenient when the maximum he could have received was life in prison. The sentence was determined by sentencing guidelines that leave little discretion to the judge.

The defendant's parents, former state Sen. John Mallory Sr., and his wife, Vivian Mallory, also were upset over the sentence. The senior Mallory said the sentence was extreme, in light of the 27 long months sentence assessed the defendant's wife, Donna.

In a telephone interview with the former lead prosecutor of the Texas Attorney General's Office, Sam Philpot, he now states publicly that he believes that the fingernail taken from one of the victims and sent to the Army for testing, "was not" the same fingernail. He says that two authorities on fingernail comparison had previously concluded that the piece of fingernail taken from one of the victims matched the missing portion of the nail of John Mallory Jr., exactly. He insinuated that "another" piece of a fingernail was sent to the Army for DNA testing. The actual piece of fingernail had been "laying" around for quite a while and feels that "another" piece of fingernail was sent to the lab, "not the piece of nail originally used as evidence."

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*



## **HUSH LITTLE BUBBA, DON'T SAY A WORD (REWIND, FAST FORWARD)**

Jinkx and Marissa were having lunch with Kerrie at the Whistle Stop when Jinkx made a remark that got Kerrie's attention. "You know, I have accumulated quite a number of dossiers on most of the elected and appointed officials, and others, in Grabe County. I just haven't decided what to do with them yet." He took an envelope from his pocket. "I got this in the mail today, but forgot to open it. It's from Ron Faber, the attorney." Jinkx opened the envelope and read the contents.

"What's it say?" asked Marissa.

"Well, first of all, he finally billed me for appearing in court with me. And, he says:"

Need to get your material on the defense of a wrongfully discharged peace officer, as the sheriff has struck again. Also, please find an over due statement in the amount of \$1.00 for previous service.

Ron Faber

P.S. Suggest you look into the upcoming semester at a good law school, and apply for enrollment. Also, another option is county wide elections next year for public office, including Sheriff.

**YOU ARE INVITED TO ENJOY ANOTHER  
B.S. THRUMM NOVEL, CODE OF ETHICS, PART 2,  
DUE OUT IN 1999/2000**

**REMEMBER  
(THE TRUTH IS IN THE MIND OF THE READER)  
(THE MIND IS LIKE A PARACHUTE.  
IT'S NO GOOD UNLESS IT'S OPEN)**